ISLAMIC PHILOSOPHY THEOLOGY AND SCIENCE

Texts and Studies

EDITED BY

H. DAIBER and D. PINGREE

VOLUME XLVI



A MEDIE ANTHR

Ibn al-Jan

A CRITICAL EDITION

1707

A MEDIEVAL CRITIQUE OF ANTHROPOMORPHISM

Ibn al-Jawzī's Kitāb Akhbār aṣ-Ṣifāt

MERLIN SWARTZ



BRILL LEIDEN · BOSTON · KÖLN 2002

This book is printed on acid-free paper

Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data

Swartz, Merlin L., 1933-

A medieval critique of anthropomorphism: Ibn al-Jawzī's Kitāb Akhbār aṣ-Ṣifāt: a critical edition of the Arabic text with translation, introduction and notes / by Merlin Swartz.

p. cm. — (Islamic philosophy, theology and science, v. 46) Includes bibliographical references and index.

ISBN 9004123768 (alk. paper)
1. Ibn al Jawzī, Abū al-Faraj 'Abd al-Raḥmān ibn 'Alī, 1116 (ca)-1201. Kitāb Akhbār aṣ-Ṣifāt. 2. God (Islam)—Attributes. 3. Hanbalites. I. Ibn al-Jawzī, Abū al-Faraj 'Abd al-Raḥmān ibn 'Ali, 1116 (ca.)-1201. Kitāb Akhbār aṣ-Ṣifāt. II. Ibn al-Jawzī, Abū al-Faraj 'Abd al-Raḥmān ibn 'Ali, 1116 (ca.) Kitāb Akhbār aṣ-Ṣifat. English. III. 'Althi, Abū al-Faḍl. Risāla. English. IV. Title. V. Series.

BP166.2.I21463 S 93 2002 297.2'112—dc21

2001043147

Die Deutsche Bibliothek - CIP-Einheitsaufnahme

Swartz, Merlin:

A medieval critique of anthropomorphism: ibn-Al-Jawzī's Kitāb Akhbār aṣṢifāt; a critical edition of the Arabic text with translation, introduction and notes / by Merlin Swartz. – Leiden; Boston; Köln: Brill, 2001

— tislamic philosophy, theology and science; Vol. 46)



ISSN 0169-8729 ISBN 9004123768

© Copyright 2002 by Koninklijke Brill NV, Leiden, The Netherlands
All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, translated, stored in
a retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic,
mechanical, photocopying, recording or otherwise, without prior written
permission from the publisher.

Authorization to photocopy items for internal or personal use is granted by Brill provided that the appropriate fees are paid directly to The Copyright Clearance Center, 222 Rosewood Drive, Suite 910 Danvers MA 01923, USA.

Fees are subject to change.

PRINTED IN THE NETHERLANDS

For

Sondra and Souhil, Daryl and Wanda, Kenton and Amy

whose imagination, optimism and love have been a perpetual source of inspiration and hope

TABLE OF CONTENTS

PrefaceAbbreviations	ix xiii
PART ONE INTRODUCTION	
I Ibn al-Jawzī: A Biographical Sketch	3
II Authorship and Date of Composition	33
III The Argument of Kitāb Akhbār aṣ-Ṣifāt	46
IV The Manuscript: A Brief Description	65
PART TWO TRANSLATION	
Chapter I. The Place of Reason in Matters of Faith and the Problem of Anthropomorphism	77
Chapter II. Quranic Verses Relating to the Divine Attributes	139
Chapter III. Traditions Concerning the Divine Attributes	170
Appendix: A Ḥanbalī Response to Ibn al-Jawzī's Defense of <i>Ta³wīl</i> : The <i>Risāla</i> of Abū'l-Faḍl al-ʿAlthī	282
Bibliography	299
Indev	310

TABLE OF CONTENTS

PART THREE THE ARABIC TEXT

Chapter I	٠ ١
Chapter II	. 10
Chapter III	. 27
Index	. ۱۰۸

As I have tried to indica Akhbār aş-Şifāt occupies (as-Stfat, which might be Attributes, is not just anot impassioned critique of a attributes, written by Ibn al-Kināb Akhbār as-Sifāt focu patterns of thought commi the work is medieval Hand tions of God championed of Baghdad. Since Ibn a school and since the object school, Kitāb Akhbār ay-S Hanbalism and, indirectly As an intra-Hanbali poles than any other work of the Hanbalism. By exposing social and intellectual tensi diversity that characteriz

Knab Akhbar as-Sajar is evidence of the extent to we sort) had penetrated the film al-Jawzi makes extensioned crafting his argument alectical methods that has schools of medieval Islan. The rationalist temper of torientalist assessment of It may view, it effectively expansionalist is significant, fin fingmentary form, material

ABBREVIATIONS1

Abū Shāma: adh-Dhayl ar-Rawdatayn.

Ambivalences: "Les Ambivalences d'un sermonnaire Ḥanbalite...",

A. Hartmann.

Asmā': Kitāb al-Asmā' wa'ṣ-Ṣifāt, Abū Bakr al-Bayhaqī.

Attributs divins: Le problème des attributs divins, M. Allard.

BA: Bāz al-Ashhab, Ibn al-Jawzī.

Bayhaqī: Kitāb al-Asmā², Abū Bakr al-Bayhaqī.

BEO: Bulletin d'études orientales

BSOAS: Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African

Studies, London

Dhayl: Dhayl 'alā Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila, Ibn Rajab.

DST: Daf Shubhat at-Tashbīh, Ibn al-Jawzī.

EI²: Encyclopaedia of Islam, new edition.

ER: Encyclopedia of Religion, ed. Mircea Eliade (New

York, c1987)

GAL: Geschichte der arabischen Litteratur (2 vols.) and

Supplement (3 vols.), Brockelmann

GAS: Geschichte des arabischen Schrifttums, F. Sezgin

(9 vols.)

Hilya: Hilyat al-Awliyā, Abū Nucaym al-Isbahānī.

Huffāz: Tadhkirat al-Huffāz, Dhahabī.

Ibn Khuzayma: Kitāb at-Tawhīd.

Ibn 'Aqīl: Ibn 'Aqīl et la résurgence de l'Islām traditionaliste

(1963), George Makdisi

Ibn 'Aqīl (1997): Ibn 'Aqil: Religion and Culture in Classical Islam

(1997), G. Makdisi

Image: Dieu à l'image de l'homme: les anthropomorphis-

mes de la sunna et leur interprétation par les théo-

logiens, Gimaret, D.

IJMES: International Journal of Middle East Studies

IOS: Israel Oriental Studies.
JA: Journal Asiatique

JRAS: Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society

 $^{^{\}rm 1}$ For the full details on the above titles, see the Bibliography at the end of this work.

XIV

REI:

RHR: RSO:

Safwa:

SEI:

S:

ABBREVIATIONS KAS: Kitāb Akhbār aṣ-Ṣifāt, Ibn al-Jawzī Kaz.: Kazimirski, Dictionnaire Arabe-Français, 2 vols. KDM: Kitāb ad-Ducafā' wa'l-Matrūkīn, Ibn al-Jawzī Kitāb al-Quṣṣās wa'l-Mudhakkirīn, Ibn al-Jawzī KO: (Beirut 1971) La doctrine: La doctrine d'al-Ash^carī, D. Gimaret. Lane: Lane, Arabic Lexicon, 8 vols. Le traité des divergences du Ḥadit d'Ibn Qutayba, Lecomte: trans. Gerard Lecomte. Les traditions islamique (vols. I and II, by O. Les traditions: Houdas and W. Marçais; vols. III and IV, by O. Houdas) Lisān al-'Arab, Ibn Manzūr, 15 vols. (Beirut 1968) Lisān: Manāqib or Manāqib Aḥmad b. Hanbal, Ibn al-Jawzī Manāqib Aḥmad: Magālāt: Magālāt al-Islāmīyīn, Abūl-Ḥasan al-Ashcarī Marāsid al-Ittilā^c 'alā Asmā' al-Amkina, Ṣafī'd-Dīn Marāşid: Kitāb al-Mawdū^cāt, Ibn al-Jawzī Mawdū^cāt: MIDEO: Mélanges de l'Institut dominicain d'études orientales du Caire at-Takmilat li-Wafayāt an-Naqala, al-Mundhirī. al-Mundhirī: Kitāb al-Mu^ctamad fī Usūl ad-Dīn, Abū Ya^clā Mu^ctamad: Kitāb al-Muntazam, Ibn al-Jawzī Muntazam: Mushkil: Mushkil al-Hadīth wa Bayānuhu, Ibn Fūrak al-Musnad, Ahmad b. Ḥanbal Musnad: Muhīt: Muhīt al-Muhīt, al-Bustānī Mīzān: Mīzān al-I'tidāl, Dhahabī Mir'āt az-Zamān, Sibţ b. al-Jawzī MZ: Proofs: Proofs for Eternity, Creation and the Existence of God in Medieval Islamic and Jewish Philosophy, H. A. Davidson.

> Revue des études Islamiques Revue de l'histoire des religions

Rivista degli studi orientali

Şafwat aş-Şafwa, İbn al-Jawzī. Shorter Encyclopaedia of Islam

Surah

Tanhid: Tawil: Ti TB: TH: K Wafa?: Wright: Zād: Z ZDMG: لة ١٥٦١ في مكتبة السليمانية . طوطة ۱۲۰۲ في مكتبة كوبرلي.

Shadharāt:

SI-

Savd:

Tahaqāt:

Tabaqāt:

Tahdhīb:

Talbīs:

Talkhīs:

Tafsīr:

Shadharāt: Shadharāt adh-Dhahab fī Akhbār Man Dhahab,

Ibn al-'Imād

SI: Studia Islamica

Şayd:Şayd al-Khāṭir, Ibn al-JawzīṬabaqāt:aṭ-Ṭabaqāt al-Kubrā, Ibn SaʿdTabaqāt:Tabaqāt al-Hanābila, Ibn Abī Yaʿlā

Tafsīr: Jāmi^c al-Bayān fī Tafsīr al-Qur³ān, Abū Ja^cfar

aţ-Ţabarī

Tahdhīb: Kitāb Tahdhīb at-Tahdhīb, Ibn Ḥajar al-ʿAsqalānī

Talbīs: Talbīs Iblīs, Ibn al-Jawzī

Talkhīṣ: Talkhīṣ al-Bayān fī Majāzāt al-Qur'ān, Raḍī

Tawhīd: Kitāb at-Tawhīd, Ibn Khuzayma

Ta'wīl:Ta'wīl Mushkil al-Qur'ān, Ibn Qutayba.TB:Tārīkh Baghdād, Abū Bakr al-KhaṭībTH:Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila, Ibn Abī Yaʿlā

Wafā': Kitāb al-Wafā' bi Aḥwāl al-Muṣṭafā, Ibn al-Jawzī

Wright: Wright, Arabic Grammar (2 vols.)

Zād:Zād al-Masīr fī 'Ilm at-Tafsīr, Ibn al-JawzīZDMG:Zeitschrift der Deutschen Morgenländischen

Gesellschaft, Wiesbaden

الرموز المستعملة في التعاليق النقديّة في نصّ الكتاب

الأسماء: كتاب الأسماء والصفات للبيهقي

الأصل: مخطوطة كتاب أخبار الصفات لآبن الجوزي (المخطوطة ١٥٦١ في مكتبة السليمانية، استانبول)

الباز: الباز الأشهب المنقض مخالفي المذهب لابن الجوزيّ (المخطوطة ١٢٠٢ في مكتبة كوبرلي، استانبول)

البخاريّ: صحيح البخاريّ (بيروت ١٣٣٠)

حلية: حلية الأولية لأبي نعيم الاصبهانيّ (بيروت ١٤٠٠)

المنتظم: المنتظم في تاريخ الملوك والأمم لابن الجوزي (حيدرآباد ١٣٥٩)

الموضوعات: كتاب الموضوعات لابن الجوزيّ (المدينة ١٣٨٦)

الواضح: الواضح في أصول الدين لابن عقيل (بيروت ١٩٩٦/١٤١٧)

تاريخ بغداد: تاريخ بغداد للخطيب البغداديّ (القاهرة ١٣٤٩)

تلبيس، او تلبيس إبليس: تلبيس إبليس لابن الجوزي (القاهرة ١٣٦٩) تأويل مشكل القرآن: تأويل مشكل القرآن لابن قتيبة (القاهرة ١٣٧٣) دفع: دفع شبهة التشبيه والرد على المجسّمة لابن الجوزي (دمشق ١٣٤٥) زاد المسير: زاد المسير في علم التفسير لابن الجوزي (بيروت ١٣٨٤) ص: صفحة ص: صفحة مسلم: صحيح مسلم بن الحجّاج (القاهرة، ١٣٧٤) مشكل: مشكل الحديث وبيانه لابن فورك (بيروت ١٤٠٥)

ميزان: ميزان الاعتدال في نقد الرجال للذهبيّ (بيروت ١٣٨٢

م: مجلّد

س: سطر

CHAPTER THREE

THE ARGUMENT OF KITĀB AKHBĀR AŞ-ŞIFĀT

Here I shall attempt to delineate what seem to me to be the essential elements of the argument developed by Ibn al-Jawzī in KAS.¹ Because the argument is multifaceted, and nuanced, and because it takes numerous twists and turns, the reader will need to consult the text of the work itself for the details.² It should always be kept in mind in following the argument of the work that Ibn al-Jawzī was not a professional theologian (mutakallim); to the extent that he was a "theologian," he was largely self-made.³ What he knew of the theological tradition, as developed within the Mu'tazilite and Ash'arite schools, was acquired through reading⁴ and perhaps, to some

Above all Iba al Isassi

Above all, Ibn al-Jawzi rhetorical arts, and that fact developed in KAS and the mif one can call them that, a style developed by Ibn al-Ja of homilies. It is this, in pa Fūrak's Mushkil al-Ḥadīn al-Bayhaqī, both of which viz., that of mounting a vigou against anthropomorphizing Ibn Fūrak nor al-Bayhaqī c the service of theology) with and, indeed, feted preacher.

¹ I have chosen to follow a somewhat different order in the presentation of these elements than that found in *KAS*. I trust that none of the elements essential to the argument have been sacrificed as a result of my rearrangement.

² How persuasive or compelling that argument is will have to be left to the reader to judge. For the assessment of some of Ibn al-Jawzī's contemporaries on the question of his competence in *kalām*, see *Dhayl*, I, 414-16-20; and *Shadharāt*, IV, 331, 6-12; and the following note.

³ A number of his contemporaries noted his limitations in this discipline, among them Ibn al-Qādisī, who is quoted by Ibn Rajab as saying that "[Ibn al-Jawzī] was not skilled in unravelling the complex arguments of the *mutakallimūn*" and that he often relied on Ibn 'Aqīl for guidance in such matters (*Dhayl*, 414, 16-20). Ibn al-Qādisī was undoubtedly right, in the main, though he may have overstated the matter a bit. On the question of his reliance on Ibn 'Aqīl, that too is true, but an important distinction must be made: as regards Ibn 'Aqīl, we must differentiate between the early and the late Ibn 'Aqīl, i.e., the Ibn 'Aqīl prior to his recantation (465/1072) and the Ibn 'Aqīl in the years between the recantation and his death (513/1119). If Ibn 'Aqīl's *Rasāʾil fī'l-Qurʾān* represents the later Ibn 'Aqīl, as G. Makdisi argues (*BEO*, 24 [1971], 55ff.), we can only conclude that he had adopted an essentially traditionalist view during his later years. The views taken over by Ibn al-Jawzī in *KAS* and elsewhere are those of the early Ibn 'Aqīl. There is a very considerable distance between the positions outlined in the *Rasāʾil* of Ibn 'Aqīl and those set forth in *KAS*. Moreover, Ibn al-Jawzī held to those views to the very end of his life, in contrast to Ibn 'Aqīl.

⁴ The question of the sources from which he drew his knowledge of Mu^ctazilism is admittedly complicated. He cites no works by Mu^ctazilī authors in *KAS*. One can be sure that he derived some of his knowledge of Mu^ctazilism (and undoubtedly Ash^carism also)

from the writings of Ibn 'Aqīl. 1 (82-85), Ibn al-Jawzī cites three Kitāb al-Ārā' wa'd-Diyānār of I theologian who sought to integrik Kitāb al-Maqālāt of Abūl-Qās of Mu'tazilism, al-Khayyāt ci. 173). The third source cited in Tatheological anthology which is not of Mu'tazilism was in part, and palso know from the Municana is several Mu'tazilī theologians in on the school from conversation even though critical, is reflective theological issues posed by Marage VII, 193-197).

⁵ He almost certainly learned a Abū'l-Faḍl b. Nāṣir, who had o 225-226).

⁶ I have placed the term transcendit from the way in which the term For a delineation of the concept literature produced by medieval here, the idea of transcendence as rooted in an atomistic ontology.

extent, also through discussions with those closest to him.⁵

Above all, Ibn al-Jawzī was a preacher, a master of the literary and rhetorical arts, and that fact is reflected both in the content of the argument developed in KAS and the manner of its presentation. The excesses of KAS, if one can call them that, are in large measure a function of a rhetorical style developed by Ibn al-Jawzī over many years as a preacher and composer of homilies. It is this, in part, that sets KAS apart from such works as Ibn Fūrak's Mushkil al-Ḥadīth or the Kitāb al-Asmā' wa'ṣ-Ṣifāt of Abū Bakr al-Bayhaqī, both of which were inspired by the same theological concern, viz., that of mounting a vigorous defense of the idea of divine "transcendence" against anthropomorphizing tendencies within traditionalist Islam. But neither Ibn Fūrak nor al-Bayhaqī came to the task of analysis and construction (in the service of theology) with the experience and the aptitude of an accomplished and, indeed, feted preacher.

from the writings of Ibn 'Aqīl. In the course of his discussion of the Mu'tazila in *Talbīs* (82-85), Ibn al-Jawzī cites three sources, two of which were the works of Mu'tazilīs: the *Kitāb al-Ārā* wa'd-Diyānāt of Abū Muḥammad an-Nawbakhtī (d. ca. 920), the Imāmī theologian who sought to integrate Mu'tazilite thought into a Shī'ite framework; and the *Kitāb al-Maqālāt* of Abū'l-Qāsim al-Balkhī (d. 931), a disciple of the Baghdādī historian of Mu'tazilism, al-Khayyāt (cf., *Muntazam*, VI, 238, and *GAS*, I, 622-623; *Talbīs*, 83, 173). The third source cited in *Talbīs* (83) is Abū Ya'lā's *Kitāb al-Muqtabas*, apparently a theological anthology which is no longer extant. It is worth emphasizing that his knowledge of Mu'tazilism was in part, and perhaps to a large extent, drawn from primary sources. We also know from the *Muntazam* that Ibn al-Jawzī was personally acquainted with at least several Mu'tazilī theologians in Baghdad and undoubtedly drew some of his information on the school from conversation with them. His lengthy notice on Ibn Burhān (d. 456/1064), even though critical, is reflective of Ibn al-Jawzī's intense interest in Mu'tazilism and the theological issues posed by Mu'tazilī thought (*Muntazam*, VIII, 236-237; cf., also *Muntazam*, VII, 193-197).

⁵ He almost certainly learned a good deal about Ash^carism through his maternal uncle, Abū'l-Faḍl b. Nāṣir, who had once been a member of the Ash^carite school (*Dhayl*, I, 225-226).

⁶ I have placed the term transcendence here within quotation marks primarily to differentiate it from the way in which the term is commonly used today in Western works on theology. For a delineation of the concept of transcendence as it appears in *KAS* and much of the literature produced by medieval Muslim theologians, see what follows. Suffice it to say here, the idea of transcendence as it appears in the works of the medieval *mutakallimūn* is rooted in an atomistic ontology, apart from which it loses much of its force.

Reason (caql) and Revelation (naql)

For Ibn al-Jawzī, our knowledge of God derives from two sources and only two: reason ('aql)' and revelation (naql).8 The knowledge derived from these two sources may overlap at certain points, but, on the whole, what each tells us is quite different. For Ibn al-Jawzī, the knowledge obtained through reason is more foundational in character in that it constitutes the necessary starting point from which the quest for God must begin if it is to be successful. In the larger picture, revelation too is essential, but it cannot do its work, so to speak, until reason has laid the groundwork and prepared the way. The principal function of revelation is to fill in the picture whose form and contours have been mapped out and at least partially filled in by reason. In brief, the task of revelation is to add to and complete the work begun by reason. It is through reason that the existence of God and His necessary attributes are established. Revelation itself makes no attempt to demonstrate God's existence on the basis of logical principles because that does not lie within its power or purview. There is no credible or compelling reason to listen to the "voice" of revelation-to accept it as an authoritative

text—until God's existence remptory evidence (adilla a

It is essentially on the bathat Ibn al-Jawzī, following prove God's existence. Si points to the fact that it is to cause other than itself; and must the elements or parts of immediate cause of the wortoo is caused, but this kingroblem of an infinite regreconclusion to be drawn is the parts—is the result of a caragument from contingency.

 $^{^7}$ Ibn al-Jawzī frequently uses the terms nazar and $istidl\bar{a}l$ to refer to the reasoning process. Reason, in turn, draws from two sources: 1) from itself, i.e, through logical analysis and reflection, and 2) from the observation of nature and human experience in society.

⁸ The term naql (literally, a transmission or report) was adopted by the ' $ulam\bar{a}$ ' to refer to scripture in the broadest sense, i.e., including both the Quran and the teaching of the Prophet. According to Ibn al-Jawzī, knowledge of God is derived from two sources, and only two, viz., reason ('aql) and revelation or scripture (naql). Sense experience and the language of sense experience are excluded as potential sources, for they are powerless, by themselves, to tell us anything about God, since He is, in His very essence, an incorporeal being and, therefore, not available to the senses in any respect. If the term "transcendent" is used to qualify Ibn al-Jawzī's God, that term can only refer to the non-corporeal nature of the divine being. As we shall see in more detail below, transcendence does not mean that God is totally other; for Ibn al-Jawzī it means only that He is not among the objects available to sense perception. Ibn al-Jawzī has no difficulty referring to God as knowing, seeing, hearing, etc. (cf., Gimaret, El^2 , VII, 788b; and $Maq\bar{a}l\bar{a}t$, 155-156; also W. M. Watt, "Some Muslim Discussions of Anthropomorphism," 9, 8-12).

⁹ §§2-6, 16, 167 (and note). There are numerous references to reason and its function scattered throughout *KAS*. This was standard procedure for the Mu^ctazila as it was for many Ash^carites. Cf., R. Frank, "The Science of *Kalām*," *Arabic Sciences and Philosophy*, II (1992), 16-17.

^{10 §§11, 14, 33/3, 148.} etc.

^{11 §§4-6, 9-11.} The argument called the argument from change (*La doctrine*, 230-234; see KAS)

world ('ālam) is the realm of bothree and only three: bodies and must be noted that atoms are from, or outside of, bodies. Bodies of atoms in which a certain arrangement determine the such things as size, shape, we moving or at rest, in contact objects fall into the category of attribute of bodies is that they determines their composition in accidents that define them. In the That is a non-negotiable element details, see §§5-7, 9, 29, 44, as well world for the solution.

¹³ One of the bits of evidence is composite entity. In the logic of composer.

by the early Mu^ctazila (W. M. W. 7, 28-33).

¹⁵ Cf., §6.

text—until God's existence has been demonstrated on the basis of the peremptory evidence (adilla qaṭ̄̄s̄ya) of reason. 10

It is essentially on the basis of the argument from contingency (hudūth) that Ibn al-Jawzī, following the tradition of medieval kalām, attempts to prove God's existence. Since the world exists and since the evidence points to the fact that it is temporal, it follows that the world must have a cause other than itself; and if the world as a whole is contingent, so also must the elements or parts of which it is made. It might be argued that the immediate cause of the world is also caused and that the cause of this latter too is caused, but this kind of reasoning leads only to the insuperable problem of an infinite regression of causes (tasalsul). The only plausible conclusion to be drawn is that the world—both as a whole and in all of its parts—is the result of a cause that is itself uncaused. On the basis of the argument from contingency, it is possible to assert that God exists, that He

¹⁰ §§11, 14, 33/3, 148, etc.

¹¹ §§4-6, 9-11. The argument from contingency is supplemented by what might be called the argument from change or what Gimaret calls the argument from "metamorphoses" (*La doctrine*, 230-234; see *KAS*, the latter half of §5).

¹² For Ibn al-Jawzī, again following definitions developed by the *mutakallimūn*, the world ('ālam) is the realm of "bodily" existence. The elements that make up the world are three and only three: bodies (ajsām), atoms (jawāhir) and accidents (a'rāḍ), although it must be noted that atoms (apart from the basā'iṭ [KAS §9]) and accidents do not exist apart from, or outside of, bodies. Bodies are defined as composite entities consisting of aggregations of atoms in which a certain number of accidents reside. The number of atoms and their arrangement determine the internal structure and density of bodies; accidents determine such things as size, shape, weight, color, smell, whether a body is living or inanimate, moving or at rest, in contact with other bodies or separate from them, etc. All material objects fall into the category of bodies as defined by Ibn al-Jawzī. The other important attribute of bodies is that they must have a cause which brings them into being and determines their composition (the number and arrangement of their atoms along with the accidents that define them). In the words of Ibn al-Jawzī, everybody must have a composer. That is a non-negotiable element in Ibn al-Jawzī's definition of bodies. For additional details, see §§5-7, 9, 29, 44, as well as other references scattered throughout KAS.

 $^{^{13}}$ One of the bits of evidence indicating that the world is temporal is the fact that it is a composite entity. In the logic of $kal\bar{a}m$, everything composite must by definition have a composer.

¹⁴ As Watt points out, the argument from contingency is a method of proof developed by the early Mu^ctazila (W. M. Watt, "Some Muslim Discussions of Anthropomorphism," 7, 28-33).

¹⁵ Cf., §6.

is the uncaused cause of all that is, and that since He is himself uncaused He is necessarily eternal. Moreover, on the basis of what is sometimes known as the argument from "mutual interference" (tamānu'), ¹⁶ Ibn al-Jawzī concludes that the cause of the universe must be one. ¹⁷ Finally, it can be shown on the basis of the argument from contingency that God is not a "body," ¹⁸ for a body is by definition composite, viz., an aggregation of atoms qualified by a certain number of accidents; if He were a body, He would necessarily require a cause for His composition, that is, He would require a composer. If God is not a body, none of the attributes of bodies can be applied to Him: He does not—indeed, cannot—occupy space (taḥayyuz); He is beyond change (taghayyur), movement (taḥarruk, intiqāl), rest (sukūn), and the other conditions that govern the relations of bodies: contact (mumāssa, mubāshara), conjunction (ijtimā^c), separation (infīṣāl), difference (tabayyun), and so forth.

To recapitulate, on the basis of reason alone it is possible to show that God exists, that He is the eternal uncaused cause of all that is, that He is One, and that He is transcendent in the sense that He is beyond the world of material forms, beyond all bodily attributes, and beyond the conditions that govern the relations of bodies in space (movement, rest, contact, et cetera), and, finally, beyond time. In short, the God discovered through, and established by, reason is, in His essence, outside the cosmos, 19 that is to say, outside the categories of time 20 and space, in every respect except perhaps in a metaphorical

sense.²¹ While Ibn al-Jawzi of God, that otherness is not a His existence and primary a and deductive powers of thowever, will have to away

Moreover, the task of e attributes through reason is in the experience of every and His necessary attribute existence on the basis of s authority. This is not true b are deficient in that they judgments based on Thean extent why Ibn al-Jawzi re matters-and why he devo explanation of the reasons His necessary attributes. taglid is. in effect, to proc This is not acceptable in human being must exert h reason (cagl. ijtihād) with

¹⁶ This argument, cited frequently in works on *kalām*, was traced by medieval theologians not to Greek sources, but to the Quran itself, and especially S. 23: 91 ("God has not taken to himself a son, nor is there any god with Him; for then each god would have...risen up against others." Cf., also S. 21: 22). For al-Ash^carī's use of the argument, see his *Luma^c* §8. See also H. Davidson, *Proofs for Eternity, Creation and the Existence of God in Medieval Islamic and Jewish Philosophy* (New York 1987), 166-167, where the argument and its place in medieval *kalām* is discussed in greater detail.

 $^{^{17}}$ Cf., §10, where Ibn al-Jawzī briefly alludes to the argument. While the idea of God's Oneness, in the sense of having no equal, is important to Ibn al-Jawzī, much more important to the argument developed in *KAS* is the idea of internal oneness, the notion that God is not made up of parts ($tab^c\bar{\iota}d$) and therefore cannot be a body.

¹⁸ Cf., §§7, 137, 237. Cf., also §9 where it is said, following a similar line of reasoning, that God cannot be an atom "for [all] atoms are identical to each other (*tamāthul*) and occupy space (*taḥayyuz*)."

¹⁹ See e.g., §55.

²⁰ See §57 where the point is made more explicitly than perhaps anywhere else in KAS.

in Ibn al-Jawzi will allow that knowledge but only in this sease

In the words of Ibn 2l-J2-2 every creature" [§20].

²³ Cf., §§14, 18-22.

The concept of marries or toglid (cf., also the last part of tomer rifut Allāh and taqtid are moon of God taqlid is not permissible in the argument of the work, see

¹⁵ Cf., §§18-22. Ibn al-Jawzi principles upon which religion principles). He did allow for a m

How far Ibn al-Jawzi was pon the basis of the evidence from were not capable of using reason all adults share equally in the po

sense.²¹ While Ibn al-Jawzī comes down on the side of otherness in describing God, that otherness is not absolute. This much is apparent from the fact that His existence and primary attributes can be established through the inferential and deductive powers of reason. The final definition of God's otherness, however, will have to await a consideration of revelation.

Moreover, the task of establishing God's existence and His necessary attributes through reason is not a one-time undertaking; it must be replicated in the experience of every individual.²² No one can establish God's existence and His necessary attributes for another human being. To believe in God's existence on the basis of someone else's effort is to ground one's belief in authority. This is not true belief, however, for judgments based on authority are deficient in that they lack certitude. They fall into the category of judgments based on "hearsay" or "reports" (akhbār). 23 This is to a large extent why Ibn al-Jawzī rejects taglīd (the authority of tradition) in such matters—and why he devotes a substantial part of chapter I to a detailed explanation of the reasons why, in matters pertaining to God's existence and His necessary attributes, taqlīd is unacceptable.²⁴ To proceed on the basis of taglīd is, in effect, to proceed on the basis of presumption $(zann/mazn\bar{u}n)$. This is not acceptable in matters pertaining to God's existence.²⁵ Every human being must exert himself to the fullest in exercising the powers of reason ('aql, ijtihād) with which he has been endowed.26

²¹ Ibn al-Jawzī will allow that God is present in a metaphorical sense, *viz*. through His knowledge but only in this sense.

²² In the words of Ibn al-Jawzī, it is *'alā kulli makhlūq'* ("[a responsibility incumbent] on every creature" [$\S 20$]).

²³ Cf., §§14, 18-22.

 $^{^{24}}$ The concept of ma^crifa or cilm (knowledge) is central to Ibn al-Jawzī's critique of $taql\bar{\iota}d$ (cf., also the last part of §37 of KAS where Ibn al-Jawzī states quite explicitly that $ma^crifatAll\bar{\iota}d$ and $taql\bar{\iota}d$ are incompatible: "...especially in matters pertaining to the knowledge of God $taql\bar{\iota}d$ is not permissible"). On the concept of "knowing" (vs. $taql\bar{\iota}d$) and its place in the argument of the work, see notes to the Translation §20.

 $^{^{25}}$ Cf., §§18-22. Ibn al-Jawzī rejected $taql\bar{\iota}d$ not only in the sphere of $u\bar{s}u\bar{\iota}l$ $ad-d\bar{\iota}n$ (the principles upon which religion is based), but also in the field of $u\bar{s}u\bar{\iota}l$ al-fiqh (juridical principles). He did allow for a measure of $taql\bar{\iota}d$ in the realm of positive law ($fur\bar{\iota}u^c$ al-fiqh).

²⁶ How far Ibn al-Jawzī was prepared to push this point is difficult to say—i.e., solely on the basis of the evidence from *KAS*. He knew, e.g., that children below a certain age were not capable of using reason except at the most elementary level; he also knew that not all adults share equally in the powers of reason, and he certainly knew that there are those

Revelation (nagl)

Despite its power and its centrality to the quest for God, reason (caql) is limited in what it can do. It can establish God's existence and identify those attributes ($sif\bar{a}t$) that are necessary to His being as the eternal uncaused cause, but it cannot tell us what God expects of us or delineate the values and principles by which human conduct in this life is to be judged. That kind of knowledge can only be acquired by recourse to the revealed text of scripture: the Quran and the Sunna. Indeed, according to Ibn al-Jawzī, the primary function of revelation is to provide human beings with a knowledge of those principles ($ai_1k\bar{a}m$) and commands ($aw\bar{a}mir$) that ought to govern the conduct of individuals and their relationship to each other ($mu^c\bar{a}mal\bar{a}t$) in this life. 28

Revelation, however, is indispensable in another respect: it adds to what can be known of God through reason, and in doing so makes possible a fuller, richer, more adequate understanding of God. Thus it is only through the Quran and the Sunna that we can know, for example, that He is living, that He knows, wills, hears, sees, speaks, and that He possesses the power (qudra) to act.²⁹ These attributes, sometimes referred to as the sifāt khabarīya (scriptural attributes), are perfectly in accord with what can be known of God through reason.

Revelation does present a problem, however, in that it ascribes to God a host of "additional" attributes, some of which do appear to conflict with the

non-corporeal nature of Coreason makes clear, God composite and hence temp apparent conflict between poses two sets of question scripture to be squared with of such language in scripture to the Quran is God's speed anthropomorphic expression by the anthropomorphism still real, for the language the Prophet himself, it too

Although such questions of they were at the center of schools of medieval Islam, but also in some of the less questions unique to Suraquestions.

To answer the question of expressions and images. It language which he cobble than satisfactory, fashion. It is a product of sense expreflect human experience at this follows from the fact human construction. Land

individuals—the mentally handicapped, e.g.—who are unable to participate in the rational effort to establish God's existence.

²⁷ To put it in another way, reason can disclose the existence of God as the Creator; it cannot disclose his existence as Legislator.

²⁸ Here Ibn al-Jawzī clearly differs with the Mu^ctazila, who held that through observation and rational reflection human beings can arrive at a knowledge of those principles that ought to guide human conduct—a knowledge sufficient to satisfy the demands of God. In the Mu^ctazilī view human beings are responsible to God for their conduct independently of revelation. Sunnīs, by contrast, insisted that human responsibility before God is contingent on revelation. See Reinhart, *Before Revelation: the Boundaries of Muslim Moral Thought* (Albany 1995) for the arguments pro and con on this question.

 $^{^{29}}$ §71; cf., also §85. It might be argued that it is possible to establish the attribute of *qudra* through reason, for in establishing God as the cause of the world, the act of creation is also established.

Some of these belong to the

For a rapid survey, along morphism from approximately God: Anthropomorphism in East

Ibn al-Jawzī does not say the hat he says about the nature of

IS

se

ed

les

at

of

he

ge

m

āt)

at

a

gh

er

iva of

l a the

nal

it.

ion hat

In of

ent ght

of ion non-corporeal nature of God's being as established through reason.³⁰ As reason makes clear, God cannot be a body, for all bodies are by definition composite and hence temporal in origin; all bodies require a composer. The apparent conflict between the language of reason and that of revelation poses two sets of questions: How is the anthropomorphic language of scripture to be squared with the language of reason, and how is the presence of such language in scripture to be explained? Secondly, if the language of the Quran is God's speech (as Ibn al-Jawzī took it to be), how are its anthropomorphic expressions to be construed? Although the challenge posed by the anthropomorphisms of the hadith is less daunting, the problem is still real, for the language of the Prophet is also "inspired" language; like the Prophet himself, it too is in some sense $ma^c s mm$ (sacrosanct).³¹

Although such questions were not commonly addressed by Ḥanbalī thinkers, they were at the center of debates that went on within the great theological schools of medieval Islam, especially among the Mu^ctazila and the Ash^carites, but also in some of the lesser schools such as the Kullābīya. Nor were these questions unique to Sunnī thinkers. For Ibn al-Jawzī these are serious questions.

The Language of Scripture

To answer the question of why it is that scripture contains anthropomorphic expressions and images, Ibn al-Jawzī has recourse to elements of a theory of language which he cobbles together in an interesting, though perhaps less than satisfactory, fashion. Essentially, language, as Ibn al-Jawzī understands it, is a product of sense experience in such a way that words and expressions reflect human experience at its most basic, its most primitive, level. All of this follows from the fact that language is in some fundamental sense a human construction.³² Language, however, is a multilayered, multidimen-

 $^{^{30}}$ Some of these belong to the category of the $aws\bar{a}f$ referred to in KAS §33/1.

³¹ For a rapid survey, along with a provocative discussion, of the problem of anthropomorphism from approximately the 8th to the 10th centuries, see J. van Ess, *The Youthful God: Anthropomorphism in Early Islam* (1988), 1-20.

³² Ibn al-Jawzī does not say this in so many words, but it must, I think, be inferred from what he says about the nature of language.

sional phenomenon. At its highest level it is capable of the kind of abstraction and manipulation that make possible the various proofs for the existence of God. Between these two levels,³³ judging from the scattered comments made by Ibn al-Jawzī in *KAS*, is the language of imagination (*takhyīl*), a language that makes use of mental images (*taṣawwurāt*) drawn from sense experience, but a language that is under the influence of reason. This imaginal language is, in effect, a language pulled in two directions, perhaps one might even say, it is a hybrid language. The language that occupies this intermediate sphere is the kind of language on which poetry and refined prose draw. It is also the language of dream experiences as well as those forms of expression that have moved beyond sense experience but have not attained the status of abstraction.³⁴

Ibn al-Jawzī does not attempt a classification of the language of scripture in terms of these categories, but he does readily concede that much of the language of the Quran and the <code>hadīth</code> is language of the simpler sort—language still closely linked to sense experience, and necessarily so—because it is the language of the great masses of human beings.³⁵ For the most part, it is the only kind of language they can grasp. Since scripture aims to communicate its message to the widest possible audience, it has no choice but to draw on the more elemental forms of language—those closest to the experience of ordinary people. This explains why, for example, God is so frequently portrayed in scripture as a corporeal being: as one who has a face, eyes, hands, ears, and so forth; a being who moves from place to place, and who, at every moment in time, occupies a particular place.³⁶ According to Ibn al-Jawzī, scripture uses such language for the benefit of ordinary human beings in order to underscore the reality of God's existence in the most

concrete, vivid, compelling and doubt.³⁷

By understanding the an Ibn al-Jawzī is treading orthodoxy, if not transgramguage of scripture—the Quran itself—is a concern borders on suggesting that tioned. What happens to the unconditioned word of Go an attempt to accommodate Was Ibn al-Jawzī aware of sets forth so confidently? that Ibn al-Jawzī is mouth others. Not so here. The madapted to the needs of the

³³ That is, between the level of sense experience and the level at which reason is operative.

³⁴ Cf., §§ 74, 75, 76 and 79 where the subject is broached in connection with the imaginal creations of the dream experience.

³⁵ See §34 where Ibn al-Jawzī defends this view of the language of scripture. He alludes to this way of thinking of language frequently in the pages that follow (cf., for example §§123, 167, 216, 225 and 233); unfortunately, nothing essentially new is added to the position outlined in §34.

³⁶ He is said, e.g., to be seated on a throne located above the heavens.

³⁷ See §34 where the issue is chaps. II and III.

³⁸ See §§34 and 59. among of Abū Bakr al-Jassās's rease Quran God addressed humanic of idioms current in the speed dangerously close to saving prefabricated elements already Literary Theory." Zeitschr [1991-92]. 268-269). We may a Hanafī in jurisprudence, is he also Heinrichs, "Takhvil" and I 233, where Zamakhshari, ma with S. 33:72, insists that the reearth be taken as a figurative en this are common in the language to their ways and molds for m adopts this view but defends it w

There is nothing in KAS to problematic theologically.

Not in the sense that the is

concrete, vivid, compelling way possible and, in so doing, to dispel uncertainty and doubt.³⁷

By understanding the anthropomorphic language of scripture in this way, Ibn al-Jawzī is treading dangerously close to the limits of traditionalist orthodoxy, if not transgressing those limits, for in suggesting that the language of scripture—the language of both the Prophet and that of the Quran itself—is a concession to the needs of the masses, Ibn al-Jawzī borders on suggesting that the language of scripture is historically conditioned. What happens to the doctrine of the Quran as the eternal, unchanging, unconditioned word of God when it is suggested that its language represents an attempt to accommodate the needs of ordinary, uneducated human beings? Was Ibn al-Jawzī aware of the theological implications of the position he sets forth so confidently? Occasionally in KAS, one has the impression that Ibn al-Jawzī is mouthing words (and expressing views) formulated by others. Not so here. The notion that the language of scripture is a language adapted to the needs of the common people was clearly his own, or a view

³⁷ See §34 where the issue is addressed. Ibn al-Jawzī reiterates this point frequently in chaps. II and III.

³⁸ See §§34 and 59, among others. Heinrichs alludes to this problem in his discussion of Abū Bakr al-Jaṣṣāṣ's treatment of majāz in his Uṣūl al-Fiqh. Al-Jaṣṣāṣ insists that in the Quran God addressed humankind in clear Arabic speech, and that in doing so He made use of idioms current in the speech of the Arabs. "Here al-Jassās (Heinrichs writes) comes dangerously close to saying that God is not creative in his majāz expressions, using only prefabricated elements already existing in the language" ("Scriptural Hermeneutics and Literary Theory," Zeitschrift für Geschichte der Arabisch-Islamischen Wissenschaften, 7 [1991-92], 268-269). We may assume that al-Jaṣṣāṣ, who was a Mu^ctazilī in theology and a Ḥanafī in jurisprudence, is here reflecting a view that was shared by other Mu^ctazilīs (see also Heinrichs, "'Takhyīl' and Its Traditions" in Gott is schön und Er lebt die Schönheit, p. 233, where Zamakhsharī, in a discussion of the meaning of amāna (trust) in connection with S. 33:72, insists that the term amana along with the reference to the heavens and the earth be taken as a figurative expression, and then he adds: "[Figurative] expressions like this are common in the language of the Arabs and the Koran came down exactly according to their ways and molds [or patterns of thought]"). The fact that Ibn al-Jawzī not only adopts this view but defends it vigorously and repeatedly in KAS is certainly significant.

 $^{^{39}}$ There is nothing in KAS to suggest that he saw this view of language as in any way problematic theologically.

⁴⁰ Not in the sense that the idea was original with him, but rather in the sense that he was fully convinced of its truth.

that he held with some conviction. He alludes to it repeatedly in KAS.⁴¹ And it is not difficult to see why, for it is a reflection of the experiences of a man who, in composing homilies for a popular audience, must have spent a good deal of time and energy searching for expressions and images—for a language—that would resonate with ordinary believers. As a preacher and author of numerous homiletical anthologies, Ibn al-Jawzī had first hand experience of the difficulties involved in crafting a language that could speak effectively to audiences made up, for the most part, of uneducated people—persons steeped in what he called the language of sense experience.

Ta'wīl in the Service of Reason

Given the presence of anthropomorphisms in the Quran and the *ḥadīth*, how are such expressions to be construed? Is such language used merely to emphasize the reality of God's existence, or do the anthropomorphic expressions of scripture carry a meaning that goes beyond merely reinforcing the fact of God's existence? For Ibn al-Jawzī the answer to the latter question is clearly, yes. ⁴² If that is so, how or by what means is the meaning of such a language to be deciphered? A literalistic approach cannot possibly be the answer, because it merely accents the "materialist," corporeal aspect of scriptural anthropomorphisms since, for Ibn al-Jawzī, literalism by definition takes sense experience as its frame of reference. If the anthropomorphisms of scripture were to be taken at face value the inevitable result would be a God conceived in corporeal, this-worldly terms. For Ibn al-Jawzī such language taken literally, in effect, reduces God to the status of an idol. ⁴³

Much of *KAS* is a diarribe a by some members of the l displeasure is severe and fellow Ḥanbalīs who construction beyond the pale of Islam.

Ibn al-Jawzī's response is straightforward. Since it is is reason that must be our particular the intention bel aṣ-ṣifāt. 45 For Ibn al-Jawa between the God discovere method of exegesis one et oneness and transcendence infinite and eternal, viz. 1 being.

For Ibn al-Jawzī, it is a dilemma posed by the and al-Jawzī ta'wīl is a mode of or metaphorically. Althomakes this transcending of his reasoning seems to be a of language which assume

the creation of idols as objects in easily recognized for what they are as anthropomorphisms in KAS at This understanding of the comme helps to explain the passion so the KAS. Although Ibn al-Jawzi and understands them. I would come these connections clearly in many and his opposition to literalistic as majāzāt (instances of figurative (cf., §34).

⁴¹ Cf., §34.

⁴² See W.M. Watt's comments on *ta*²*wīl* in his "Some Muslim Discussions of Anthropomorphism," 2-3 and 9.

⁴³ Admittedly, Ibn al-Jawzī does not say this in so many words, but it is certainly present by implication. Indeed, it is precisely this understanding of anthropomorphism that is behind the emotional intensity of his denunciation of *tashbīhltajsīm* (on the meaning of these terms for Ibn al-Jawzī, see notes to the Translation §1). By ascribing to God corporeal features He is, in effect, reduced to the status of an idol. For Ibn al-Jawzī idols are not only objects in the external world; they can also exist within the mind as mental constructs or images, particularly when God is conceived as possessing corporeal features. Indeed, idols understood in the traditional sense are (for Ibn al-Jawzī) nothing less than externalizations of mental images. These latter represent the necessary first phase in a process that ends in

⁴⁴ See, e.g., §244, last line.

^{45 §167,} etc.

⁴⁶ His position was and remained-Funum: المراة الله على الوافق العقل reason is in agreement with reason [509, 8-9. Cf. Maker

And of a ent a for a and hand could cated

ence.

nthropo-

certainly nism that aning of corporeal not only structs or ced, idols alizations at ends in Much of *KAS* is a diatribe against the literal approach to scripture championed by some members of the Ḥanbalī school; the language used to express his displeasure is severe and unforgiving. He does not hesitate to characterize fellow Ḥanbalīs who construe scripture in this way as having placed themselves beyond the pale of Islam.⁴⁴

Ibn al-Jawzī's response to the hermeneutic challenge posed by scripture is straightforward. Since it is through reason that we first "encounter" God, it is reason that must be our guide in deciphering the meaning of scripture, in particular the intention behind its anthropomorphic expressions, the *akhbār aṣ-ṣifāt*. For Ibn al-Jawzī it was a given that there can be no conflict between the God discovered by reason and the God of scripture. Hold Whatever method of exegesis one employs, the result must be an affirmation of the oneness and transcendence of God. In short, it must point to a God who is infinite and eternal, *viz.*, a God who is beyond all forms of contingent being.

For Ibn al-Jawzī, it is $ta^2w\bar{\imath}l$ that offers the best hope for resolving the dilemma posed by the anthropomorphisms of scripture. In general, for Ibn al-Jawzī $ta^2w\bar{\imath}l$ is a mode of exegesis in which language is construed tropically or metaphorically. Although he nowhere explains how it is that $ta^2w\bar{\imath}l$ makes this transcending of language in its elemental, primal form possible, his reasoning seems to be as follows: in contrast to a literalistic interpretation of language which assumes that language has only one level of meaning,

the creation of idols as objects in the external world. Mental images are more subtle, less easily recognized for what they are, but they are no less idols. What Ibn al-Jawzī denounces as anthropomorphisms in *KAS* are (for him) idols in their subjective, internal, mental form. This understanding of the connection between idolatry in its objective and subjective forms helps to explain the passion so often displayed in the denunciation of anthropomorphism in *KAS*. Although Ibn al-Jawzī nowhere spells out these connections, it is clear that he understands them. I would contend that it is impossible to understand *KAS* without keeping these connections clearly in mind. They also explain his passionate commitment to $ta^2w\bar{t}l$ (and his opposition to literalistic exegesis), for it is only by construing the $akhb\bar{a}r$ as- $sif\bar{a}t$ as $maj\bar{a}z\bar{a}t$ (instances of figurative language) that one can avoid the dangers of $tashb\bar{t}h/tajs\bar{t}m$ (cf., §34).

⁴⁴ See, e.g., §244, last line.

^{45 §167,} etc.

⁴⁶ His position was and remained that of Ibn 'Aqīl as the latter expresses it in his $Kit\bar{a}b$ al- $Fun\bar{u}n$: نقول: إنَّ العقىل مطابق للشرع وإنَّه لا يرد الشرع إلا بما يوافق العقل (we maintain that reason is in agreement with revelation and there is nothing in revelation that does not agree with reason [509, 8-9. Cf., Makdisi, Ibn ' $Aq\bar{\imath}l$ (1997), 88]).

viz., what might be called the surface $(z\bar{a}hir)$ meaning of the text, $ta^{3}w\bar{\imath}l$ insists that language sometimes admits of at least two levels of meaning, the obvious, literal meaning $(haq\bar{\imath}qa)$ and a tropic or metaphorical sense $(maj\bar{a}z)$. The kind of $ta^{3}w\bar{\imath}l$ practiced by Ibn al-Jawzī seeks to move from the one to the other, that is, from the literal or surface meaning to the tropic. Language, including the language of scripture, does not always have multiple levels of meaning. It is a question of the intention of the language used. The first task of the exegete is to determine the intention behind a particular expression or text, that is to decide when $ta^{3}w\bar{\imath}l$ is warranted and when not.

For Ibn al-Jawzī, there are two ways to decide the answer to the question. The first is to consult the context for clues that suggest or point, whether subtly or overtly, to the presence of a metaphorical sense. This kind of analysis is, strictly speaking, linguistic and literary in nature. The second approach might be called theological and takes as its starting point the nature of God as disclosed through reason. Since reason shows conclusively that God is the uncaused, eternal, non-corporeal One, those references in scripture that might on the surface suggest otherwise must be deemed necessarily to have a metaphorical sense and therefore to be construed by means of *ta*²wīl. But to conclude that a particular text must be construed metaphorically does not answer the question as to which one, among the various possible metaphorical meanings, is intended. In the end that can only be determined through lingistic/literary analysis.

Ibn al-Jawzī takes the need for linguistic/literary analysis seriously, as can be seen from the amount of space devoted to it in chapters II and III of *KAS*. It can fairly be said that the bulk of these two chapters is taken up with textual analysis, including considerations of a philological, grammatical, semantic, and literary nature. The function of the theological approach is largely negative: it provides protection against construing scripture in any way that might conflict with the God discovered through reason. It is only through the often tedious process of textual analysis that the precise and correct meaning of a given text can be determined. Here Ibn al-Jawzī turns to the work of the experts on language (grammarians, philologists and lexicographers), to literary criticism, exegesis, 47 and poetics for guidance in

determining the precise members of the analysis in land under the Quran (chap. II) and under to how Ibn al-Jawzī uses through careful analysis the If ta²wīl is not disciplined can become an excuse for say, of course, that the ext To demand that would be to the course of the course

The Ho

The hermeneutic objective critical. KAS is constructive scripture for the benefit critical (which here means panthropomorphizing argumof a number of fellow Hamis its principal purpose, as had become convinced the Hanbalī school had lost as prominent Ḥanbalīs whose of the akhbār aṣ-sifāt. 5

Ibn al-Jawzī's specific of names within the school attempt to reform the the fellow Ḥanbalīs that their lis indefensible, a negation

⁴⁷ Especially, the many commentaries on the Quran and the various $had\bar{\imath}th$ collections. In the case of the $had\bar{\imath}th$, Ibn al-Jawzī also drew on the substantial literature in the field of jarh $wa-ta^cd\bar{\imath}l$ (the critical analysis of $had\bar{\imath}th$) in addition to the commentary literature.

⁴⁹ See, e.g., §§39, 46, etc.

⁴⁹ Ibn al-Jawzī repeatedly ca e.g., §167).

⁵⁰ See especially §§14, 30, 33

⁵¹ Above all, Ibn Ḥāmid (d. 527/1132).

determining the precise meaning called for by a particular text. This is why much of the analysis in *KAS* is based on the writings of men like Abū 'Ubayda, Ibn Qutayba, Tha'lab, al-Farrā', Ibn al-Anbārī, al-Khaṭṭābī, al-Bayhaqī, and others. ⁴⁸ His discussion of the anthropomorphic expressions in the Quran (chap. II) and the ḥadīth (chap. III) provide detailed evidence as to how Ibn al-Jawzī uses the scholarly tools available to him. It is only through careful analysis that one is led to the intended meaning of the text. If ta'wīl is not disciplined into submission to the findings of the experts, it can become an excuse for arbitrary, fanciful interpretations. ⁴⁹ This is not to say, of course, that the exegesis carried out in *KAS* is free of subjectivity. To demand that would be to expect the impossible.

The Hermeneutic Objectives of KAS

The hermeneutic objective of *KAS* is twofold: one constructive, the other critical. *KAS* is constructive in that it seeks to uncover the true meaning of scripture for the benefit of educated, honest seekers of the truth. It is critical (which here means polemical) in that it seeks to expose the indefensible anthropomorphizing arguments and conclusions promulgated in the writings of a number of fellow Ḥanbalīs. Indeed, the polemical purpose of the work is its principal purpose, as Ibn al-Jawzī makes clear early in chapter I.⁵⁰ He had become convinced that, on the question of the divine attributes, the Ḥanbalī school had lost its way, largely as a result of the influence of three prominent Ḥanbalīs whose writings defended anthropomorphic interpretations of the *akhbār aṣ-ṣifāt*.⁵¹

Ibn al-Jawzī's specific objectives in attacking some of the most influential names within the school were several: On one level, *KAS* is part of an attempt to reform the theological outlook of the school by convincing fellow Ḥanbalīs that their literalistic, anthropomorphic approach to scripture is indefensible, a negation of the legacy of Aḥmad and the school at its best.

⁴⁸ See, e.g., §§39, 46, etc.

⁴⁹ Ibn al-Jawzī repeatedly calls attention to the dangers that are implicit in $ta^2w\bar{l}$ (see, e.g., §167).

⁵⁰ See especially §§14, 30, 33 and 37.

 $^{^{51}}$ Above all, Ibn Ḥāmid (d. 403/1012), Abū Yaʿlā (d. 458/1065) and Ibn Zāghūnī (d. 527/1132).

Although the principal targets of his attacks (Ibn Ḥāmid, Abū Yaʻlā and Ibn Zāghūnī)⁵² were no longer living—Ibn Zāghūnī, the youngest of the three, had been dead for nearly a half century by the time *KAS* was written—their writings were still in circulation and still being read, still continuing to shape the outlook of younger Ḥanbalīs. By focusing the spotlight of critical reflection on their writings, by attacking the "materialistic" assumptions on which their exegesis was based, Ibn al-Jawzī was attempting to dampen their influence and point his contemporaries in a different direction—one more in line with the demands of both reason and scripture, but also one more in line with what Ibn al-Jawzī believed to be the founding principles of the school itself. At this level, *KAS* was part of an attempt to rehabilitate the school and so restore it to its founding principles by calling attention to the erroneous doctrines and methods that had found their way into the school in the course of the 11th century under the aegis of a misguided literalism.⁵³

Judging from references scattered throughout *KAS*, particularly at the end of chapter I and again at the end of chapter III, Ibn al-Jawzī was also concerned about his own reputation within the school and perhaps also within the larger Sunnī community.⁵⁴ He puts it quite pointedly at the end of the work where he says, in effect, that if he had not taken a stand and called for a return to the non-anthropomorphist principles on which the school was founded, his contemporaries would have every right to conclude that he himself condoned the doctrines of the anthropomorphizers. From comments such as these it is possible to conclude that Ibn al-Jawzī was seeking to establish his own reputation within the school (and perhaps beyond) as a defender of what he believed to be the doctrine taught by Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal himself—an enlightened traditionalism.⁵⁵

KAS may well have been t conceptions of God to con most forceful statement or school during the Middle writings produced by med however, that Ibn al-Jawzi non-anthropomorphic come in some respects. Ibn Aqi other theological orientario question of the divine amil an older contemporary of In in which he defended a m Abū'l-Husavn b. al-Munādi called for the use of table attributes; his writings cle Hanbalī school and that at a

There may well have been recorded in our sources. On anthropomorphist ideas had time of Ahmad. To be sure internecine debate within a some justification for Ibn a

⁵² For more on Ibn Ḥāmid, see notes to §14 of the Translation; for Abū Ya^clā, and Ibn Zāghūni, see notes to §30.

⁵³ More precisely, from the last third of the 10th century (Ibn Ḥāmid, the earliest Ḥanbalī to draw Ibn al-Jawzī's criticism, must have been born sometime in the 950s) to the early part of the 12th century (Ibn Zāghūnī, the last Ḥanbalī critiqued in *KAS*, died in 1132). The bulk of the "damage" to the school had been done during the 5th/11th century, according to Ibn al-Jawzī, largely as a result of Abū Yaʿlā's influence.

^{54 §§37} and 245.

⁵⁵ G. Makdisi uses the expression to characterize the outlook of Ibn 'Aqīl (Makdisi, *Ibn* 'Aqīl [1997], 16). I believe it applies equally to the position defended by Ibn al-Jawzī in *KAS* and elsewhere.

⁵⁰ Cf., Gimaret, Image, 53-56.

⁵⁵ So far as can be determine Interature produced during the Isla

⁵⁴ Tabaqāt al-Ḥanābila, IL. 25

works that reveals the influence (empty space) as being above (because it implies containment for Him who is not like [other creation is above the Almighty separate from them. If He were put distinct from them He would be so is widespread (sic.)—more so, in interpretation. The metaphorical impost reliable." Ibn al-Munadi wallah. For more on the term have

KAS may well have been the most thoroughgoing attack on anthropomorphic conceptions of God to come out of medieval Islam.⁵⁶ It was certainly the most forceful statement on the subject to be produced within the Hanbalī school during the Middle Ages.⁵⁷ While KAS may be unique among the writings produced by medieval Hanbalis, it does have to be remembered, however, that Ibn al-Jawzī was not alone among Hanbalīs in defending a non-anthropomorphic conception of God based on ta'wīl. Though less daring in some respects, Ibn 'Aqīl (d. 513/1119) had argued for an openness to other theological orientations and to the use of ta'wīl in dealing with the question of the divine attributes. Abū Muḥammad at-Tamīmī (d.488/1095), an older contemporary of Ibn 'Aqīl, produced a major Ḥanbalī creed ('aqīda) in which he defended a non-literalist approach to the akhbār as-sifāt.⁵⁸ Abū'l-Ḥusayn b. al-Munādī (d. 335/947), a second-generation Ḥanbalī, had called for the use of ta'wīl in dealing with texts bearing on the divine attributes; his writings clearly reflect the influence of kalām within the Hanbalī school and that at a surprisingly early date.⁵⁹

There may well have been other defenders of $ta^3w\bar{\imath}l$ within the school not recorded in our sources. One of the claims made repeatedly in *KAS* is that anthropomorphist ideas had been introduced into the school only after the time of Aḥmad. To be sure, this was an argument developed in the heat of internecine debate within the school; nonetheless there does appear to be some justification for Ibn al-Jawzī's contention. As we have seen, there is

⁵⁶ Cf., Gimaret, *Image*, 53-56.

⁵⁷ So far as can be determined based on what we currently know of the theological literature produced during the Islamic Middle Ages.

⁵⁸ Tabaqāt al-Hanābila, II, 263-290.

⁵⁹ See KAS §125 where Ibn al-Jawzī quotes a passage from one of Ibn al-Munādī's works that reveals the influence of $kal\bar{a}m$; it reads as follows: "Describing the $haw\bar{a}^2$ (empty space) as being above or below Him is abhorrent to the learned $(ahl\ al\ cilm)$ because it implies containment [within space] and posits something like a receptacle $(wi^c\bar{a}^2)$ for Him who is not like [other] beings $(ashy\bar{a}^2)$. We are in agreement that no part of creation is above the Almighty in any sense, and that He neither indwells things nor is separate from them. If He were present in things He would be part of them, and if He were distinct from them He would be separated from them. Agreement amongst us on this point is widespread (sic.)—more so, than on the matter of the 'objectionable', [i.e., the literal,] interpretation. The metaphorical interpretation $(ta^2w\bar{\imath}l)$ [of this tradition], however, is the most reliable." Ibn al-Munādī was a contemporary of Barbahārī and Aḥmad's son 'Abd Allāh. For more on the term $haw\bar{a}$, see notes to Translation §125.

evidence for the existence of a theologically informed non-anthropomorphist tradition within the school reaching as far back as the latter half of the 10th century. No less an authority than Ibn Taymīya believed that, in fact, it went all the way back to Aḥmad himself; according to him, Aḥmad was one of the few salaf to have recourse to the notion of $maj\bar{a}z$ in the interpretation of the Quran.⁶⁰

Ibn al-Jawzī, a Ḥanbalī Eclectic

If Ibn al-Jawzī's own theological stance was in many ways shaped by the non-anthropomorphist tradition within medieval Hanbalism, it is clear that he also drew on theological sources outside the school in the formulation of his position. Indeed, in theological matters Ibn al-Jawzī's position as articulated in KAS can best be described as eclectic. He was clearly influenced by Ash arism, particularly the later more sophisticated Ash arism of men like al-Bāqillānī (d. 403/1013), Ibn Fūrak (d. 406/1015), al-Baghdādī (d. 429/1038), and perhaps also al-Juwaynī (d. 478/1085/6). Despite his criticism of the Muctazila,61 they too played a role—and apparently a significant one—in shaping the views set forth in KAS. 62 Ash arite influence can most readily be seen in Ibn al-Jawzī's insistence on a distinction between the sifāt and the awṣāf,63 but also to some extent in his understanding of the mutually interdependent relationship between reason and revelation, and his stand on the question of the divine attributes. Mu^ctazilism's contribution to Ibn al-Jawzī's thought can be seen in his emphasis on the importance of reason vis-à-vis revelation, but Mu'tazilism's influence is most evident in his approach to exegetical questions—especially in his reliance on the linguistic sciences (grammar, philology, and lexicography),64 and on literary criticism in dealing with the anthropomorphic expressions found in the Quran and

the Sunna and, above all. Ash^carites did make use of a reticent in their attitude town of it. ⁶⁶ Further, Mu^ctazili infine adopted in dealing with a in his stand on the question. The logic of the position d possibility of a literal vision had argued. ⁶⁷

Despite the role played by thought, Ibn al-Jawzī was a to be the doctrine of Ahm school, and especially to Ahm work to the life and teach biographical sketch of the middle of the 12th centure.

 $^{^{60}}$ Kitāb al-Īmān (Beirut, 1392/1972), 83-85; see also W. Heinrichs, "On the Genesis of the μ aqīqa/Majāz Dichotomy," SI, 59 (1984), 115-117.

⁶¹ See his extended comments in KAS §§27-29.

⁶² The fact of Mu^ctazilī influence was recognized by his Ḥanbalī critics: among the sharpest of his critics were al-^cAlthī (*Dhayl*, II, 205-210), and Ibn Taymīya (Makdisi, *Ibn* ^cAqīl, 508). Although Ibn al-Jawzī is not mentioned by Ibn Qudāma in his *Dhamm at-Ta*²wīl, it seems likely Ibn Qudāma had him in mind when he blasted Ḥanbalīs who use *ta*²wīl.

⁶³ See especially KAS §33.

⁶⁴ Some of those on whom he relied—men like al-Farrā³—were Mu^ctazilī in orientation.

⁶⁵ G. Makdisi, Censure. XV-X introduced the distinction between of the text of the Quran (i.e., bern the course of the latter part of the Heinrichs, they did so specifical Quran (Heinrichs, "On the Gen 116-117, 132-139; see also his Theory in Islam: The Case of Mai Wissenschaften, 7 [1991-921, 253 out the distinction between manife they were apparently the first interpretation, which they indicated notes, those who practiced the sion" ("Contacts between School 91. Ash arites who later adopted so under the tutelage of the Moran be seen as the masters of this kin others (Ash arites, Hanbalis, etc.) in to Muctazili influence.

⁶⁶ According to W. M. Warr, ev of tawil (cf., Watt, "Some Musical")

⁶⁷ See §§202-203: cf., also §§7. ⁶Aqīl (cf., Makdisi, *Ibn Aqīl* [1997]

⁶⁸ Manāgib al-Imām Ahmad

10th ect, it s one ration

y the r that on of plated ed by n like dicism ficant most e sifāt of the

ion to ion to ice of in his uistic ticism n and

esis of

ong the isi, Ibn Ta²wīl,

ation.

the Sunna and, above all, in his consistent preference for $ta^2w\bar{\imath}l$. Some Ash arites did make use of $ta^2w\bar{\imath}l$, to be sure, but in general they were more reticent in their attitude toward $ta^2w\bar{\imath}l$ and some were quite deeply suspicious of it. Further, Mu aritimates can be seen in the specific interpretations he adopted in dealing with the anthropomorphisms of scripture and, finally, in his stand on the question of ru^2ya (the vision of God in the hereafter). The logic of the position developed in KAS seems clearly to rule out the possibility of a literal vision of God in the afterlife—exactly as the Mu argued. And argued.

Despite the role played by Ash'arism and Mu'tazilism in the shaping of his thought, Ibn al-Jawzī was a devoted Ḥanbalī, a defender of what he believed to be the doctrine of Aḥmad. Given the intensity of his loyalty to the school, and especially to Aḥmad, it is not surprising that he devoted a major work to the life and teaching of Aḥmad, the last part of which is a biographical sketch of the school's history from its inception up to the middle of the 12th century.⁶⁸ Beyond his attachment to the theological

⁶⁵ G. Makdisi, Censure, XV-XVI. It is significant that it was the Mu^ctazila who first introduced the distinction between the figurative and the literal (or proper, veridical) senses of the text of the Quran (i.e., between the $maj\bar{a}z$ and the $haq\bar{i}qa$ of the Quran), sometime in the course of the latter part of the 9th century and the first half of the 10th; according to W. Heinrichs, they did so specifically in order to deal with the anthropomorphisms of the Quran (Heinrichs, "On the Genesis of the Ḥaqīqa-Majāz Dichotomy," SI, 59 [1984], 116-117, 132-139; see also his "Contacts between Scriptural Hermeneutics and Literary Theory in Islam: The Case of Majāz," Zeitschrift für Geschichte der Arabisch-Islamischen Wissenschaften, 7 [1991-92], 253-284). Not only were the Mu^ctazilites the first to work out the distinction between $maj\bar{a}z$ as tropical language and $haq\bar{a}qa$ as a literal interpretation, they were apparently the first to introduce the idea of tropical language as a method of interpretation, which they indicated by the term $maj\bar{a}z$ and later the term $ta^2w\bar{\imath}l$. As Heinrichs notes, those who practiced this kind of interpretation were "mostly...of a Mu^ctazilite persuasion" ("Contacts between Scriptural Hermeneutics and Literary Theory in Islam...," 256, n. 9). Ash arites who later adopted this mode of exegesis, even though on a limited basis, did so under the tutelage of the Mu^ctazilites. There is no mystery why the Mu^ctazilites came to be seen as the masters of this kind of interpretation, and it is not surprising that when others (Ash'arites, Ḥanbalīs, etc.) adopted ta'wīl they were often accused of having caved in to Mu^ctazilī influence.

⁶⁶ According to W. M. Watt, even Ash arites like al-Juwaynī were cautious in their use of tα wīl (cf., Watt, "Some Muslim Discussions of Anthropomorphism," 8, 19-23).

⁶⁷ See §§202-203; cf., also §§75-76. This seems in line with the position taken by Ibn $^{\varsigma}$ Aqīl (cf., Makdisi, *Ibn ^{\varsigma}Aqīl* [1997], 147).

⁶⁸ Manāqib al-Imām Aḥmad, ed. Muḥammad Amīn al-Khānjī (Cairo 1349/1930). The

legacy of early Ḥanbalism, as he understood that legacy, Ibn al-Jawzī was a thoroughgoing Ḥanbalī both in his juridical views and in his political philosophy. He was unwavering in his support of the 'Abbāsid caliphate to the very end of his life. Ḥanbalī activism, above all its commitment to the reform and renewal of the community, left a deep mark on both his psyche and practical agenda. It seems clear, judging from the last part of chapter I and the final paragraph of chapter III, that the writing of *KAS* was driven, in large measure, by a strong reformist agenda. As Ibn al-Jawzī himself points out both in *KAS* and elsewhere, he could have given up on the Ḥanbalī school of his day as a lost cause, but that would have meant turning his back on the teaching of Aḥmad and handing the school over to its most reactionary elements without a struggle—something he simply could not bring himself to do.⁶⁹ If the writing of *KAS* was an act of loyalty to Aḥmad, it was also part of an attempt to save the school of his day by defending what he believed to have been its founding principles.

In his characterization of Ibn 'Aqīl, George Makdisi refers to him as "a rare combination of Mu'tazilī rationalism and Shāfi'ī traditionalism." This might also be applied to the position embraced by Ibn al-Jawzī. I would suggest, however, that in the case of Ibn al-Jawzī, rationalism is taken further; he is, in short, less equivocal in his defense of the rationalist stance. It is thanks to the work of reason that revelation can assert its authority. He does nonetheless concede that rationalism by itself will not do. It requires to be informed and corrected by a transcendent source, one not conditioned by temporality.

THE MANU

The manuscript used for a Akhbār aṣ-Ṣifāt is preserved Süleymaniye Library. Istanl copy of the work. Despite locate other copies of the work it is entirely possible that of We do know that some of I titles. All efforts to identify proven inconclusive.

The name of the copyist of the colophon does indicate don the 17th of Rajab 890 3 colophon, the copyist states manuscript descended from Alī b. Jamāl ad-Dīn b. Al Damascus. I have not so far biographical sources availad was a student (talmīdh) of a also from Damascus. The original was made from a call Although it cannot be prove copies referred to in the colo we may conclude that Krābi interest among the scholars.

last biographical entry in the work is devoted to $Ab\bar{u}^2l$ - $^cAl\bar{a}^2$ al-Ḥasan b. Aḥmad b. al-Ḥasan al- $^cAtt\bar{a}r$, who died in 569/1173-74 (p. 532). Since the appearance of this edition in 1930, the work has been edited and published a number of times.

 $^{^{69}}$ See §§37 and 245; also Sibț b. al-Jawzī, *Mir³āt az-Zamān*, 326 (cf., *Muntaṣam*, X, 253).

⁷⁰ Makdisi, *Ibn 'Aqīl* (1997), 16.

¹ Neither the title of the work a

² One example of this turns of which was widely known under al-Bāz al-Ashhab (cf., GAL. See bearing these two titles shows the

³ Too little of his name is given 1

CHAPTER FOUR

THE MANUSCRIPT: A BRIEF DESCRIPTION

The manuscript used for the preparation of the critical edition of *Kitāb Akhbār aṣ-Ṣifāt* is preserved in the Ṣehid Ali Paṣa collection (# 1561) of the Süleymaniye Library, Istanbul. It is, so far as is known, the only surviving copy of the work. Despite repeated efforts, over a number of years, to locate other copies of the work, these efforts have not so far been successful. It is entirely possible that our work originally circulated under another title. We do know that some of Ibn al-Jawzī's works did circulate under several titles. All efforts to identify alternate titles of *Kitāb Akhbār aṣ-Ṣifāt* have proven inconclusive.

The name of the copyist of the Istanbul manuscript is not given, though the colophon does indicate that the copying of the manuscript was completed on the 17th of Rajab 890 (30 July 1485), presumably in Damascus. In the colophon, the copyist states that the copy (nuskha) from which he made our manuscript descended from one produced earlier by a certain Nūr ad-Dīn ʿAlī b. Jamāl ad-Dīn b. ʿAbd Allāh, who is identified as a Shāfiʿite from Damascus. I have not so far been able to identify this Nūr ad-Dīn from the biographical sources available to me, but the colophon does state that he was a student (talmīdh) of a certain Shams ad-Dīn, a Shāfiʿite muḥaddith also from Damascus.³ The copyist notes finally in the colophon that his original was made from a copy of the manuscript produced by Nūr ad-Dīn. Although it cannot be proven conclusively, it seems likely that the various copies referred to in the colophon were all made in Damascus. If this is true we may conclude that Kitāb Akhbār aṣ-Ṣifāt had attracted a fair amount of interest among the scholars of Damascus, particularly among Shāficites.

¹ Neither the title of the work nor the Istanbul manuscript is listed in Brockelmann.

² One example of this turns out in fact to be an abridgment of *Kitāb Akhbār aṣ-Ṣifāt*, which was widely known under two separate titles: *Daf^c ash-Shubhat at-Tashbīh* and *al-Bāz al-Ashhab* (cf., *GAL*, Suppl. I, 918, no. 29). A comparison of the manuscripts bearing these two titles shows them to be identical. The only difference is in the titles.

³ Too little of his name is given to make an identification possible.

[CHAPTER ONE]

[THE PLACE OF REASON IN MATTERS OF FAITH AND THE PROBLEM OF ANTHROPOMORPHISM]¹

[fol.1b] In the name of God the Merciful and Compassionate One.

1 The *shaykh*, *imām*, Jamāl ad-Dīn Abū'l-Faraj 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. 'Alī b. Muḥammad b. al-Jawzī, may God have mercy on him, said: Praise be unto God for the success made possible through the soundest of approaches

¹ The term anthropomorphism is used here and throughout this work as a rough equivalent for the Arabic terms tajsīm and tashbīh, two terms that occur frequently in KAS. For the most part, tajsīm and tashbīh are used as synonyms or near synonyms and are, therefore, virtually interchangeable. For Ibn al-Jawzī, they refer to any attempt to compare God to corporeal beings and categories, and they lead inevitably to a God conceived as a corporeal being. Such a process, according to Ibn al-Jawzī, necessarily takes sense perception as its point of departure and its frame of reference. When the two terms are differentiated, tashbīh comes to denote the act of comparison in and of itself, i.e., the act of comparing God to what is other than God, whereas tasjīm focuses attention on the object of the comparison, viz., God and the world of corporeal existents. In this somewhat more refined usage, the terms refer to two quite different but necessarily complementary things, viz., the act of comparison and its object.—It is important to distinguish Ibn al-Jawzī's conception of anthropomorphism from contemporary Western usage. In the latter, the term generally refers to attempts to conceive God in human terms, i.e., as a being possessing human attributes, irrespective of whether these attributes are emotional, rational or corporeal, or a combination of these. In KAS, by contrast, the notion of anthropomorphism is used only to refer to attempts to conceive God in corporeal terms. Thus, while Ibn al-Jawzī, who is adamant in his rejection of corporealist conceptions of God, vigorously denies that God has a body with limbs and organs, he has no trouble speaking of God as knowing, willing, acting, speaking, hearing, seeing, etc. (cf., §§71, 85, etc.). Again, while Ibn al-Jawzī repeatedly rejects the notion that God has eyes, he has no difficulty with the notion that God sees (cf. §160, e.g.). In fairness to Ibn al-Jawzī, however, it must be noted that when he speaks of God as seeing, knowing, speaking, etc., he may well be using these expressions metaphorically, i.e., as majāzāt or figures of speech. Unfortunately, this is an issue that is simply not addressed in KAS. Finally, it should be noted that the critique of anthropomorphism elaborated in KAS assumes an atomistic ontology—one consisting of bodies (ajsām), atoms ($jaw\bar{a}hir$) and accidents ($a^cr\bar{a}d$). Although there was an occasional exception, atomism was almost universally assumed in medieval kalam (rational theology), at least until the late 11th and early 12th centuries. The essential elements of this ontology and their relationship to each other are elaborated in some detail in early parts of KAS.

(minhaj) and the straightest of paths (tarīq),² who has blessed us with reason (^caql), which steadfastly "speaks" the truth,³ and with a knowledge of revelation (ma^crifat an-naql).⁴ And so our claim to noble descent (nasab), thank God, is rooted in [our] understanding of [revelation],⁵ and we thus have joined the two of them together.⁶ He has led us out of the narrow pass into the wide open expanses; we give praise that His branch (far^cuhu) endures and that His root (aṣluhu) is possessed of rich foliage. We invoke God's blessing on our lord, Muḥammad, the Prophet, giver of sincere counsel (shafīq), on his Family, and on those who were his Companions and their Successors in establishing the truth. May God's blessing also secure acceptance for us on the day of gathering and scattering.⁷

2 It is the first and principal duty of the believer to acquire a knowledge of God $(ma^c rifat \ All \bar{a}h)$, for that is obtained through reason $(^c aql)$ and

made obligatory by Script follows that rational reflection (istidlāl)⁹ are also obligatory verses of Scripture: Reflearth."¹⁰ "Have they not rearth, and all that God has (unzurū)!"¹² And finally, observe (tubsirūna)?"¹³

3 Those who reflect on sadvantage, for all religious pataken in their entirety, fall

² A reference to the guidance provided through the Quran and the Sunna of the Prophet.

 $^{^3}$ Cf., $\S\S20$ and 59 (among others) where Ibn al-Jawzī speaks of the truth-telling powers of reason.

⁴ The term *naql* includes both the Quran and the Sunna, the two principal forms of revelation understood in the broadest sense. Both belong to the category of transmitted reports, hence the term *naql* (transmission).

⁵ That is, *naql*. True nobility is based on the knowledge of revelation (*naql*), not on birth or ethnicity. The subtext of this part of the *khuṭba* is the contrast between the religious attitude of Islam and traditional Arab notions of racial superiority. The only basis for claims to superiority is a knowledge of revelation, a knowledge ultimately made possible by the God-given faculty of reason. For Ibn al-Jawzī, the acquisition of knowledge by means of the rational faculties presupposes disciplined and determined effort. Cf., Ibn al-Jawzī, *Manāqib al-Imām Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal*, 502, 3-6, where the relationship of *ma^crifa* (knowledge of sacred texts) and *nasab* is discussed; here too (indeed, throughout *KAS*) he insists on (or assumes) the intrinsic superiority of the former over the latter.

⁶ That is, reason ('aql) and revelation (naql) Cf., Frank, al-Ghazālī and the Ash'arite School, 7).

⁷ The imagery of "gathering and scattering" comes from the Quran and is a reference to the day of resurrection and judgment (see S. 6: 22, 124; 10: 28, 45; 15: 25; 17: 97; 20: 124; 25: 17; 59: 2, etc.).

⁸ For Ibn al-Jawzī it is a question here of a quite specific kind of knowledge, viz., the knowledge that God exists, not a knowledge of God's nature or essence (Makdisi, $Ibn \, ^cAq\bar{\imath}l \, [1997]$, 86-87). This latter kind of knowledge is, by definition, beyond the reach of reason and human understanding. Following common practice in medieval $kal\bar{a}m$, the terms ma^crifa and cilm are used virtually interchangeably by Ibn al-Jawzī in KAS; thus he sometimes speaks of the $ma^crifat \, All\bar{a}h \, (e.g., \, \S\S 2 \, and \, 36)$ and sometimes of the $^cilm \, All\bar{a}h \, (e.g., \, \S\S 2 \, and \, 36)$

^{(§§4} and 104). The identity of expressions as well. Thus in so knowledge or understanding of film an-naql (§106). On the "Knowledge and Taqlid. The FJAOS. 109 (1989), 37-62. See for kalām in general the two tens in they are not interchangeable in esimilar use of these two tens in Created Speech, 47-56. On the literature, see the very useful and on film, El², III, 1133-1134. See Gardet.

For Ibn al-Jawzi isrid is a indication) and ends with the sign points). Although isrid is a between the sign (dali) and the nature as the madlūl; hence its starting point, stands in commits deduced from the universal F 238 (Ķiyās): and J. van Ess. T. Classical Islamic Culture, 21-50.

S. 10:101.

¹¹ S. 7:185.

¹² S. 16: 36: also 27: 69; 29: 20

S. 51-21

The expression abla addition additional actions as their object. cf.

made obligatory by Scripture (naql). If [such knowledge] is obligatory, it follows that rational reflection (nazar) and the use of inferential reason $(istidlal)^9$ are also obligatory, as God himself has commanded in the following verses of Scripture: "Reflect $(unzur\bar{u})$ on what is in the heaven and the earth." "Have they not reflected on the kingdom of the heavens and the earth, and all that God has created?" "Travel about on the earth and reflect $(unzur\bar{u})!$ " And finally, "In your very selves [there are signs]; do you not observe $(tubsir\bar{u}na)!$ " "13

3 Those who reflect on such things with the aid of reason have a decisive advantage, for all religious precepts pertaining to human acts $(ahk\bar{a}m\ ad-d\bar{\imath}n)$, ¹⁴ taken in their entirety, fall into three categories: firstly, those which may be

(§§4 and 104). The identity or near identity of $ma^c rifa$ and 'ilm may be observed in other expressions as well. Thus in some contexts he uses the expression $ma^c rifat$ an-naql, the knowledge or understanding of scripture (§1), whereas elsewhere he uses the expression 'ilm an-naql (§106). On the use of the two terms in Ash'arite $kal\bar{a}m$, see R. Frank, "Knowledge and $Taql\bar{\iota}d$: The Foundations of Religious Belief in Classical Ash'arism," JAOS, 109 (1989), 37-62. See esp. p. 47, n. 24 where Frank notes that for al-Ash'arī and for $kal\bar{a}m$ in general the two terms "are understood as essentially synonymous..., even if they are not interchangeable in every context." Cf., also his comments on p. 54, n. 38. For a similar use of these two terms by the Mu'tazilī theologian 'Abd al-Jabbār, see Peters, God's Created Speech, 47-56. On the term $ma^c rifa$ and its use in various genres of Arabic literature, see the very useful article by R. Arnaldez in EI^2 , VI, 568-571. See also the article on 'ilm, EI^2 , III, 1133-1134, as well as the art. 'ilm al- $kal\bar{a}m$, EI^2 , III, 1141-1150 by L. Gardet.

⁹ For Ibn al-Jawzī *istidlāl* is a logical movement that begins with the *dalīl* (the sign or indication) and ends with the *madlūl* or *madlūl* '*alayhi* (the conclusion or that to which the sign points). Although *istidlāl* or inferential reason assumes the existence of a connection between the sign (*dalīl*) and the conclusion (*madlūl*), the *dalīl* need not be of the same nature as the *madlūl*; hence, it is possible for Ibn al-Jawzī to move from the visible, phenomenal world to the invisible without difficulty. *Istidlāl*, which takes the particular as its starting point, stands in contrast to the strict deductive syllogism in which the particular is deduced from the universal. For more on *istidlāl*, see EI^2 , II, 101-102 (Dalīl); EI^2 , V, 238 (Kiyās); and J. van Ess, "The Logical Structure of Islamic Theology" in *Logic in Classical Islamic Culture*, 21-50.

¹⁰ S. 10:101.

¹¹ S. 7:185.

¹² S. 16: 36; also 27: 69; 29: 20; and 30: 43.

¹³ S 51.21

¹⁴ The expression $ahk\bar{a}m$ ad- $d\bar{i}n$ used here refers to those values or judgments that have human actions as their object. (cf., Makdisi, Ibn $^cAq\bar{i}l$ [1997], 86).

known only through reason ('aql) to the exclusion of revelation (sam'); secondly, those which may not be known by reason, indeed, cannot be known except through revelation; and, thirdly, those things that may be known through both [reason and revelation].¹⁵

4 The establishment of the contingency of the world, the existence of its Creator, His absolute uniqueness (waḥdānīya), those attributes that are necessary to Him (sifāt wājiba), His revelation (risāla) and its possibility (tajwīz ʿalayhi), 16 and all such related matters, including God's unity (tawḥūd) and prophecy (nubuwwa), [fol.2a] are possible only through the exercise of reason (ʿaql). The evidence (dalīl) for this is that the term revelation (samʿ) refers only to (1) the Word of God, (2) to what was transmitted on the authority of His Messenger who [in turn] received it from Him, and (3) to the consensus of those whom His Messenger declared to be protected against error. But it will never be possible to determine with certainty that the words [attributed to God] are the actual words of God and of His Prophet unless one knows that God exists, just as it is impossible to determine whether the words attributed to Zayd are indeed the words of Zayd unless one knows that Zayd exists. 17 It is essential, therefore, that the knowledge

of God's [existence] (film) category of what can be estated of God, employed when he said: "I do not low reason] that what participan must necessarily be created be attributes of the Creator revelation (same) alone, that no part [as a source], are mactions of a responsible a prohibited. On the category and revelation are such that sinner and the use of analogy.

¹⁵ Cf., Ibn 'Aqīl, *al-Wāḍiḥ fī Uṣūl al-Fiqh* (Beirut/Stuttgart, 1996), 32, 7-9; also Abū Ya'lā, *al-Mu'tamad fī Uṣūl ad-Dīn*, ed. W. Haddad (Beirut, 1974), 24-25, where a similar three-fold distinction among the *aḥkām ad-dīn* is made.

¹⁶ As opposed to its being *mustaḥīl* (impossible).

¹⁷ For Ibn al-Jawzī (following Ibn 'Aqīl), the credibility and authority of revelation rest on a prior, autonomous operation of reason through which the individual comes to know that God exists, the essential nature of His being (His Otherness and Oneness), the character of His attributes, the contingent nature of His creation etc. (cf., §31). The establishment of these foundational principles is the work of uṣūl ad-dīn (as opposed to uṣūl al-fiqh). It is only on the basis of this kind of knowledge that the claims of revelation can be judged and its authenticity established. Ibn al-Jawzī's statements here indicate quite clearly that there is for him a form of obligation that is independent of and prior to the obligations imposed by scripture—viz., to follow reason's lead in seeking answers to the ultimate questions. He makes it quite clear in what follows, however, that the specific duties set forth in scripture can be known only through revelation. Thus, once reason has done its work in establishing the foundational principles, reason defers to revelation. It is here that uṣūl al-fiqh steps forward and takes up its work—viz., the task of working out the implications of revelation for human conduct. Ibn al-Jawzī was not the only Ḥanbalī to differentiate the various categories of aḥkām ad-dīn. Similar distinctions are to be found in Ibn Aqīl, Ibn Taymīya and Ibn Qayyim al-Jawzīya. For the approach of these three Ḥanbalī thinkers to the differentiation of these categories, see George Makdisi, "Ethics in Islamic Traditionalist Doctrine," Ethics in Islam, edited by R. G. Hovannisian (1985, Malibu, California), 47-63,

esp. 59ff. (cf., also his Iba Acid)

On this expression and its pa

S. 6: 76.

Cf., Ibn Aqīl, Waste, 33. abridged form. Following the Su view generally held by the Maria reality and can be known through its classic formulation in the will position, see esp. G. Hourani, Isl 1971], as well as the shorter ac Islamic Philosophy and the Class See M. Fakhry. Ethical Theori Mustazilī ethics within the large al-Jawzī the determination of on divine command and can be I within the general voluntarist in others) and embraced by most Hanbali perspectives on this que Doctrine." Ethics in Islam, edited and D. Gimaret, "Théories de l'act An interesting comparison of the Hourani's "Two Theories of Value

Among the things that may be kn 'Aqtil. is "the possibility of seeing (1997), 88). Ibn al-Jawai's delenambivalence on his part toward the

of God's [existence] $({}^c ilm\ bi-All\bar{a}h)^{18}$ and of His Messenger belong to the category of what can be established through reason [alone]. Abraham, the Friend of God, employed reason to arrive at certain logical conclusions when he said: "I do not love things that vanish." He understood [through reason] that what participates in change (taghayyur) and movement $(intiq\bar{a}l)$ must necessarily be created, and that change and movement cannot, therefore, be attributes of the Creator. Among the things that may be known through revelation (sam^c) alone, that is, [a form of knowing] in which reason plays no part [as a source], are matters such as the determination of whether the actions of a responsible adult (mukallaf) are good or bad, allowed or prohibited. In the category of what may be known through both [reason and revelation] are such things as the possibility of forgiveness for the sinner and the use of analogy $(qiy\bar{q}s)$ in arriving at legal judgments $(ahk\bar{q}m)$.

esp. 59ff. (cf., also his Ibn 'Aqīl (1997), 124-126).

¹⁸ On this expression and its parallel, *ma^crifat Allāh*, see notes to §2.

¹⁹ S. 6: 76.

²⁰ Cf., Ibn 'Aqīl, Wāḍiḥ, 33, for the longer text which Ibn al-Jawzī "cites" here in an abridged form. Following the Sunnī traditionalist position, Ibn al-Jawzī diverges from the view generally held by the Mu^ctazila that moral qualities have an independent ontological reality and can be known through reason independently of revelation—a view that received its classic formulation in the writings of 'Abd al-Jabbar' (for a systematic account of this position, see esp. G. Hourani, Islamic Rationalism: The Ethics of Abd al-Jabbār [Oxford, 1971], as well as the shorter account in his "The Rationalist Ethics of 'Abd al-Jabbār," Islamic Philosophy and the Classical Tradition [Columbia, South Carolina, 1972], 105ff. See M. Fakhry, Ethical Theories in Islam [Leiden, 1991], 31-45, for a discussion of Mu^ctazilī ethics within the larger context of medieval Islamic ethical theory). For Ibn al-Jawzī the determination of what is good and bad in the sphere of human action is based on divine command and can be known only through revelation. Here Ibn al-Jawzī stands within the general voluntarist tradition of medieval Islam as articulated by Shāfi'i (and others) and embraced by most Ḥanbalīs and Ash'arīs. For an excellent discussion of Hanbalī perspectives on this question, see G. Makdisi, "Ethics in Islamic Traditionalist Doctrine," Ethics in Islam, edited by R. G. Hovannisian (1985, Malibu, California), 47-63; and D. Gimaret, "Théories de l'act humain dans l'école hanbalite," BEO, 29 (1977), 157-178. An interesting comparison of the voluntarist and rationalist positions is to be found in G. Hourani's "Two Theories of Value in Medieval Islam," Muslim World, 50 (1959), 269-278.

²¹ Cf., G. Makdisi, "Ethics in Islamic Traditionalist Doctrine," *Ethics in Islam*, 63. Among the things that may be known through both revelation and reason, according to Ibn 'Aqīl, is "the possibility of seeing God with our eyes" (*Wāḍiḥ*, 33; cf., Makdisi, *Ibn 'Aqīl* (1997), 88). Ibn al-Jawzī's deletion of this reference is interesting and may reflect some ambivalence on his part toward the idea.

Establishing the Creator's Existence by Reason Contrary to the Claims of the Materialists

5 We maintain that creation must have a Creator, and our proof $(dal\bar{\imath}l)$ is that everything which originates in time $(h\bar{a}dith)$ must have a cause for its origination $(hud\bar{u}th)$.²² Thus, since the world $(\bar{a}lam)$ originated in time it follows that it must have a cause.²³ The term world [taken in its broadest sense] refers to everything in existence other than God.²⁴ An existent $(mawj\bar{u}d)$ which occupies space (mutahayyiz) and is not joined to anything other than itself is called an atom (jawhar).²⁵ If it is joined to something other than

itself it is a body itself. "entity"] that can only s includes such things as col What consists of such terms originated in time (hadre) follows from the fact that coming into being, hence i its having come into being possible (mumkin) is not a never admit of existence. the possible admits of bo essential then that there be a [so to speak] in favor of [e will (irāda) of one who cre by reason and thus beyon begins as a clot, then become blood, for we know that from one stage to the next developed [post-natal] star to hear and see. If it is unal less able to do so in a state there must be an agent for Anyone who observes the cessation as the grain rip

²² In general, for Ibn al-Jawzī, the active participle, $h\bar{a}dith$, refers to the act or state of coming into existence at some point in time, whereas the verbal noun $hud\bar{u}th$ refers to the state or condition of temporal existence that follows from $h\bar{a}dith$. For Ibn al-Jawzī, as for the whole of medieval $kal\bar{a}m$, $h\bar{a}dith$ includes everything that does not belong to the category of the eternal $(qad\bar{a}m)$. These two terms include the whole of reality; everything is either temporal or eternal; there is no third or intermediate category, and there is no link or $w\bar{a}sita$ between the two.

²³ The basis for asserting the world's contingency is provided in what follows.

²⁴ Cf. Baghdādī, *Uṣūl ad-Dīn*, 33, where "world" is defined in terms that are virtually identical to those employed here by Ibn al-Jawzī.

²⁵ For Ibn al-Jawzī, the "atom" is an indivisible particle that forms the basis of all finite, corporeal existence. The contingency of atoms is shown by the fact that they are essentially identical to each other (tamāthul) and may be joined (tarkīb or ta'līf) to each other so as to form composite entities or bodies (ajsām). In addition, they occupy space (taḥayyuz) and admit of receiving accidents (a^crād). Although the term jawhar (pl. jawāhir) has sometimes been rendered "substance" (cf., Peters, God's Created Speech [Leiden, 1976], 119-123; and Gimaret, La doctrine d'al-Ash'arī [Paris, 1990], 43-72), R. M. Frank has argued persuasively against such a translation on the grounds that it implies acceptance of an essentially Aristotelian conceptual framework and leads to a distortion when imposed on the thought of medieval Muslim theologians. For a fuller account of this argument, see R. Frank, "Bodies and Atoms: The Ash arite Analysis," Islamic Theology and Philosophy (M. E. Marmura, ed.), 19, n. 1; esp. p. 44, n. 19; as well as his The Metaphysics of Created Beings, 39, n. 5 (cf. El², II, 493-494 [Djawhar]). Ibn al-Jawzī was not the first Ḥanbalī to use the technical theological terminology developed by the early Mu^ctazilī thinkers and later taken over by the Ash'arīs. The Mu'tamad fī Uṣūl ad-Dīn of Abū Ya'lā (d. 458/1066), written at least a century before our work, is replete with the technical language of kalām (see p. 35ff. for a discussion of atoms, bodies and accidents). Other Ḥanbalīs, also, are mentioned in KAS as being conversant with kalām; among them Ibn Ḥāmid (d. 403/1012), Ibn 'Aqīl (d. 511/1119) and Ibn Zāghūnī (d. 527/1132). When the history of Ḥanbalī kalām is finally written the list will most certainly include other names from the 5th and 6th centuries A.H. (for some interesting observations on the question of kalām within medieval

Hambalism, see Gimaret, "The (1977), 157-178).

Accidents require a substructure exist independently of a maccidents, see §§9, 22, 24, 33, 5.

An assumption that under Gimaret. "Théories de l'acte hum

⁻ Mad. 171ff.

Sometimes referred to as though the Murtazila found it un

See his Kitah al-Magami reasoning. This was of course of see the Lama' of al-Ashfari (edargument.

itself it is a body (jism). An accident (carad), on the other hand, is [an "entity"] that can only subsist through something other than itself and includes such things as color (lawn), movement (haraka) and rest (sukūn).26 What consists of such temporally originated entities (hawādith) is necessarily originated in time (hādith). The proof that its origination in time is caused follows from the fact that its non-existence $(ma^c d\bar{u}m)$ is anterior to its coming into being, hence it is not possible that its existence should precede its having come into being. Whether its existence is impossible (muhāl) or possible (mumkin) is not a matter open to debate, for the impossible can never admit of existence. Thus it follows that its existence is possible, for the possible admits of both existence [fol.2b] and non-existence.²⁷ It is essential then that there be an agent capable of "tipping the scales" (murajjih)²⁸ [so to speak] in favor of [existence] over non-existence, that agent being the will ($ir\bar{a}da$) of one who creates ($m\bar{u}jid$). This conclusion, which is required by reason and thus beyond refutation, explains why it is that a person begins as a clot, then becomes an embryo and finally a fetus of flesh and blood, for we know that [the embryonic life-form] is not able to move from one stage to the next by itself, ²⁹ since it is plain that even in its fully developed [post-natal] state it is not capable of creating by itself the power to hear and see. If it is unable to do this in a fully developed state, it is even less able to do so in a state of incomplete development. This indicates that there must be an agent $(f\bar{a}^c il)$ who causes the movement and who directs it.³⁰ Anyone who observes the coming of the rain at the time of planting and its cessation as the grain ripens, followed by the arrival of the autumn winds

Hanbalism, see Gimaret, "Théories de l'acte humain dans l'école hanbalite," *BEO*, 29 [1977], 157-178).

²⁶ Accidents require a substrate (*maḥall*) in which to exist in contrast to atoms which can exist independently of a *maḥall* (cf., al-Baghdādī, *Uṣūl ad-Dīn*, 33). For more on accidents, see §§9, 22, 24, 33, 52-53, 89, etc.

²⁷ An assumption that underlies most medieval Mu^ctazilite and Ash^carite *kalām* (cf., Gimaret, "Théories de l'acte humain dans l'école ḥanbalite," *BEO*, 29 [1977], 171).

²⁸ *Ibid*, 171ff.

²⁹ Sometimes referred to as the argument from change; frequently used by Ash^carites, though the Mu^ctazila found it unconvincing (cf., Gimaret, *La Doctrine*, 231-234).

³⁰ See his $Kit\bar{a}b$ al- $Maq\bar{a}m\bar{a}t$ (fol. 5b) where he develops much the same line of reasoning. This was of course one of the standard arguments used by the $mutakallim\bar{u}n$; see the $Luma^c$ of al-Ash^carī (ed. McCarthey, 1953), §§3-4, for a typical statement of the argument.

and the sun's drawing near so as to dry the grain and prepare it for storage—and anyone who observes how teeth are made hard for cutting and the molars wide for grinding and the tongue nimble for turning what is to be chewed, as the saliva gushes forth to moisten the food so that it can be swallowed³¹—knows that there exists a wise and sovereign Agent who is in control. It would take too long to cite all of the evidence [in support of this proposition]. [Suffice it to say that] in every existent (*kull shay*²) there are signs indicating that He is One.

6 The Creator of the universe must be an existent $(mawj\bar{u}d)$, 32 for existence and non-existence are polar opposites $(mutaq\bar{a}bil\bar{a}n)$ between which there is no intermediate mode of being $(w\bar{a}sita)$. Since it has been established that things must have a cause $(f\bar{a}^cil)$, 34 it is necessary that it be both existent $(mawj\bar{u}d)$ and eternal $(qad\bar{u}m)$, for a [first] cause must be antecedent to

what is caused, necessary had a beginning in time if form a regressus ad infimonon-being may not be predicted and its existence were possible. Home whose existence is mon-existence.

7 God is not a body (jii atoms (jawhar) joined to subject, like all bodies, to rest and those qualities

³¹ See *Talbīs*, 42; and *Ṣayd al-Khāṭir*, 415, for much the same argument.

³² He is one of whom existence can be predicated.

³³ Although both Mu^ctazilites and Ash^carites subscribed to the view that there is no intermediate state between existence and non-existence, the two schools understood the relationship between the two in quite different terms (cf. R. M. Frank, "al-Macdūm wal-Mawjūd," MIDEO, 14 [1980], 198). Ash arites posited a radical distinction between existence and non-existence, and regarded non-existence ('adam) as pure nothingness—a "state" of which nothing can be predicated and which cannot be an object of knowledge. Mu^ctazilites held a quite different view of the matter. As the repository of all possibles (i.e., all that is potentially existent), non-existence has a certain reality or positive character ($thub\bar{u}t$), since each possible possesses its own special nature (sifat adh-dhāt) consisting of those qualities it will exhibit if and when it comes into being; i.e., if and when God as efficient cause chooses, in His freedom, to grant it existence. Creation in this view consists of clothing non-existent possibles with existence as an additional qualification. Since the essential nature of each possible "exists" prior to creation it is independent of God. For the Ash arites, this was tantamount to acknowledging the existence of eternal entities independent of God's will and power—hence their insistence on the absolute nothingness of non-existence. Ibn al-Jawzī takes the side of the Ash arites on the question of adam and mawjūd in the present work (cf., Talbīs, 83, 3-8). For more on the debate between Ash'arites and Mu'tazilites, see Gimaret, La doctrine, 29-31; Wensinck, Muslim Creed, 166-167; and esp. Frank, MIDEO, 14 (1980), 185ff. On the debate within the Mu^ctazilī school over the question of the macdūm, see Frank, "Remarks on the Early Development of the Kalām," Atti del terzo congresso di studi arabi e islamici (Naples 1967), 323-329; also, Van den Bergh, Tahāfut, II, 62, n. 85.2. On how this debate played itself out in the field of grammatical theory, see Versteegh, Greek Elements in Arabic Linguistic Thinking (Leiden 1977), 135f. and nn. 35 and 36.

³⁴ An ultimate or first cause.

Cf., Abū Yaʻlā, Mu'tama

Cf., §§29 (Hishām b. al-Hi

The minimum number of at length by medieval Master debated first in Mustaziline ci Mustazilite speculation for seve of the question was not confine arracted the attention of leading what is even more interesting century, at least, it was also the be seen, e.g., from the Maraum by Ibn al-Jawzī, according to each other in order to be a box central element in its definition 21-Janzi aligns himself with the the majority of Ashfarites. The especially from the time of Mus are three dimensional entiries (the of eight atoms (Magallar, 300-3 Peters, God's Created Speech, 13 position championed by most 4 Me tazilite circles. Abu Jaffar al Burhdad and a student of Julia 126-127: and Gimaret, La docu question among Hanbali munala thes not declare himself on the able to determine. Did Ibn al-Ji position, or were there earlier H he is here following the position

what is caused, necessary to its existence and without beginning, for if it had a beginning in time it would itself require a cause (muḥdith) and thus form a regressus ad infinitum (tasalsul). Since [God] is eternally existent, non-being may not be predicated of Him, for He whose eternal pre-existence (qidam) is established cannot be conceived as non-existent. If His non-existence were possible, He would be dependent on a cause. However, He is one whose existence is uncaused, hence there can be no cause for His non-existence.

7 God is not a body (*jism*),³⁶ for bodies consist of [a minimum of] two atoms (*jawhar*) joined to each other.³⁷ If He were a body, He would be subject, like all bodies, to such temporally produced states as movement and rest and those qualities that are inseparable [fol.3a] from the state of

³⁵ Cf., Abū Yaʻlā, Muʻtamad, 37-38.

³⁶ Cf., §§29 (Hishām b. al-Hakam), 34 and 237.

³⁷ The minimum number of atoms required to constitute a body was a question debated at length by medieval Muslim theologians. Although the problem appears to have been debated first in Mu^ctazilite circles (in Basra), and though it remained at the center of Mu^ctazilite speculation for several centuries, both in Basra and later in Baghdad, discussion of the question was not confined to the Mu^ctazilite school. From the 10th century on it also attracted the attention of leading Ash'arite theologians (including al-Ash'arī himself), and, what is even more interesting within the context of the present study, by the mid-11th century, at least, it was also the focus of debate within Hanbalī circles in Baghdad, as can be seen, e.g., from the Mu'tamad of Abū Ya'lā (see espec. 35-39). The view, championed by Ibn al-Jawzī, according to which a body requires a minimum of two atoms joined to each other in order to be a body, made the idea of "union" (ta'līf, i'tilāf, or ijtimā') the central element in its definition of bodies. It is interesting that, in adopting this view, Ibn al-Jawzī aligns himself with the position taken by al-Ash'arī and subsequently defended by the majority of Ash'arites. The definition of bodies adopted by the majority of Mu'tazilites, especially from the time of Mu^cammar (d. 215/830), emphasized two elements: that bodies are three dimensional entities (they are "long, deep, and wide") and they require a minimum of eight atoms (Maqālāt, 302-303; also see Gimaret, La doctrine, ch. 1, esp., 67ff.; and Peters, God's Created Speech, 122-123). It should be added here, however, that the minimalist position championed by most Ash'arites and at least some Ḥanbalīs was not unknown in Mustazilite circles. Abū Jasfar al-Iskāfī (d. 240/854), a member of the Mustazilite school of Baghdad and a student of Jafar b. Ḥarb, is known to have held this view (cf., El², IV, 126-127; and Gimaret, La doctrine, 67-78). Whether there was a standard position on this question among Ḥanbalī mutakallimūn of the 11th and 12th centuries is unclear. Abū Yaʿlā does not declare himself on the question of number in the Mu^c tamad, so far as I have been able to determine. Did Ibn al-Jawzī draw on Ash'arite sources in the formulation of his position, or were there earlier Hanbalīs who held to a similar view? It is quite possible that he is here following the position of Ibn 'Aqīl, as he does on so many other questions.

contingency. On this question some Muslims have departed from the truth. They maintain, for instance, that He is a body but that He is not like other bodies. Some of them go so far as to say that [His body] is a form $(s\bar{u}ra)$ composed of flesh and blood. Others say simply that He is a body [and leave it at that], while still others maintain that His body has the shape (hay^3a) of an ingot $(sab\bar{v}ka)$. Then there are those who say that His body has the shape of a clear, round crystal (billawra). Finally, there are those who say that He is a body (jism) consisting of space $(fad\bar{u}^2)$ and that all other bodies exist within it.

8 If it were not for the fact that some of the 'ulamā' have made reference to such beliefs [in their writings], it would not be necessary to discuss them here. [Some of] my fellow Ḥanbalites (aṣḥābunā), however, have exceeded the bounds of propriety (insānīya) and reason ('aql) in setting forth their views [on these matters]. And the some have chosen to accept

blindly what they have reconscrutiny (nazar). Now of traditions [and attributed shame on the experts in comment: "So this is which includes to have] received that includes Hammad b.

³⁸ See *Maqālāt*, 34, where this view is attributed to certain Rāfidites.

³⁹ See *Talbīs*, 86, where many of the same views are reported, though in *Talbīs* they are associated with the Imāmī theologian Hishām b. al-Ḥakam. On the latter see Ashʿarī, *Maqālāt*, esp., 32-33, but also 207, 210-211 and 521; Shahrastānī, *Milal*, I, 399; and Baghdādī, *Farq*, 65. For more on Hishām, see Watt, *Formative Period*, 186-189; the valuable article by Madelung in *El*², III, 496-498; and esp. van Ess, *Theologie und Gesellschaft im 2. und 3. Jahrhundert Hidschra*, I, 349-379.

 $^{^{40}}$ Cf., $Talb\bar{\imath}s$, 86, 22-23, where the same belief is mentioned; neither in KAS nor in $Talb\bar{\imath}s$ does he identify those who championed this belief.

⁴¹ Experts in the religious sciences, especially *fiqh*, *ḥadīth*, and *tafsīr*, along with certain ancillary sciences such as Arabic grammar, lexicography, etc.

⁴² This paragraph which, in some respects, disrupts the flow of the argument in this section of *KAS*, appears to have been inserted here (by Ibn al-Jawzī) to provide a justification for mentioning beliefs (such as those referred to in the preceding paragraph), which some were certain to find objectionable. For Ibn al-Jawzī too, the less said about such views the better, for the mere mention of such might encourage some to delve into them and perhaps be influenced by them. However, once such views have been aired, ignoring them is no longer an option; they must be identified and rebutted, even if that means airing them again. It is a question of the lesser of two evils.

⁴³ Also see §§29, 30, 32 and 36, where the expression *aṣḥābunā* appears. In three of these occurrences (§§29, 30 and 36), the term is explicitly linked to the Ḥanbalī school. Though the term's referent in the other two occurrences (§§8 and 32) is not quite as clear, the context does support its identification with Ḥanbalīs.

⁴⁴ Here Ibn al-Jawzī is alluding to the views of certain Ḥanbalīs—views which he regarded as anthropomorphist and which will form the central concern of *KAS*. In Ibn

al-Jawzī's view, such concepta the previous paragraph.

⁴⁵ For a fuller discussion of t

Or perhaps: "Is this what the

Abū Abd Allāh Muha Hanafite jurist of Baghdad w al-Lu'lu'i (d. 204/819), a sand evolution of the Hanafi school of Law [Leiden 1997], 51-52, a association with Bishr al-Mari question of the Quran refusing shave makhlūq [cf., Fibria, 3 addition to his work as a jurist both as a student and a crans received a good deal of critical orientation. In addition to the Bayhaqī, Kitāb al-Asmē. 372-1 105-106. 348-9; Ibn Hajar, Tal a generally sympathetic assessm "Tabaqāt al-Ḥanafīva Barta works, among them a critique of which, however, is no longer en motices on him, see GAS, L 436

Hibban b. Hilal Abū Habīb reportedly abandoned the study had become disillusioned with Basrans who claimed the manual lbn Kathīr, Bidāva [Beirut, 1983

[&]quot;Hammad b. Salama b. D traditionist from Basra who died a transmitter of hadith, although about certain of the traditions a included some of Hammad's made

blindly what they have received from their teachers without giving it sufficient scrutiny (nazar).⁴⁵ Now certain unprincipled individuals have fabricated traditions [and attributed them to reliable traditionists] in order to bring shame on the experts in this science so that some might be prompted to comment: "So this is what they believe!"⁴⁶ One such [fabricator] was Muḥammad b. Shujā^c al-Balkhī⁴⁷ who transmitted a tradition, which he [claimed to have] received from Ḥibbān b. Hilāl⁴⁸ in a chain of authorities that includes Ḥammād b. Salama,⁴⁹ Abū'l-Muhazzim⁵⁰ and Abū Hurayra

al-Jawzī's view, such conceptions of deity belong to the same class as those mentioned in the previous paragraph.

⁴⁵ For a fuller discussion of the problem of *taqlīd*, see §§18-21.

⁴⁶ Or perhaps: "Is this what they really believe?"

⁴⁷ Abū 'Abd Allāh Muḥammad b. Shujā' al-Balkhī ath-Thaljī (d. 266/880), a respected Hanafite jurist of Baghdad who received his education in law under Hasan b. Ziyād al-Lu'lu'ī (d. 204/819), a student of Abū Ḥanīfa (for more on his contributions to the evolution of the Hanafi school of law, see Melchert, The Formation of the Sunni Schools of Law [Leiden 1997], 51-52, also 9, n. 41). Despite his Mu^ctazilī sympathies and his close association with Bishr al-Marīsī, Ibn Shujā^c is said to have sided with the wāqifa on the question of the Quran (refusing to declare himself on the matter of whether it is makhlūq or ghayr makhlūq [cf., Fihrist, 206; Maqālāt, 583; and Watt, Formative Period, 203]). In addition to his work as a jurist and a theologian, he was also active in the field of hadīth, both as a student and a transmitter in his own right. It was in this area that his work received a good deal of critical comment, particularly from scholars of a traditionalist orientation. In addition to the judgments cited above in the text of our work, see also Bayhaqī, Kitāb al-Asmā', 372-374; Ta'rīkh Baghdād, V, 350-352; Kitāb al-Mawdū'āt, I, 105-106, 348-9; Ibn Hajar, *Tahdhīb*, IX, 220-221; and Dhahabī, *Mīzān*, III, 577-579. For a generally sympathetic assessment of Ibn Shujāc, see esp., Ibn Qutlūbughā, Tāj at-Tarājim fī Tabaqāt al-Hanafīya (Baghdad, 1962), 55-56. Ibn Shujā was the author of a number of works, among them a critique of anthropomorphism (Kitāb ar-Radd 'alā al-Mushabbiha), which, however, is no longer extant. For a list of his works as well as additional biographical notices on him, see GAS, I, 436.

⁴⁸ Hibbān b. Hilāl Abū Ḥabīb al-Bāhilī (d. 216/831), a respected Basran traditionist who reportedly abandoned the study of *hadīth* toward the end of his life apparently because he had become disillusioned with the loose and undisciplined habits of many of his fellow Basrans who claimed the mantle of *muhaddith* (Ibn Saʿd, VII, 299; *Shadharāt*, II, 36; and Ibn Kathīr, *Bidāya* [Beirut, 1985-88], 283).

⁴⁹ Ḥammād b. Salama b. Dīnār Abū Salama, a $mawl\bar{a}$ of the Banū Tamīm and a traditionist from Basra who died in 167/783. He was generally considered to be reliable as a transmitter of $\dot{h}ad\bar{\iota}th$, although there were some (including Ibn al-Jawzī) who had doubts about certain of the traditions transmitted in his name. Dhahabī notes that while Muslim included some of Hammād's traditions in his $Sah\bar{\iota}h$, Bukhārī carefully avoided them (Dhahabī,

respectively, in which it was reported that the Prophet was once asked: "O Messenger of God, of what does your Lord consist?" He replied: "From water that flows copiously⁵¹ [God] created a horse *(khayl)* and caused it to run so that it perspired whereupon he created His *nafs*⁵² from the perspiration." Abū Aḥmad b. 'Adī⁵⁴ maintained that Muḥammad b. Shujā' was a

 $M\bar{\imath}z\bar{a}n$, I, 594). For more on Hammād, see §§77 and 150 (KAS), including the notes to §150.

zealot (muta assib) who fall which he then attributed (vathlibuhum bihā). Am h. Hanbal in insisted that [I al-Qawārīrī] went so far Abū'l-Muhazzim of being 9 God, may He be praisimilar to each other (tata subject to change (taghay) and are capable of receivitheir origination in time attribute of [eternal] prees eternal (qadīm) cannot moted that atoms (tawāhi

busaPit 58 and those that

atoms (basait) being entire

⁵⁰ Abū'l-Muhazzim (Muhazzam in some sources) Yazīd b. Sufyān (according to some 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. Sufyān), a disciple of Abū Hurayra, who later settled in Basra where he died, sometime after 700. Despite his association with Abū Hurayra, his reliability as a transmitter was frequently the subject of heated debate among traditionists. For a summary of these judgments, see esp., Ibn Sa'd, VII, 238; Ibn al-Jawzī, *Kitāb aḍ-Du'afā' wa'l-Matrūkīn*, III, 209; Dhahabī, *Mīzān*, IV, 426; and Bayhaqī, *Kitāb al-Asmā*', 373-374.

⁵¹ min mā²in min darrin or perhaps min mā²i man darra (from the water of him who runs swiftly...), though this latter reading fits less easily into the syntactical structure of the sentence. The linking of water, horse, perspiration and soul in this tradition is striking, and may indicate that we have here the reflection of a cosmogonic (or "theogonic") mythical pattern with quite possibly ancient (perhaps Indo-European) roots. Cf., Gimaret, *Images*, 32.

⁵² Dhahabī states that this tradition was fabricated by the Jahmīya in order to buttress their view that the word $(kal\bar{a}m)$ of God is created (muhdath). According to him, the Jahmīya reasoned that if God's nafs is a created entity (muhdatha) in Him, even more should God's $kal\bar{a}m$ be regarded as something created in Him and by Him. Thus, in the Jahmī view as presented by Dhahabī, one should understand expressions such as nafs $All\bar{a}h$ and $kal\bar{a}m$ $All\bar{a}h$ as analogous to the Quranic expression bayt $All\bar{a}h$ (Dhahabī, $M\bar{i}z\bar{a}n$, III, 359). For an illuminating discussion of the Jahmī view on the divine attributes, see R.M. Frank, "The Neoplatonism of Ğahm ibn Ṣafwān," $Mus\acute{e}on$, 78 (1965), 395-424. On the term nafs and its interpretation in medieval Islam, see EI^2 , VII, 880-884.

⁵³ Cf., J. Burton, An Introduction to the Ḥadīth, 121. For other versions of this tradition, see Ibn Fūrak, Mushkil, 350; Bayhaqī, Kitāb al-Asmā², 372-373; Ibn Qutayba, Ta³wīl Mukhtalif al-Ḥadīth, 7 and note 3 (cf., Lecomte, 6 and note 1); Kitāb al-Mawḍūšāt, I, 105; and Dhahabī, Mīzān, III, 579. Although Ibn al-Jawzī rejected this tradition on the grounds that both its isnād and matn are defective, he argues in his Kitāb al-Mawḍūšāt (I, 106) and elsewhere that a tradition may be disqualified solely on the basis of a defective matn. He puts it thus: "In a tradition of this sort, one should not assign undue value to the isnād, for an absurd text (mustaḥīl), even if it comes from reliable transmitters, is to be rejected and ascribed to an error on their part. It is obvious that if a group of reliable transmitters were in agreement on the merits of a certain text and reported, e.g., that a camel passed through the eye of a needle, their reputation as reliable transmitters should not influence one's judgment regarding the merits of the text, for they reported what is clearly impossible." And he follows with what, for him, is a fundamental principle: "Any tradition whose matn contravenes the canons of reason (mašqūl) or is in conflict with the canonical sources (uṣūl) is a

fabrication (mawdiF L and it is a-MawdiFāt, I, 106).

Abu Ahmad Abd Allah h the author of al-Kamil fi Mar source of the above quote (cf., on lim Adi and his writings in

For alternative readings, see

Abū 'Abd Allāh Ahmad Hanbali school of law and the teaching see GAS, I, 502-509; ar

Abu Sa'id 'Ubayd Allah b. seading muhaddish of Basra (cf. he eventually settled, he won the them Ahmad b. Hanbal and Yal 320-323. Shadharār, II, 85 (who X. 286, 328.

The difference between has been all else) is that the hase if atoms to which something has be accidents (a'rād) which they have For more on the hase it, see the 1083-1084.

zealot $(muta^c a s s ib)$ who fabricated traditions of an anthropomorphic character which he then attributed to reliable traditionists thereby discrediting them $(yathlibuhum\ bih\bar{a})$. Among such traditions is the one cited above. Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal 6 insisted that [Ibn Shujāc] was an innovator and a heretic. Indeed, al-Qawārīrī 7 went so far as to accuse him of being an infidel $(k\bar{a}fir)$ and Abū'l-Muhazzim of being entirely unreliable in matters of tradition.

9 God, may He be praised, is not an atom (jawhar), for [all] atoms are similar to each other $(tatam\bar{a}thal)$ and occupy space (tatahayyaz). They are subject to change (taghayyur), admit of being joined to each other $(tark\bar{\imath}b)$ and are capable of receiving accidents $(a^c r\bar{a}d)$, all of which is evidence of their origination in time (hadath). The Creator, however, possesses the attribute of [eternal] pre-existence (qidam). What is predicated of one who is eternal $(qad\bar{\imath}m)$ cannot be ascribed to any other than Him. It should be noted that atoms $(jaw\bar{a}hir)$ fall into two classes: those that exist singly $(bas\bar{a}^2it)^{58}$ and those that are joined to other atoms $(murakkab\bar{\imath}t)$. Single atoms $(bas\bar{a}^2it)$ being entities whose coming into existence $(hus\bar{\imath}u)$ does not

fabrication ($mawd\bar{u}^c$), and it is not necessary to give it any further consideration" ($Kit\bar{a}b$ $al-Mawd\bar{u}^c\bar{a}t$, I, 106).

⁵⁴ Abū Aḥmad ʿAbd Allāh b. ʿAdī b. ʿAbd Allāh b. Muḥammad al-Jurjānī (d. 365/976), the author of *al-Kāmil fī Maʿrifat aḍ-Ḍuʿafāʾ waʾl-Matrūkīn*, which appears to be the source of the above quote (cf., Goldziher, *Muhammedanische Studien*, II, 142). For more on Ibn ʿAdī and his writings in the field of *ḥadīth* criticism, see *GAS*, I, 198-199.

⁵⁵ For alternative readings, see the notes to the Arabic text.

⁵⁶ Abū 'Abd Allāh Aḥmad b. Muḥammad b. Ḥanbal (d. 241/855), eponym of the Ḥanbalī school of law and theology. For a general survey of the sources of his life and teaching see GAS, I, 502-509; and the excellent article by H. Laoust, EI^2 , I, 272-277.

⁵⁷ Abū Saʿīd ʿUbayd Allāh b. ʿUmar b. Maysara al-Qawārīrī al-Jushamī (d. 235/849), a leading *muḥaddith* of Basra (cf., *Taʾrīkh Baghdād*, X, 321-322). In Baghdad also, where he eventually settled, he won the respect of some of the leading scholars in the field, among them Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal and Yaḥyā b. Maʿīn. For more on his life, see *Taʾrīkh Baghdād*, X, 320-323; *Shadharāt*, II, 85 (where his *ism* is given as ʿAbd Allāh); and Ibn Kathīr, *Bidāya*, X, 286, 328.

⁵⁸ The difference between $bas\bar{a}^c it$ and the single atom in its simplest form (i.e., abstracted from all else) is that the $bas\bar{a}^c it$ are atoms that possess certain accidents. That is, they are atoms to which something has been added. They are not $murakkab\bar{a}t$, however, because the accidents $(a^c r\bar{a}d)$ which they have received are not "entities" or "things" in and of themselves. For more on the $bas\bar{a}^b it$, see the article by F. Rahman " $Bas\bar{i}t$ wa Murakkab," EI^2 , I, 1083-1084.

depend on pre-existing atoms, include the primal elements (ustuqussāt): ⁵⁹ water, earth, air and fire. Composite entities (murakkabāt), ⁶⁰ on the other hand, are those whose origination [fol.3b] is dependent on [the joining of two or more] atoms, as is [the case of] animals and plants, for example. The origination [of composite entities as composite entities] thus depends on other things that are temporally prior (awā²il). ⁶¹ Those things which cannot come into existence apart from the existence of other things cannot precede the latter in time, and so the prior existence of the former is impossible. Thus the contingency (ḥudūth) of composite substances is established; moreover, the simple entities which precede composite substances cannot be eternal since everything that pertains to them cannot [be eternal]: they admit of being changed from one state to another whose nature is entirely different. Thus, for example, when heat is applied to water it becomes steam and the steam, in turn, changes to air. The eternal, however, is not subject to change.

10 We do not grant the possibility of two [deities] existing simultaneously, for if they [were to will things that] are in conflict with each other the one unable to realize the object of his will would be deficient in power.⁶²

11 The divine attributes of a peremptory nature (a Book of God and those I through multiple chains (whose transmission the Coregard to what is false (kile consensus (ijmä*) of the Comature, viz., the evidence of against the possibility [of fascribe to] Him.

these is knowledge about v consists of two types. The finalihat al-saql) and is sel than one, and that a single the same time. The second arough reason although, i one of two means. The first darwing, as in the case of materials, as in the case of materials, as in the case of materials, as in the case of materials. Thus, in the mecessarily to posit a build materials. Second Edge (

⁵⁹ The term, which appears in medieval Arabic in a variety of spellings (cf., *Muḥīṭ al-Muḥīṭ*, I, 23; also Dozy, I, 22), derives from the Greek *stoicheîon* (elements) via the Syriac *estuksā* (cf., Daiber, *Aetius Arabus. Die Vorsokratiker in arabischer Überlieferung* [Wiesbaden: Steiner, 1980], 18). The word *ustuqussāt* was adopted as a technical term in several scientific disciplines, especially medicine (cf., M. Ullmann, *Islamic Medicine*, 56-57) and grammar, where the term was gradually replaced by the term *harf* (*ḥurūf*), meaning element in the sense of particle or letter (cf. Versteegh, *Greek Elements in Arabic Linguistic Thinking*, 46-47 and n. 69).

⁶⁰ That is, atoms joined to each other or what, in other contexts, Ibn al-Jawzī calls bodies $(ajs\bar{a}m)$.

⁶¹ That is, simple, unjoined atoms.

⁶² An abridged and highly simplified form of the argument from $tam\bar{a}nu^c$ (mutual interference or hindrance), one of the proofs in medieval $kal\bar{a}m$ used to demonstrate the unity of God. In the argument as presented here, the one deficient in power obviously cannot be a deity; and so only one (the one here assumed to possess the power to realize what he wills) can be God. For a more elaborate presentation of the argument, see Ash'arī's Luma' in The Theology of al-Ash'arī edited by R. McCarthy (Beirut 1953), §88; and Ibn Taymīya, Minhāj, I, 438-441; for other appeals to the argument, see 'Abd al-Jabbār, Sharḥ al-Uṣūl, 278, 283; al-Juwaynī, Irshād, 53-54, 57; Baghdādī, Uṣūl, 85; Shahrastānī, Nihāyat al-Iqdām (ed. Guillaume 1934), 91-92; and al-Ījī, Mawāqif, VIII, 42; The argument from mutual interference had a long history going back to the Greeks (see Davidson, Proofs,

hit-167, 407-409); for medieva dearly the Quran, esp., S. 21/2 earth) other than God. [the hear than God.]

For a summary of medieval

CY- Frank, al-Ghazāli and

Cf., Ibn al-Jawzi's Ablaim infigment is that the link between the cr' is rendered necessary be as, for examples, that two is in inferential reason in which the h

11 The divine attributes (sifat) we establish only on the basis of evidence of a peremptory nature ($dal\bar{\imath}l$ $maqt\bar{\imath}^{\epsilon}$ bihi), that is, [the evidence of] the Book of God and those Prophetic Traditions that have come down to us through multiple chains of authority ($had\bar{\imath}th$ $mutaw\bar{\imath}tir$) on the basis of whose transmission the Community (al- $jam\bar{\imath}^{\epsilon}a$)—one which cannot agree in regard to what is false (kidhb)—has established a consensus. Moreover, the consensus ($ijm\bar{\imath}^{\epsilon}$) of the Community too is based on evidence of a peremptory nature, viz., the evidence of reason ($dal\bar{\imath}l$ al-caql), for [reason] is a safeguard against the possibility [of ascribing to] the Creator what is not possible to [ascribe to] Him.

Categories of Knowledge

12 Knowledge ('ulūm) may be divided into three categories. (3) The first of these is knowledge about which there can be no doubt ('ulūm qaṭ'īa), and it consists of two types. The first pertains to what is given to reason immediately (badīhat al-ʿaql) and is self-evident, such as, for example, that two is more than one, and that a single object cannot be present in two places at one and the same time. The second type also belongs to the class of things known through reason although, in this case, reason must have recourse to either one of two means. The first of these may be called necessary means (wasāʾiṭ darūrīya), as in the case of knowledge based on correspondences (maʿlūmāt mutaṭābiqa) in which certain things are seen as being necessarily linked to each other. Thus, in the case of a building, for example, one is led necessarily to posit a builder or, in the case of movement (ḥaraka), a mover (muḥarrik). Knowledge of this sort shares certain features with the first

^{166-167, 407-409);} for medieval Muslim theologians, however, the immediate source was clearly the Quran, esp., S. 21:22 ("If there were gods in them (i.e., the heavens and the earth) other than God, [the heavens and the earth] would fall into ruin"). Cf., also, S. 23: 91.

⁶³ For a summary of medieval theories of knowledge (*silm*), see F. Rosenthal, *Knowledge Triumphant* (Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1970), esp., ch. 4.

⁶⁴ Cf., Frank, al-Ghazālī and the Ash arite School, 10 and nn. 6-7 (105-106).

⁶⁵ Cf., Ibn al-Jawzī's Aḥkām an-Nisā', 6. What distinguishes this from the first type of judgment is that the link between the two things (building and builder, movement and mover) is rendered necessary by experience, not by something that is intrinsic to reason (as, for examples, that two is more than one). This experienced-based reason is a kind of inferential reason in which the building or the movement are taken as "signs" that point to a

category of knowledge in that it concerns what is necessarily true. The second type is arrived at through inferential means (wasā'iṭ istidlālīya). Thus, for example, we say that atoms are contingent (muḥdatha), since they are incapable of [fol.4a] generating themselves...or facsimiles of themselves, and so we infer that they are dependent on an agent who belongs to another order of being (min ghayr jinsihā), namely, a deity who is eternal.

13 The second category of knowledge is that acquired by the five senses, viz., hearing, seeing, smelling, tasting and touching.⁶⁶

14 The third category of knowledge (*'ilm*) is that based upon reports, of which there are two classes. The first of these includes those reports that have been transmitted by numerous individuals (*tawātur*) who [on account of their number] could not have colluded in the transmission of something erroneous, or including such things as the Community's transmission of the Quran and the five daily prayers or reports of such things as the fact that there is a city called Mecca. The second class consists of *āhād* or "isolated"

builder or a mover. The Stoics called them commemorative signs (in contrast to indicative signs) because they presuppose past experience, without which the necessary connection could hardly have been perceived as necessary. For more on these distinctions, see van Ess, "The Logical Structure of Islamic Theology," 33.

reports which are distingu relatively small number of rwo sub-classes. The first has accepted because it reg mighly probable and so ha being cognizant of their p elevated to the status of pe question, however. Thus, basis of such reports is of same kind of compelling e divine essence (dhāt). It i amnibutes on the basis of the people the excuse to say th basis of peremptory evider probable evidence | dali | their eternal character. The evidence] by appealing to t

⁶⁶ As will be seen later in this work, Ibn al-Jawzī has very little confidence that knowledge arising out of sense experience can contribute to an understanding of the nature of deity.

⁶⁷ Cf., §11 where much the same language is used. Knowledge based on tawātur reports is certain knowledge precisely because it has been transmitted by a sufficiently large number of persons so as to rule out the possibility of collaborative fabrication. The number required to meet this condition varied from forty to seventy-two, depending on the theorist in question, although some (like al-Ghazzālī) categorically rejected any attempt to fix the number and held that it is known only to God. This condition of numerical sufficiency must apply to every point in the process of transmission between the original eye-witness of the event and the latest recipient of the report. According to al-Ghazzālī, who appears to represent the mainline view, every statement which meets these conditions will produce in the mind of its hearer a knowledge of its truth—a knowledge which is tantamount to a knowledge of the event itself with which the report is concerned. This is an historical knowledge, not a knowledge based either on sense experience or on discursive reason. For more on the concept of tawātur, see the excellent study by B. Weiss "Knowledge of the Past: the Theory of Tawātur according to al-Ghazālī," SI, 61(1985), 81-105; cf., also his "Language and Tradition in Medieval Islam: the Question of al-Ţarīq ilā Ma'rifat al-Lugha," Der Islam, 61 (1984), 91-99.

⁶⁸ Cf., S. van den Bergh, *Averroes' Tahafut al-Tahafut* (London 1969), II, 16, where this line of reasoning, with virtually identical examples, is traced back to Galen and the

Greek empiricist tradition (cf., Villenden 1977), 90ff., where the immedieval Islam is discussed a an interesting example of the multimovledge of the world, both prime can have a certain knowledge and can have knowledge of even

Since āhād reports are those no more than one in a given gen trassification unless it can be estable were credible, honest persons i critical analysis of hadiths | gen regarded, even in the most favor While probability was sufficient art. "Khahar al-Wāḥid" by Juya fivme attribute. This generally a medieval Islam was not confined line al-Anbari, the 12th century discussion of the distinction ber ess, "Language and Tradition al-Luzha." Der Islam, 61/1984 a-Barhdadi, who insisted on a ti matter active the latter occupying a reports of Usul ad-Dir. 124

reports which are distinguished by the fact that they were passed on by a relatively small number of transmitters.⁶⁹ Isolated reports, in turn, fall into two sub-classes. The first consists of those reports which the Community has accepted because it regards the reliability of their transmission as being highly probable and so has agreed to base legal rulings on them though being cognizant of their probable character. That such reports should be elevated to the status of peremptory evidence (maqām al-qațe) is out of the question, however. Thus, the predication of the divine attributes on the basis of such reports is objectionable, for the attributes must rest on the same kind of compelling evidence (dalīl qaṭʿī) that is used to establish the divine essence (dhāt). It is not permissible to differentiate between the attributes on the basis of the evidence on which they rest-thus giving some people the excuse to say that certain of the attributes are established on the basis of peremptory evidence (dalīl maqtūr bihi) and some on the basis of probable evidence (dalīl zannī)—because they are all equal by virtue of their eternal character. Thus they should not be established on [probable evidence] by appealing to the divine sayings: "I am present in my servant's

Greek empiricist tradition (cf., Versteegh, *Greek Elements in Arabic Linguistic Thinking* [Leiden 1977], 90ff., where the influence of the empiricist tradition on various disciplines in medieval Islam is discussed at some length). For Ibn al-Jawzī, geographical reports are an interesting example of the *mutawātir* report and demonstrate the possibility of a genuine knowledge of the world, both present and past, based on transmitted information. Just as one can have a certain knowledge of the existence of other places—even distant ones—so one can have knowledge of events located in the past, even the distant past.

 $^{^{69}}$ Since $\bar{a}h\bar{a}d$ reports are those handed down by relatively few transmitters (generally no more than one in a given generation), it is necessary to admit the possibility of error or falsification unless it can be established (in the case of individual reports) that the transmitters were credible, honest persons known for their piety. Specialists in jarḥ wa taʿdīl (the critical analysis of hadīths) generally acknowledged that āḥād traditions could never be regarded, even in the most favorable circumstances, as more than probably true (maznūn). While probability was sufficient in Ibn al-Jawzī's view to establish a point of law (see the art. "Khabar al-Wāḥid" by Juynboll in EI2, IV, 896), it was not adequate to establish a divine attribute. This generally accepted classification of reports into $taw\bar{a}tur$ and $\bar{a}h\bar{a}d$ in medieval Islam was not confined to traditionists. It was widely used by grammarians (e.g., Ibn al-Anbārī, the 12th century grammarian) as well as by jurists and theologians. For a discussion of the distinction between tawātur and āhād traditions and its implications, see Weiss, "Language and Tradition in Medieval Islam: the Question of al-Ṭarīq ilā Ma^crifat al-Lugha," Der Islam, 61(1984), 91-99. Cf., also EI2, III, 25. There were those, like al-Baghd \bar{a} d \bar{i} , who insisted on a threefold classification of reports into $taw\bar{a}tur$, $\bar{a}h\bar{a}d$ and mutawassit, the latter occupying an intermediate position between the $taw\bar{a}tur$ and the $\bar{a}h\bar{a}d$ reports (cf., Uṣūl ad-Dīn, 12).

supposition (zann) of Me," and "I am the Associate most free of association (shirk)" as though these texts were on a par with the Quran itself, for the channels of transmission ($tar\bar{t}q$) [of $\bar{a}h\bar{a}d$ reports] are simply not equal to those of the Quran. Abū Abū Allāh b. Hāmid al-Warrāq and some of his

associates⁷³ have assimilate regarding both as valid sour distinction as a basis for est a grievous error, for what is knowledge (*cilm*) [sufficient astonishing that people categorial [fol.4b] claim to have a knowledge (*silm*). The sufficient astonishing that people categorial al-fiqh).

15 The second class of a refused to accept. These e relating to positive law, but

Th

16 Many people search for they do not discover Him that there are existents that of they would not have fallen soul $(r\bar{u}h)$ and reason (see

⁷⁰ Divine sayings (*ḥadīth qudsī*) apparently used by some in Ibn al-Jawzī's day to justify the use of *āḥād* reports (i.e., presumptive evidence) as a basis for affirming certain of the divine attributes. The first saying is to be found in the following collections among others: Bukhārī, 97: 15(3) (cf., Houdas, *Les traditions*, IV, 588[3]); Muslim, 49 (*tawba*):1; 48 (*dhikr wa duʿā*): 2 (1, 2), 19, 20 (1, 2); Ibn Māja, 33 (*adab*): 58; Tirmidhī, 34 (*zuhd*): 51; 45 (*daʿawāī*): 131; *Musnad*, II, 315, 391, 413; al-Munāwī, *al-Itḥāfāt as-Sanīya bi'l-Aḥādīth al-Qudsīya*, ed. Ziʿbī (Beirut, w.d.), 37-40; etc. For a complete list of the occurrences, see Wensinck's *Concordance*, *s.v.*, *zann*; also W. Graham, *Divine Word*, 127-128. The second saying is also found in a number of *ḥadīth* collections, among them: Muslim, 53 (*zuhd*): 46; Ibn Māja, 37 (*zuhd*): 21(1,2); *Musnad*, III, 446, IV, 215 (cf. II, 301); al-Munāwī, *Itḥāfāī*, 34; and Graham, *Divine Word*, 125-126.

⁷¹ Since this divine saying belongs to the class of $\bar{a}h\bar{a}d$ traditions, it does not have the authority of a text from the Quran which belongs to the class of *mutawātir* reports.

⁷² Al-Ḥasan b. Ḥāmid b. 'Alī b. Marwān Abū 'Abd Allāh al-Warrāq who died in 403/1013 at Wāqişa (the victim of a Bedouin attack), on his return to Baghdad from the Hajj. A traditionist, jurist, theologian and ascetic, Ibn Hāmid was undoubtedly one of the most influential figures within the Ḥanbalī school of Baghdad during the first half of the Būyid period. He left behind a number of works in hadīth, fiqh, uṣūl al-fiqh, and uṣūl ad-dīn, though apparently only one of these, his Kitāh Tahdhīb al-Ajwiba, has survived (cf. GAS, I, 515). The work for which he was best known, his al-Jāmić fī Ikhtilāf al-Fuqahā, aimed at reconciling divergent tendencies within Ḥanbalī fiqh. His Sharḥ Uṣūl ad-Dīn appears to have been his principle work in theology; it undoubtedly was a major influence on the thought of Abū Yaclā b. al-Farrā, (d. 458/1066), his leading student, and perhaps also on Ibn Zāghūnī (d. 527/1132). Although Ibn al-Jawzī does not mention the Sharh in KAS, it is quite possibly this work that is the source of his information on Ibn Ḥāmid's theological views. While Ibn al-Jawzī speaks highly of his writings in fiqh (cf., Muntazam, VII, 263-264), he was severely critical of Ibn Ḥāmid's approach to theological and hermeneutic questions, especially his literalism and the anthropomorphic character of his theological views. It is evident from the many references to him in KAS (cf. §§30, 33, 36, 37, 39, 40, 48, 52, 56, 61, 64, 76, 135, 151, 177, 186, 188, and 244) that Ibn al-Jawzī held him primarily responsible for introducing anthropomorphist conceptions of God into Ḥanbalism. Ibn Ḥāmid is the earliest example of anthropomorphism (tajsīm/tashbīh) cited by Ibn al-Jawzī in the history of Ḥanbalism. The other Ḥanbalīs who receive the sharpest criticism in KAS (Abū Yaʿlā and Ibn Zāghūnī) were both spiritual and intellectual descendents of Ibn Hāmid. It is not surprising, therefore, that of these three Ḥanbalīs, Ibn Ḥāmid comes in for the sharpest criticism (cf., §§42, 46, 50, 54, 59, 62, etc.). Among the more important sources on Ibn Hāmid and his intellectual influence within the Ḥanbalī school, see Tahaqāt al-Ḥanābila, II, 171-177; Ta²rīkh Baghdād, VII, 303; Shadharāt, III, 166-67; Bidāya, XI,

^{373:} Shatti. Mukhtaşar. 26: Ibn B. sources, see GAS, I, 515: EF III.

It is impossible to identify group, but it certainly did include advential of Ibn Ḥāmid's studen the school during much of the first

According to Ibn al-Jawzi. In the Hanbali school made no real for establishing the divine attribute.

In addition to sources listed in this paragraph, see Laoust. Let it the district and its relationship to theory. For additional references in anticle by Juynboll in EF. IV.

Perhaps simply by virtue of t

In no case, however, may all principle (usal al-fiqh); their use is mestions (usal ad-din) such as the

associates⁷³ have assimilated this class of reports entirely to the first class,⁷⁴ regarding both as valid sources of knowledge (^{c}ilm) and using them without distinction as a basis for establishing the divine attributes. This, however, is a grievous error, for what it does is to make probability (zann), not sound knowledge (^{c}ilm) [sufficient for the establishment of the attributes]. It is astonishing that people can take such a position and at the same time [fol.4b] claim to have a knowledge of jurisprudence (fiqh) and its principles ($us\bar{u}l$ al-fiqh).⁷⁵

15 The second class of $\bar{a}h\bar{a}d$ reports are those which the Community has refused to accept. These encourage⁷⁶ the use of supposition in matters relating to positive law, but it should not be extended beyond this.⁷⁷

[The Limits of Sense Perception]

16 Many people search for the Creator $(s\bar{a}ni^c)$ through the senses, and when they do not discover Him they are overtaken by doubt. Had they understood that there are existents that can be known without the aid of sense perception they would not have fallen prey to doubt. Among such [existents] are the soul $(r\bar{u}h)$ and reason (caql), even though they are not perceived by the

^{373;} Shaṭṭī, *Mukhtaṣar*, 26; Ibn Badrān, *Madkhal*, 206; and *al-Kāmil*, IX, 242. For additional sources, see *GAS*, I, 515; *EI*², III, 784 (Laoust), and Makdisi, *Ibn* ^c*Aqīl*, 227-232.

 $^{^{73}}$ It is impossible to identify all the individuals whom Ibn al-Jawzī included in this group, but it certainly did include Abū Yaʻlā b. al-Farrā' (d. 458/1066), who was the most influential of Ibn Ḥāmid's students and certainly one of the most important figures within the school during much of the first half of the 11th century.

 $^{^{74}}$ According to Ibn al-Jawzī, Ibn Ḥāmid and his anthropomorphizing associates within the Ḥanbalī school made no real distinction between $\bar{a}h\bar{a}d$ and $taw\bar{a}tur$ reports as a basis for establishing the divine attributes.

 $^{^{75}}$ In addition to sources listed in the notes on $\bar{a}h\bar{a}d$ and $taw\bar{a}tur$ reports at the beginning of this paragraph, see Laoust, *Le traité de droit d'Ibn Taim* $\bar{i}ya$, 71, n. 62, where the concept of $taw\bar{a}tur$ (and its relationship to $\bar{a}h\bar{a}d$ reports) is discussed in relation to the field of legal theory. For additional references pertinent to the status of $\bar{a}h\bar{a}d$ reports in legal matters, see the article by Juynboll in El^2 , IV, 896.

⁷⁶ Perhaps simply by virtue of the fact that such reports exist, having in some cases been transmitted by individuals of obviously good character.

⁷⁷ In no case, however, may $\bar{a}h\bar{a}d$ reports be used when dealing with questions of legal principle ($us\bar{u}l$ al-fiqh); their use is even less justifiable in relation to fundamental theological questions ($us\bar{u}l$ ad- $d\bar{u}n$) such as the divine attributes, as Ibn al-Jawzī has already noted.

senses, for the influence of the soul is evident in the body [of a living creature], and the influence of reason is apparent in its organization. So also the existence of the Creator may be inferred from His influence and His workmanship. Anyone who suppresses [knowledge of] the soul and who fails to report it betrays a lack of interest in intellectual reflection (*fikr*).

17 Those who fail to reflect on this evidence (dalīl) fall into several classes. Among them are the dahrīya,78 who deny the existence of a creator. A person who was sympathetic to this point of view once came to me and requested my help on account of the residue of faith (li-baqīyat īmān) that still lingered in his heart.79 I said to him: "Summon your heart (qalb) and call upon your powers of reason! Neither the inanimate thing nor even the rational creature (nāṭiq) is able to generate itself (yaṣnacu nafsahu). Thus, when you hear people saying that something is the work of nature (tabīca) point out to them, first of all, that what they refer to [as nature] is in fact the Creator, and it is merely in their designation of Him as nature that they err, and, secondly, that nature is not a living thing, nor does it possess the power to know ('ālima) what it is that defines human well-being (maṣāliḥ). To the extent that [nature] has been so inspired and given the power to act, the One who [inspired it and] endowed it with that power (quwwa) is God. If [nature] is not cognizant of what it does, the one who perfected it must be someone other than [nature] itself." [The dahrī] said to me: "The arguments of my opponent have convinced me." I replied: "Reflect on the evidence [pointing to the existence of a creator] and then act with prudence (ahwat)." [fol.5a] Sages (hukama) [of old] have coined a striking parable (mathal) in which they said: "We arranged the prophets by rank and we arranged the dahrīya⁸⁰ by rank.⁸¹ And we said to the dahrīya: 'What is your view of the

prophets?' They replied: The persons endowed with wise cerning the hereafter is groundly to instill fear in the hereafter in the properties for me if I do 'No, but you will waste in punishment or reward [in the prophets: 'What do you follow our teachings will responded: "Following [the of one's soul even if there is But what if the evidence in itself? It is to this that the point of the prophets is the properties of the properties

The astrologer and the property of the dead will not be Even if what you say is But if I am right, the l

⁷⁸ The *dahrīya* generally adhered to what might be called a materialistic world view. They denied the existence of a creator, insisted on the eternity of the world, and maintained that knowledge is limited to what is available to the senses. It is this last point that makes them relevant to this section of *KAS*. For a more detailed account of the *dahrīya*, see the substantial article in *El*², II, 95-97. See also *Atheismus im Mittelalter und in der Renaissance*, edited by Fr. Niewöhner and O. Pluta (Wiesbaden 1999 [=Wolfenbätteler Mittelalter-Studien, 12]), especially the contributions by H. Daiber, 23-44; and Badran, 61-84. Cf., also see *Talbīs*, 41-42, where Ibn al-Jawzī deals with some of the issues posed by the *dahrīya*.

⁷⁹ It might perhaps be rendered: requested my help in rescuing (restoring) his faith.

⁸⁰ Materialists.

⁸¹ I have not been able so far to locate this saying in other medieval Arabic sources. The text as it appears in *KAS* may be an abridgment of a longer text. If this is the case, it would

help to explain some of the difficu

Who is represented by the fine text to indicate the identity of that follow the speaker interrogates askely that what we have here is a persons who appear in the parable:

An early version of Pascal's

The author of the lines that 449 1057), whom, in other content e.g., KAS, §29; and esp., Manuscan cased here without attribution.

For the complete Arabic tent of and R. A. Nicholson, Studies in I translations of these lines and com Lacust. "La vie et la philosophie d'I

prophets?' They replied: 'They are authors of legal codes (nawāmīs) and are persons endowed with wisdom (hikma). However, what they promise concerning the hereafter is groundless. They make promises and issue threats only to instill fear in the hearts of people and to convince them to postpone enjoyment of the present life.' I asked them if there would be any unfortunate consequences for me if I chose to follow the prophets, *2 and they replied: 'No, but you will waste your time; and as to whether there will be a punishment or reward [in the hereafter], the answer is no.' Then I said to the prophets: 'What do you have to say?' They replied: 'Those who do not follow our teachings will suffer painful punishment in the hereafter.'" I responded: "Following [the prophets] is a better way of insuring the safety of one's soul even if there should be no evidence [to support their claims].*3 But what if the evidence in support of their claims is brighter than the sun itself? It is to this that the poet makes reference when he says: *4

The astrologer and the physician both say:

'The dead will not be raised.' I say to them:

'Even if what you say is true, I have nothing to lose,
But if I am right, the loss will be yours, not mine.'"

85

help to explain some of the difficulties presented by the text as it appears here in KAS.

 $^{^{82}}$ Who is represented by the first person singular in this sentence? There is nothing in the text to indicate the identity of the speaker. It can hardly be Ibn al-Jawzī, for in the lines that follow the speaker interrogates the prophets. Perhaps it is one of the $hukam\bar{a}$? It seems likely that what we have here is an abridged version of a longer text in which the various persons who appear in the parable are identified.

⁸³ An early version of Pascal's wager?

⁸⁴ The author of the lines that follow is none other than Abū'l-'Alā al-Ma'arrī (d. 449/1057), whom, in other contexts, Ibn al-Jawzī condemns as a sceptic and a heretic (cf., e.g., *KAS*, §29; and esp., *Muntazam*, VIII, 184-188). This may be the reason these lines are cited here without attribution.

⁸⁵ For the complete Arabic text of the poem, see *Luzūmīyāt* (Cairo 1343/1924), II, 300; and R. A. Nicholson, *Studies in Islamic Poetry* (Cambridge 1921), 279, no. 282. For translations of these lines and commentary, see Nicholson, *Studies*, 185 (no. 282); and H. Laoust, "La vie et la philosophie d'Abū'l-'Alā al-Ma'arrī," *BEO*, 10 (1944-45), 149.

[Knowledge and the Authority of Tradition: Ma^crifa versus Taqlīd]

18 Among those [who fail to reflect on the evidence] are people who follow their experts and their ancestors blindly—a practice common among Jews and Christians, for example. For once met a rabbi (${}^c\bar{a}lim\ al\ Yah\bar{u}d$) and I said to him: "If we were to meet Moses we would say to him: "We (Muslims) believe in your prophethood and your Book, and we believe that God spoke to you directly. If someone were to believe in our Book and our Prophet but not in you [or your Book], his beliefs ($\bar{i}m\bar{a}n$) would avail him

nothing.'87 Indeed, we are elements of] your creed. Y admission, is that we do a Sabbath observance proper al-furū^c) and that difference not render one liable to et "By God, we do not dema required only of the Barihowever, you and your comment."88 To that he had no 19 [fol.5b] Uncritical in

with the knowledge of God (dalīl) for this comes from community (naql). and from the act of taqlīd itself], werse: "You should know the following verse [where the our fathers following a community are, in effect, condemn the subsequent verse, addreif I were to bring you guidant The clear implication is:

20 As for the established

them (the fathers)?"

⁸⁶ In medieval Muslim discussions of taqlīd, Jews and Christians are frequently cited as examples of people who blindly accept what they are taught by parents and religious authorities rather than investigate matters for themselves and form an independent judgment. Cf., e.g., Ghazzālī, Tahāfut al-Falāsifa (Cairo, 1958), 71. For other examples, see Lazarus-Yafeh, "Taqlīd in the Writings of al-Ghazzālī," Israel Oriental Studies, I (1971), 250-251 (cf., Talbīs, 81). In contrast to al-Ghazzālī, who felt it was a waste of time to engage Jews and Christians in theological debates (cf., Ibid, 252, n. 10) because of their blind adherence to tradition, Ibn al-Jawzī did apparently invite such encounters if we are to judge from what follows. It is important to keep in mind, however, that the arguments against taqlīd set forth in this and the following paragraphs are directed primarily against fellow Ḥanbalīs (cf., §37), not against Muslims of other schools, certainly not against Christians and Jews. In his Talbīs, 81-82, Ibn al-Jawzī characterizes taqlīd as one of the more serious "delusions of the devil". He argues that even the salaf are not to be followed uncritically (81, line 9), and in support of his argument cites several Quranic references (in particular 43:22, and 37:98). Further, he argues, the practice of ijtihād is incumbent even on lay persons, but he does add a caveat: in matters of positive law ('ilm al-fur \bar{u} '), lay persons and non-experts in general are excused from the practice of ijtihād because of the inherent complexity of positive law and the vast knowledge of textual sources required if it is to be practiced properly. In matters of belief (i'tiqād), however, lay persons are expected to practice ijtihād (Talbīs, 82; also §20 below). Among the defenders of taqlīd within the early Ḥanbalī school, perhaps the two most outspoken were 'Abd al-Wahhāb al-Warrāq (*Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila*, I, 210, 20ff.) and al-Barbahārī (Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila, II, 29, 10; and 39, 1-5). For a fuller account of Ḥanbalī views on taqlīd, see Makdisi, "Freedom in Islamic Jurisprudence: Ijtihad, Taqlid, and Academic Freedom," La notion de liberté au Moyen Age: Islam, Byzance, Occident (Paris 1985), 79-88. A brief but useful summary of Asharite and Mustazilite views on taqlīd is found in Baghdādī, Uṣūl ad-Dīn, 254-255. For an analysis and interpretation of selected Ash'arite thinkers, among them al-Bāqillānī, al-Isfarā'inī, and al-Juwaynī, see R. M. Frank, "Knowledge and Taqlīd: The Foundations of Religious Belief in Classical Ash^carism," JAOS, 109 (1989), 37-62; cf., also his "al-Ghazālī on Taqlīd: Scholars, Theologians and Philosophers," Zeitschrift für Geschichte der Arabisch-Islamischen Wissenschaften, 7 (1991/92): 207-252. Ibn al-Jawzī, of course, was not the only Ḥanbalī to attack taqlīd, as is clear from his comments in the following paragraphs.

I take this to be the end of the referent of the second person

Apparently for the following of.. *Talbīs*, 81, 12-14), they opinciple (*uṣūl*) (cf.. *Ṣayd al-Ki*) of Muḥammad.

Cf., Şayd al-Khāṭir (Beirus beliefs and practices in the writing

See §20 where the term

S. 47:19. Here knowledge Quran is addressed, not just to an Ibn al-Jawzī takes from the verse.

³¹ S. 43:23.

S. 43:24.

nothing.'⁸⁷ Indeed, we are in accord with you as regards [the essential elements of] your creed. Your principal complaint against us, by your own admission, is that we do not observe the Sabbath. Our contention is that Sabbath observance properly belongs to the sphere of positive law (far^{ζ} min al- $fur\bar{u}^{\zeta}$) and that differences regarding the prescriptions of positive law do not render one liable to eternal punishment." The rabbi then said to me: "By God, we do not demand that you observe the Sabbath, for it is a duty required only of the Banū Isrā'īl." I replied: "I accept your statement; however, you and your coreligionists (still) run the risk of eternal punishment." To that he had no reply.

19 [fol.5b] Uncritical imitation of others $(taql\bar{\imath}d)$ in matters having to do with the knowledge of God $(ma^c rifat \ All\bar{a}h)$ is not permissible. The evidence $(dal\bar{\imath}l)$ for this comes from the Quran, the established teaching of the community (naql), 90 and from a consideration of what is implied $(ma^c n\bar{a})$ [in the act of $taql\bar{\imath}d$ itself].—As for the evidence of the Quran, there is the verse: "You should know that there is no deity apart from God." In the following verse [where the $mun\bar{a}fiq\bar{u}n$ are quoted as saying]: "We found our fathers following a community (umma) and we follow in their footsteps," they are, in effect, condemned for the blind imitation of their ancestors. [In the subsequent verse, addressed again to the $mun\bar{a}fiq\bar{u}n$, God says:] "What if I were to bring you guidance better than you found your fathers following?" The clear implication is: "Would you continue to follow [blindly] after them (the fathers)?"

20 As for the established tradition (athar) of the community, there are the

⁸⁷ I take this to be the end of the imaginary conversation with Moses. If this is correct, the referent of the second person pronouns that follow is the rabbi.

⁸⁸ Apparently for the following reasons: they follow traditional practices blindly ($taql\bar{t}d$) (cf., $Talb\bar{t}s$, 81, 12-14), they confuse matters of positive law ($fur\bar{u}^c$) with matters of principle ($u\bar{s}u\bar{t}$) (cf., $\bar{S}ayd$ al- $Kh\bar{a}tir$, 162, 3), and they refuse to acknowledge the prophethood of Muḥammad.

⁸⁹ Cf., *Ṣayd al-Khāṭir* (Beirut 1987), 572-573. For a more detailed critique of Jewish beliefs and practices in the writings of Ibn al-Jawzī, see *Talbīs*, 70-74.

⁹⁰ See §20 where the term *athar* is used in place of *naql*.

⁹¹ S. 47:19. Here knowledge (*cilm*) of God is a duty imposed on all those to whom the Quran is addressed, not just to an elite class of religious experts. This, at any rate, is what Ibn al-Jawzī takes from the verse.

⁹² S. 43:23.

⁹³ S. 43:24.

words of 'Alī to Ḥārith b. Ḥawt.' When the latter asked ['Alī] whether he thought Ṭalḥa and Zubayr were in error, ['Alī] replied: "O Ḥārith, you are confused! The truth is not known by reference to human beings. You should first of all establish the truth and then you will be able to identify those who possess it." Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal once said: "A man must be severely limited in his knowledge if he chooses to imitate another person in matters of belief (i'tiqād)." Indeed, it is not permissible that we should follow others uncritically, not even men of the calibre of Abū Bakr, 'Alī, Aḥmad, or Shāfi'ī. On the contrary, belief ($\bar{i}m\bar{a}n$) in God and His attributes ($\bar{s}if\bar{a}t$) and a knowledge (ma'rifa)" of what is consistent with His nature and

what is not, as indicated by ('alā kulli makhlūq)."

21 [Reflection on] the essential the one who follows others [he realizes that the truth supposes]. *Taqlīd* negates is solely for the purpose of mendowed with the power of themselves its benefits, for The one who practices together themselves on someone other themselves.

their way amidst the complexity (*Talbīs*, 82, 4-8; cf., G. Makdis

⁹⁴ Perhaps Ḥūṭ. Cf., Dhahabī, *Mushtaba*, I, 259; also *Talbīs*, 81 (trans. by Margoliouth, *Islamic Culture*, 9 [1935], p. 389).

⁹⁵ Cf., Talbīs, 81; and Ṣayd al-Khāṭir (Beirut 1987), 48-49.

⁹⁶ Cf., *Talbīs*, 82; and *Ṣayd al-Khāṭir* (Beirut 1987), 166. However, cf. *Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila*, I, 31, where Aḥmad is quoted as approving *taqlīd*. What his views on the question of *taqlīd* were is difficult to determine from the sources available to us. If Aḥmad endorsed the idea of *taqlīd*, as seems possible (cf., Laoust, *La profession de foi d'Ibn Baṭṭa*, 7, n. 2; for a somewhat different perspective, see *KAS*, §§21 and 37, among others), later generations of Ḥanbalī scholars gradually distanced themselves from that position, perhaps in response to powerful Muʿtazilī and Ashʿarī critiques of *taqlīd* (cf., Frank, "Knowledge and *Taqlīd*: The Foundations of Religious Belief in Classical Ashʿarism," *JAOS*, 109 [1989], 37-62). This shift is apparent already in the *Ibāna* of the 10th century Ḥanbalī, Ibn Baṭṭa (p. 4, etc.); by the early 11th century, the Ḥanbalī position as reflected in the *Muʿtamad* (e.g., pp. 20, 31) of Abū Yaʿlā is scarcely distinguishable from that of the Ashʿarite school. Clearly the position outlined by Ibn al-Jawzī in *KAS* (e.g., §37) and elsewhere is little more than the restatement of a view that had been well represented within Ḥanbalism, at least from the early 11th century.

⁹⁷ The concept of *ma^crifa* or *'ilm* (knowledge) is central to Ibn al-Jawzī's critique of *taqlīd* (cf., also the last part of §37 where Ibn al-Jawzī states quite explicitly that *ma^crifat* Allāh and *taqlīd* are incompatible: "... especially in matters pertaining to the knowledge of God *taqlīd* is not permissible"]). For him "knowing" means possessing knowledge (*ma^crifa* or *'ilm*) based on an investigation of the sources, rational reflection on the evidence and inferences arrived at through this reflection. Knowing, in this sense, is necessarily a personal act—something which each individual who seeks knowledge must do for himself. Hence, examination of the evidence and reflection on its meaning is legally obligatory (§§2, 20, etc.). It is a duty that rests on the shoulders of every believer. In the words of Ibn al-Jawzī, it is a duty that rests on the shoulders of every believer, to make a distinction between *ma^crifat* Allāh and *ma^crifat* (or *'ilm*) *al-furū^c* (positive law). In the sphere of positive law, by contrast, knowledge is the responsibility of the experts, *viz.*, those who have been duly trained and are able to find

⁹⁸ For one Ḥanbalī view on knowledge of God is permissible discussion in *Mu^ctamad*, 23-24. If the knowledge of God and the discussion, see Gimaret. *La discussion* a fairly strict position on the man

⁹⁹ Alī b. 'Agīl b. Muhammad 4 the Hanbalī school of Bashdad within a Hanafi family, and from Aqīl joined the Hanbalī school a for the remainder of his life. A conservative elements of the had been influenced by his earlie influence in the school and through of a number of promising voung l of Ibn 'Aqīl on the thinking of particularly those that deal with do is particularly evident in KAS. == was a thinker for whom Ibn al-Jan thought of Ibn 'Aqīl, see the exce his seminal study, Ibn Agīl a la re 1963). Not to be overlooked is Culture in Classical Islam [Edi work. Ibn al-Jawzī himself wrote in his Muntazam, IX. 212-215: = taqlīd, Ibn 'Aqīl "believes that in simply because they come first. thalaf]. Servile imitation of the

what is not, as indicated by the evidence, are incumbent on every creature $({}^{c}al\bar{a}\;kulli\;makhl\bar{u}q).^{98}$

21 [Reflection on] the essential meaning $(ma^c n\bar{a})$ [of $taql\bar{\imath}d$] indicates that the one who follows others does so because he is uncertain, in as much as [he realizes that the truth of] the matter may be other [than what he supposes]. $Taql\bar{\imath}d$ negates the benefits of reason, for reason was created solely for the purpose of reflection $(ta^c ammul)$. It is a disgrace that those endowed with the power of reason should extinguish its flame and deny themselves its benefits, for reason is a light meant to provide illumination. The one who practices $taql\bar{\imath}d$ is, in effect, [like] a blind person who must depend on someone other than himself. Ibn 'Aq $\bar{\imath}$ l 99 said: "Since Aḥmad did

their way amidst the complexity. Here it is permissible for the lay person to rely on experts (*Talbīs*, 82, 4-8; cf., G. Makdisi, *Ibn ʿAqīl* [Edinburgh, 1997], 98).

⁹⁸ For one Ḥanbalī view on the question of whether a delay (*muhla*) in acquiring a knowledge of God is permissible for a person who has reached adulthood, see Abū Yaʻlā's discussion in *Muʻtamad*, 23-24. For a survey of Ashʻarite views on the general question of the knowledge of God and the degree to which this knowledge is incumbent on the adult Muslim, see Gimaret, *La doctrine d'al-Ashʻarī* (Paris 1990), 215-218 (also van Ess, *Die Erkenntnislehre des ʿAdudaddīn al-Īcī*, 349-350). As is frequently the case, Muʻtazilīs took a fairly strict position on the matter (Gimaret, 217-218).

99 Alī b. ʿAqīl b. Muḥammad Abū'l-Wafāʾ al-Baghdādī (d. 513/1119), a pivotal figure in the Hanbalī school of Baghdad during the latter half of the 11th century. Though raised within a Hanafī family, and from an early age exposed to Hanafī/Mu^ctazilī thinking, Ibn 'Aqīl joined the Ḥanbalī school and remained a defender of the school's central doctrines for the remainder of his life. Although he ran into difficulty with some of the more conservative elements of the school on account of his theological views (some of which had been influenced by his earlier encounter with Mu^ctazilism), he remained an important influence in the school and through his writings and his teaching helped to shape the views of a number of promising young Ḥanbalī scholars, among them Ibn al-Jawzī. The influence of Ibn 'Aqīl on the thinking of Ibn al-Jawzī is evident in many of the latter's works, particularly those that deal with doctrinal and methodological questions. Ibn 'Aqīl's influence is particularly evident in KAS, where he is quoted frequently and sometimes at length. He was a thinker for whom Ibn al-Jawzī had profound admiration. For a survey of the life and thought of Ibn 'Aqīl, see the excellent article by G. Makdisi in EI^2 , III, 699-701, as well as his seminal study, Ibn 'Aqīl et la résurgence de l'Islam traditionaliste au xie siècle (Damascus 1963). Not to be overlooked is his more recent work on Ibn 'Aqīl (Ibn 'Aqīl: Religion and Culture in Classical Islam [Edinburgh 1997]) which updates and augments his earlier work. Ibn al-Jawzī himself wrote several important biographical notices on Ibn 'Aqīl, esp., in his Muntazam, IX, 212-215; and in his Manāqib, 526-527. On the specific question of taqlīd, Ibn 'Aqīl "believes that there is absolutely no reason why the 'ancients' [the salaf], simply because they come first, should be considered as superior to the 'moderns' [the khalaf]. Servile imitation of the ancients is simply not in the true spirit of Ḥanabalism. For not practice *taqlīd* he was free to accept the position adopted by Zayd on the question of the grandfather's [right of inheritance] and reject the view of Abū Bakr. 100 Indeed, it is essential that people follow where the evidence (dalīl) leads. If you wish to know whether this position is correct or not, consider what is more likely, that I am closer to Aḥmad or that Aḥmad is closer to himself? Is it not true that Aḥmad is closer to himself? How often did he adopt a point of view and then later change his mind! This phenomenon is well attested in reports concerning Abū Ḥanīfa [fol.6a] and in statements from Shāfīf. If such persons sometimes contradicted themselves, it was primarily because of the evidence [available to them]." 102

22 Ibn 'Aqīl [reported hearing] a man discourse on the "soundness" (salāma) of taqlīd. I myself came across a book written by Abū Bakr 'Abd

Ibn Ḥanbal himself did not shrink from criticizing the Companions of the Prophet when a principle was at stake. He bids us follow scripture, and to reason on the basis of scripture rather than to follow him blindly. We must therefore do his bidding; to do otherwise would be tantamount to rejecting the teaching of the founder of the school himself" (G. Makdisi, The Notebooks of Ibn ʿAqīl, Part I, xlix). Ibn ʿAqīl's defense of ijtihād is, according to G. Makdisi, "one of the most characteristic traits of his doctrine. [In his Kitāb al-Funūn] he shows his preference for the ijtihād of contemporaries over that of predecessors, for each generation has to solve a new set of problems...by a fresh interpretation and application of the sacred texts" (The Notebooks of Ibn ʿAqīl, Part I, 1).

¹⁰⁰ Cf., *Talbīs*, 81, 2-82, 3; and G. Makdisi, "Quartre opuscules d'Ibn 'Aqīl sur le coran," *BEOS*, 24 (1971), 11 (introduction). For a discussion of the legal issues involved, see N. A. Coulson, *Succession in the Muslim Family*, 79-90.

The point here seems to be that since examination of, and reflection on, the evidence is essentially an interior process—one in which reason and the conscience are the principle guides—one cannot know (i.e., participate in) the experience by which others arrive at their beliefs, what evidence $(dal\bar{\imath}l)$ those beliefs ultimately rest on, or the degree of conviction or certitude $(\bar{\imath}m\bar{\alpha}n)$ with which those beliefs are held. It follows then that if one chooses to follow another person, even an eminent authority, one's beliefs by the very nature of things can never arise above the level of supposition (zann). That is not a sufficient basis for authentic belief, especially in matters of $u\bar{\imath}nl$. For Ibn al-Jawzī (here following Ibn 'Aqīl), authentic belief must be accompanied by the kind of certitude that is only possible if one personally considers the evidence, reflects on that evidence and draws for himself those inferences $(istidl\bar{\imath}nl)$ that arise from such consideration and reflection. $Ijtih\bar{\imath}nl$ is therefore indispensable. For Ibn al-Jawzī, belief is a necessarily personal matter; to make the views of others the basis of one's beliefs is to abdicate one's own responsibility.

¹⁰² It is a question of changing positions, in part, because of the discovery of new evidence and, in part, because the ambiguity and/or complexity of the evidence rendered it amenable to different interpretations. For an interesting and important discussion of *taqlīd*, see Ibn 'Aqīl's, *Kitāb al-Funūn*, 606, 8-17; cf., Makdisi, *Ibn* 'Aqīl (1997), 68.

ar-Raḥmān b. Ahmad a he maintained that the God by way of taglid a to reason and its dictar the Prophet received the taqlīd and without req (aṣḥāb al-ḥadīth) admir in his thought astonishe angel he was disturbed [so he went to his wife have been deceived]!" prayed: "O God, show those who accuse me of to this tree and it will approached him leaving the tree]: "Return [to ve whereupon [the Prophet] [to other human beings? angel and a devil through the Prophet, for their par [bearing on the question believed.

and historical sources of the passociate or disciple of the 4th the latter is known to have been II, 29, 20; and 39, 1ff). G. Mas-Sinnī, a contemporary of Bakr mentioned by Ibn al-Jan Makdisi, Ibn 'Aqīl [1997]. 5: Damascus 1957), 124: and his '

this tradition are to be found of former that is cited here in K-1 "evidence" provided in responsin the face of uncertainty.

ar-Raḥmān b. Aḥmad as-Sunnī¹⁰³ entitled *al-Munabbih fi't-Tawḥīd* in which he maintained that the Messenger of God received his religion $(d\bar{\imath}n)$ from God by way of taglīd and that [in such matters] he refused to have recourse to reason and its dictates. In like fashion, he asserted, the Companions of the Prophet received their religion from him, that is, in accordance with taglīd and without requiring proof (hujja). I observed that traditionists (ashāb al-hadīth) admired this man's work. However, the confusion evident in his thought astonished me. After the Messenger of God encountered the angel he was disturbed by the thought that it might have been a devil, and [so he went to his wife and] said: "O Khadīja, I am fearful [that I might have been deceived]!" On more than one occasion, he was known to have prayed: "O God, show me a sign $(\bar{a}ya)$ so that I need not be troubled by those who accuse me of lying." [On one such occasion] he was told: "Speak to this tree and it will come to you!" And so he spoke to it, and it approached him leaving a furrow behind it in the ground. Then he said [to the tree]: "Return [to your former place]!" And it did as he commanded, whereupon [the Prophet] was reassured. 104 Indeed, prophets are not superior [to other human beings?] except in their ability to distinguish between an angel and a devil through the use of reason (ijtihād). The Companions of the Prophet, for their part, spared no effort in ferreting out evidence (dalīl) [bearing on the question] of his veracity and, [having obtained it,] they believed.

¹⁰³ Or perhaps as-Sinnī. Although I have found no reference to him in the biographical and historical sources of the period, he was undoubtedly a Ḥanbalī, and quite possibly an associate or disciple of the 4th century firebrand conservative, al-Barbahārī (d. 329/941); the latter is known to have been an unapologetic defender of *taqlīd* (cf. *Tabaqāt al-Ḥanābila*, II, 29, 20; and 39, 1ff). G. Makdisi mentions a Muḥammad b. ʿAbd ar-Razzāq b. Aḥmad as-Sinnī, a contemporary of Ibn ʿAqīl, who may have been a distant cousin of the Abū Bakr mentioned by Ibn al-Jawzī, but Makdisi was not able to identify him further (see Makdisi, *Ibn ʿAqīl* [1997], 5; his "L'affaire d'ibn ʿAqīl," *Mélanges L. Massignon* [Paris-Damascus 1957), 124; and his "Autograph Diary—III," *BSOAS*, XIX [1957], 48).

¹⁰⁴ See Ibn al-Jawzī's *al-Wafā' bi-Aḥwāl al-Muṣṭafā*, I, 172-173, where two versions of this tradition are to be found, one ascribed to 'Umar, the other to Anas b. Mālik. It is the former that is cited here in *KAS*. This story is recounted here because it is an example of "evidence" provided in response to the Prophet's demand that he be given evidence/proof in the face of uncertainty.

[The Dangers of Kalām]

23 Nothing has been attributed to Aḥmad in the sources that even remotely smacks of anthropomorphism (tashbīh), for his position was that the traditions of the Prophet should be allowed to stand as they are without comment. This also was the viewpoint of such leading authorities as Mālik b. Anas, ¹⁰⁵ Sufyān, ¹⁰⁶ Awzā^cī, ¹⁰⁷ Ibn al-Mubārak, ¹⁰⁸ and Shāfi^cī, ¹⁰⁹ all of whom were

opposed to the science of seek [to understand] religion to heresy. Of [all] people loathing of kalām. Muha urge us to study jurisprucurse 'Amr b. 'Ubayd."

working out the doctrinal and Islam. For a list of the Arabaccount of his life and place of J. Schacht, "On Shāfi'i's Life 318-326; and his *Origins of Makdisi*. "The Junion al-Fiqh." SI. 59 (1984), 5-47. Islamic Jurisprudence?" LIM Feener).

- apparently the first to occupy Hanafi school of law. Although he distinguished his position assigned more importance to interesting that, despite his assigned a biography in his Taburelationship between Abū Yūsuf was the first of Ahmadlist of the more important biog writings, see GAS, I. 419-421.
- Allāh ash-Shaybānī (d. 189 805 period. Although his family had up in Kufa, where he came into life to the study of law and traothers. For a full list of sources L 421-433.
- Nu'mān b. Thābit Abū Har law and one of the most import principle sources on his life and thought, see *GAS*, I, 409-419, a him are cited.
- A student of Hasan al-Basi doctrine of free-will; he did not a traditions that supported a predes prophetique dans la théologie m

Author of the celebrated *Muwaṭṭa'*, eponym of the Mālikī school of law, and a leading figure in the evolution of Muslim jurisprudence in the early period, who died in Medina in 179/796. For an account of the most important sources on him and an assessment of his contribution to the development of Islamic thought, see the excellent article on him by J. Schacht, *El*², VI, 262-265; also see *GAS*, I, 457-484; *GAL*, I, 297-299; Y. Dutton, *The Origins of Islamic Law: the Quran, the Muwatta and Madinan Amal;* and Goldziher, *Muhammedanische Studien*, II, 213-231 (Eng. trans. 198-214).

a critic of the speculative tendencies of early Kufan legal circles. Despite his insistence on the importance of *ḥadīth*, however, his theological views place him close to the Qadarīya on a number of important questions, and among the precursors of early Mu^ctazilism (cf., *EI*², IX, 771a). For a sketch of his life, an assessment of his contribution to early Islamic thought, and a list of sources on him, see the article by H. P. Raddatz in *EI*², IX, 770-772. Ibn al-Jawzī regarded Sufyān as a pillar among the early *salaf* and devoted an entire work to his life and thought (*Mir*²āt az-Zamān, 486, 2; *Dhayl*, I, 418, 5-6). The work appears to be lost, however.

 $^{^{107}}$ Abū 'Amr 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. 'Amr al-Awzā'ī (154/770), a leading Syrian authority in the fields of *ḥadīth* and *fiqh*, who died in 154/770 at Ḥantūs, near Beirut. For an account of his contributions to early fiqh and an outline of his life see the article by J. Schacht in EI^2 , I, 772-773.

of non-Arab stock (according to al-Khaṭīb, his mother was a Khwārizmian and his father a Turk [Taʾrīkh Baghdād, X, 153]); he was the first Khurasanian to rise to prominence in the field of ḥadīth studies. Staunchly traditionalist in outlook, he bitterly attacked the study of kalām and insisted that interest in kalām inevitably leads to the adoption of heretical views (cf., Ibn Baṭṭa, Ibāna, 32: قال ابن المبارك: مَن تعاطى الكلام تزندق "Those who devote themselves to kalām will succumb to heretical views"]). Among his contemporaries, he was well known for his mystical and ascetic practices (proof that Sufism and the traditionalist outlook were not seen as incompatible even in the early period). For more on his life and place within the emerging traditionalist movement of the second century, see the lengthy notices on him in Taʾrīkh Baghdād (X, 152-169), the Ḥilya of Abū Nuʿaym (VIII, 162-190), and Ibn al-Jawzī's Ṣafwat aṣ-Ṣafwa, IV, 109-122. Additional sources are listed in GAS (I, 95), and EI², III, 879. For other references to him in KAS, see §§37 and 132.

¹⁰⁹ Abū 'Abd Allāh Muḥammad b. Idrīs (d. 204/820), who played a pivotal role in

opposed to the science of $kal\bar{a}m$. It was Abū Yūsuf's ¹¹⁰ view that those who seek [to understand] religion $(d\bar{\imath}n)$ by means of $kal\bar{a}m$ inevitably succumb to heresy. Of [all] people, Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal was the most vigorous in his loathing of $kal\bar{a}m$. Muḥammad b. al-Ḥasan¹¹¹ said: "Abū Ḥanīfa¹¹² used to urge us to study jurisprudence and to avoid $kal\bar{a}m$. He used to say: 'God curse 'Amr b. 'Ubayd, ¹¹³ who was the first to encourage the study of

working out the doctrinal and methodological implications of *ḥadith*-centered, traditionalist Islam. For a list of the Arabic sources on Shāfiʿī, see *GAS*, I, 484-490. For a general account of his life and place in the history of Muslim jurisprudence and *ḥadīth*-studies, see J. Schacht, "On Shāfiʿī's Life and Personality," in *Studia Orientalia J. Pedersen* (1953), 318-326; and his *Origins of Muhammadan Jurisprudence* (Oxford, 1950), 1-22, etc. See also G. Makdisi, "The Juridical Theology of Shāfiʿī: Origins and Significance of *Uṣūl al-Fiqh*," *SI*, 59 (1984), 5-47; and W. B. Hallaq, "Was al-Shafiʿi the Master Architect of Islamic Jurisprudence?" *IJMES*, 25 (1993), 587-605 (I owe this reference to Michael Feener).

 110 Yaʻqūb b. Ibrāhīm al-Anṣārī ad-Dawraqī (d. 192/807), a prominent Kufan lawyer, apparently the first to occupy the office of $q\bar{a}d\bar{q}'l$ - $qud\bar{a}t$, and one of the founders of the Ḥanafī school of law. Although he made a place for the principle of ra'y in his jurisprudence, he distinguished his position on this question from his teacher, Abū Ḥanīfa, in that he assigned more importance to the $had\bar{t}th$ as a source of doctrine (cf., EI^2 , I, 164-165). It is interesting that, despite his association with the Ḥanafī school, Ibn Abī Yaʻlā accords Abū Yūsuf a biography in his $Tabaq\bar{a}t$ al-Ḥanābila (I, 414-415) and notes the close personal relationship between Abū Yūsuf and Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal; indeed, al-Khaṭīb claims that Abū Yūsuf was the first of Aḥmad's teachers in $had\bar{t}th$ (Taʻr $\bar{t}kh$ $Baghd\bar{t}d$, XIV, 255f.). For a list of the more important biographical sources on him as well as an enumeration of his writings, see GAS, I, 419-421.

¹¹¹ Presumably the reference here is to Muḥammad b. al-Ḥasan b. Farqad Abū ʿAbd Allāh ash-Shaybānī (d. 189/805), a leading influence in the Ḥanafī school in its formative period. Although his family hailed from Ḥarastā, a village near Damascus, Shaybānī grew up in Kufa, where he came into contact with Abū Ḥanīfa at an early age and devoted his life to the study of law and tradition under the direction of Abū Ḥanīfa, Abū Yūsuf and others. For a full list of sources on him as well as an enumeration of his writings, see *GAS*, I, 421-433.

 112 Nu^cmān b. Thābit Abū Ḥanīfa at-Taymī (d. 150/767), eponym of the Ḥanafī school of law and one of the most important legal authorities of the early period. For a list of the principle sources on his life and a brief account of his place in the history of early Islamic thought, see *GAS*, I, 409-419; and EI^2 , I, 123-124, where important secondary works on him are cited.

¹¹³ A student of Ḥasan al-Baṣrī (d. 144/762), who, like his teacher, endorsed the Qadarī doctrine of free-will; he did not conceal his doubts regarding the validity of those prophetic traditions that supported a predestinarian viewpoint (cf., van Ess, "La autorité de la tradition prophetique dans la théologie mu^ctazilite" in *La notion d'autorité au moyen âge*, ed. G.

 $kal\bar{a}m$.""[fol.6b] Nūḥ al-Jāmic asked Abū Ḥanīfa his view on what theologians had to say regarding such things as accidents $(a^c r \bar{a} d)$ and bodies $(ajs\bar{a}m)$, and he replied: "[What they teach is derived from] the doctrines of the philosophers. It is essential that you follow the path laid down by the salaf. Be on your guard against innovations of whatever sort." Thawrī was asked about $kal\bar{a}m$ and he responded: "Leave it alone, it is worthless!" 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. Mahdī said: "Those who study $kal\bar{a}m$ will inevitably fall prey to heresy (zandaqa)."

Makdisi [Paris 1982], 215-216). As the biographical notices on him indicate, his Qadarī views were combined with strong ascetic tendencies. For more on this important figure, see notes to §26.

¹¹⁴ Nūḥ b. Abī Maryam Abū 'Iṣma al-Marwazī (d. 173/789), known as *al-Jāmi*' (the comprehensive) because of his wide-ranging scholarly interests: "... he studied figh with Abū Ḥanīfa and Ibn Abī Laylā, hadīth with Ḥajjāj b. Artāt, tafsīr with al-Kalbī and Muqātil, and maghāzī with Ibn Ishāq" (Mīzān, IV, 279). During the reign of Manşūr he was made qādī of Marw, a position he held until the end of his life. He seems to have won the respect of leading traditionalists, including Ahmad b. Hanbal, because of his strong criticism of the Jahmīya and his vigorous opposition to kalām (cf., Ibn Qudāma, Dhamm at-Ta'wil, 35). But these same traditionalists were severely critical of his practices in the science of *ḥadīth* and generally regarded his traditions as unreliable. Ibn al-Jawzī, himself, accuses him of deliberate fabrication (Kitāb al-Mawdūcāt, I, 41; II, 60, 76, 291-293; III, 40, 53, 227-228; cf., also his KDM, III, 167-168). One of the traditions he reportedly acknowledged fabricating celebrated the excellent qualities (faḍāʾil) of the Quran "because (Nūḥ explained) I saw people ignoring the Quran and occupying themselves with the study of the fiqh of Abū Ḥanīfa and the maghāzī of Ibn Ishāq" (Mawdū āt, I, 41). His vigorous opposition to rationalist tendencies in early Islam, it seems, was enough to overcome his shortcomings as a traditionist. Cf., Watt, Formative Period, 145-146.

115 Abū Saʿīd ʿAbd ar-Raḥmān b. Mahdī b. Ḥassān al-Baṣrī al-Luʾluʾī (d. 198/813), a mawlā of the Azd, and a leading Iraqī scholar (especially in ḥadīth and fiqh) noted for his highly emotional attacks against the Muʿtazila and their sympathizers (cf., Ḥilya, IX, 7 (1-10). His support of the traditionalist cause took him to Baghdad in 180/796, where he met Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal and joined forces with the traditionalist circles of the city. Aḥmad is said to have been impressed with his knowledge of tradition (particularly in the field of jarḥ wa taʿdīl) and jurisprudence (TB, X, 242-243). Although Ibn Mahdī died forty years before Aḥmad, and well before the appearance of the Ḥanbalī school, Ibn Abī Yaʿlā accords him a biography in his Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila, I, 206-207. For other notices on him, see Shadharāt, I, 355; Ibn Saʿd, VII, 297; and Bidāya, X, 255. This reference to Ibn Mahdī here in KAS is the only mention of him in the whole of the work.

¹¹⁶ On the term *zandaqa* and its participial form *zindīq*, see *SEI*, 659 (Massignon); cf., also Laoust, *La Profession de foi d'Ibn Baṭṭa*, 56, n. 2, and 59, n. 2. The perspective of Massignon and Laoust must now, however, be supplemented by the more recent and more thorough study by M. Chokr, *Zandaqa et Zindiqs en Islam au second siècle de l'Hégire*

24 Muzanī 113 said: "I use Egypt] I went to discuss wi said to me: 'Do you know cathedral mosque of Fustā. Sea of Qulzum where no a question pertaining to j raised certain points that replied with another answagain expressed dissatisfacthim, he would expose the wiff this is jurisprudence wi people introduce such thin which has as its object the concerning Him is tantamo

Damascus 1993). In \$\$26-28 I and "heretical" views that an incited by Ibn al-Jawzi in these Mustazilism as such. Indeed, in attention to the equally hereinanthropomorphist conceptions reason is abandoned or misused calling for is not a rejection of amtude towards it. It is quite the detailed analyses found in that application of reason to religious

Although he was one of compiled a compendium of Shaffi in the systematizing and dissernational the systematizing and dissernational through the systematizing and dissernational through the systematic systemati

A term applied sometimes in of Suez, owing to the fact that a put western banks. Medieval traditions mean the port of Quizum the background of Shāffi's remarks kullim will be destroyed as surely III. 1116-7: Yāqūr, Ma' jum at Balst of medieval sources on Outro

24 Muzanī¹¹⁷ said: "I used to study *kalām* and so when Shāfi'ī came [to Egypt] I went to discuss with him a matter having to do with *kalām*, and he said to me: 'Do you know where you are?' I replied: 'Yes, I am here in the cathedral mosque of Fusṭāṭ.' Then he said to me: 'At times you are on the Sea of Qulzum¹¹⁸ where no ship is ever safe.' He then proceeded to ask me a question pertaining to jurisprudence. I responded to it, whereupon he raised certain points that exposed the inadequacy of my answer. I then replied with another answer, to which he raised further objection and so again expressed dissatisfaction with my answer. Whenever I tried to answer him, he would expose the weakness of my response. Finally, he said to me: 'If this is jurisprudence which is based on the Quran and the Sunna, and people introduce such things into it, how much more dangerous is *kalām*, which has as its object the Lord of the Universe, for disputation (*jidāl*) concerning Him is tantamount to disbelief.' At this I abandoned *kalām* and

(Damascus 1993). In §§26-28 Ibn al-Jawzī provides concrete examples of the "absurd" and "heretical" views that *kalām* can lead to. Although the specific instances of "heresy" cited by Ibn al-Jawzī in these paragraphs concern Mu'tazilīs, he nowhere condemns Mu'tazilīsm as such. Indeed, in the section that follows (beginning with §30), he turns his attention to the equally heretical views of certain traditionalists who championed anthropomorphist conceptions of God. These are examples of what can happen when reason is abandoned or misused. One might conclude from this that what Ibn al-Jawzī is calling for is not a rejection of *kalām per se* but rather a more moderate (and cautious) attitude towards it. It is quite clear from the early paragraphs of *KAS* as well as from the detailed analyses found in chapters II and III, that Ibn al-Jawzī cannot be against the application of reason to religious questions.

117 Although he was one of the most important of Shāfiʿī's Egyptian disciples (he compiled a compendium of Shāfiʿī's legal teaching, the *Mukhtaṣar*, and played a major role in the systematizing and dissemination of the master's views), he was also an independent thinker who did not hesitate to challenge Shāfiʿī when he thought he was wrong (*EI*², VII, 822). As Christopher Melchert points out, al-Muzanī was a former Ḥanafī and continued to consult Ḥanafī sources even after his adoption of a Shāfiʿite perspective (*Formation of the Sunnī Schools of Law*, 7, n. 25). For a list of his extant works along with sources on him, see, *GAS*, I, 492-493.

118 A term applied sometimes to the Red Sea as a whole, and sometimes also to the Gulf of Suez, owing to the fact that a port known as Qulzum (the Greek Clysma) was located on its western banks. Medieval tradition (and perhaps pre-Islamic tradition also) had it that it was near the port of Qulzum that Pharaoh and his armies perished. If this legend is the background of Shāfiʿrʾis remarks here, his point is clear: those who pursue the study of *kalām* will be destroyed as surely and completely as were Pharaoh and his men (*Marāṣid*, III, 1116-7; Yāqūt, *Muʿjam al-Buldān*, I, 344/2, line, 5-6; also cf., *EI*², V, 367-369, for a list of medieval sources on Qulzum and Baḥr Qulzum).

devoted myself to the study of jurisprudence." Ahmad b. Ḥanbal once said: "The best evasive device (hīla) employed by Shāfi'ī was the absence of any desire for, or interest in, kalām; jurisprudence was his only concern." Shāfi'ī said to Rabī': "Do not allow yourself to become preoccupied with kalām. My view regarding those who engage in kalām is that their heads should be covered with scourges and that they should flee to other lands. They should be dealt with like 'Umar did with Şabīgh." According to a different line of transmission, Shāfi'ī is reported to have said: "My advice concerning those who take up the study of kalām is that they should be beaten with palm-branches, carried around on the backs of camels and paraded among the people, and that it should be proclaimed: 'This [fol.7a] is the punishment appropriate for those who abandon the Quran and the Sunna and take up the study of kalām." Shāfi also said: "Whenever I hear someone say that the name (ism) is other than the thing named $(musamm\bar{a})$, I declare that such a person is guilty of heresy (zandaga). 122 If someone were to bequeath his books to another and works of kalām were to be found among them, such things should not form part of the bequest since kalām has nothing to do with knowledge ('ilm)." Shāfi'ī once observed people debating theological questions in accordance with the rules of kalām, and he said: "These people should speak about matters that merit discussion or else they should leave." When Hafs al-Fard 123 said to Shāficī [in the course of a

debate] that the Quran is overtaken you." Shaffi a kalām, they would flee it things from 124 the theologia a person to be in violation ed—is to be preferred to the 25 A man once said to 1

study of *kalām?*" He replication of *kalām?*" He replication counsel (*naṣīḥa*), it is my home Muslim (*muslim salīm*) ev such things as the particle

his other Iraqī teachers was the Hafs come into contact with So the latter's censure (cf. Took Dhahabī reports that Shāff or involvement with kalām).

¹¹⁹ Rabī^c b. Sulaymān b. ʿAbd al-Jabbār Abū Muḥammad al-Miṣrī (d. 270/883), one of Shāfiʿīʾs Egyptian disciples (cf., *Talbīs*, 113). For notices on him see *Muntaṇam*, V, 77; *Ṭabaqāt ash-Shāfi*ʿīya, II, 132-139; and *Shadharāt*, II, 159.

¹²⁰ Ṣabīgh b. 'Isl al-Ḥanẓalī, a young Basran who reportedly was punished by 'Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb for his obsessive questioning of obscure terms used in the Quran. For the various accounts of Ṣabīgh and 'Umar, see Ibn al-Jawzī's *Taʾrīkh 'Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb*, 146-148. Cf., also *Lisān al-ʿArab*, VIII, 439; and Mālik, *al-Muwaṭṭaʾ* (jihād, 19).

¹²¹ Cf., Talbīs, 82-83.

¹²² Cf., $Talb\bar{\imath}s$, 82; al-Bayhaq $\bar{\imath}$, $I^ctiq\bar{a}d$, 22. For more on the question of the ism and the $musamm\bar{a}$, see notes to §25.

¹²³ Very few biographical details about him are known with certainty; his *kunya* is generally given as Abū 'Amr' (though occasionally as Abū Yaḥyā), and he is said to have been a native of Egypt, though neither the date of his birth or death are reported. He went to Basra where he attended the lectures of the great Mu'tazilī theologian Abū'l-Hudhayl, and seems to have considered himself a Mu'tazilī for a time; eventually, however, he turned against his former teacher and wrote a refutation of his ideas (cf., *Fihrist*, 189). As van Ess has shown in his study on Dirār b. 'Amr (*Der Islam*, 44 [1968], 24-30), Ḥafṣ al-Fard came into contact with the ideas of Dirār and was profoundly influenced by him. Among

¹²⁴ Or perhaps "about."

Tritton, *Muslim Theology*, 53 are cited in translation.

to the atom as an indivisible an expression for (entities whether it is part of a whole or e El², II, 493-494 (S. van den Berg II, 219-220, on the term den Dhanani, The Physical Theory Cosmology (Leiden: E. J. Brall

non-atomistic explanation for the by an-Nazzām's doctrine of the of mudākhala (mutual penetration may pass from one point to accept points of space. For a fuller en an-Nazzām, see especially the two of Abū Isḥāq an-Nazzām (Application of Abū Isḥāq an-Nazzām) has shown that it played an input to have the has a

debate] that the Quran is created $(makhl\bar{u}q)$, he replied: "Unbelief has overtaken you." Shāfi'ī added: "If people knew [the dangers that lurk in] $kal\bar{a}m$, they would flee it like they flee from lions. Indeed, I have learned things from 124 the theologians $(ahl\ al-kal\bar{a}m)$ that I had never suspected. For a person to be in violation of what God has forbidden—polytheism excepted—is to be preferred to the study of $kal\bar{a}m$." 125

25 A man once said to Ibn 'Aqīl: "Do you think that I should take up the study of $kal\bar{a}m$?" He replied: "Since religion entails [the giving of] sincere counsel $(nas\bar{\imath}ha)$, it is my honest belief that you are now a sound, well-rounded Muslim $(muslim\ sal\bar{\imath}m)$ even though you have not taken up speculation on such things as the particle (juz^2) , 126 the leap (tafra), 127 the void $(khal\bar{a}^2)$, the

his other Iraqī teachers was the Ḥanafite jurist Abū Yūsuf. Following his return to Egypt, Ḥafṣ come into contact with Shāfiʿī, sometime between 198/814 and 204/820, and earned the latter's censure (cf., *Ṭabaqāt ash-Shāfiʿīya*, II, 98; cf., also *Mīzān*, I, 564, where Dhahabī reports that Shāfiʿī condemned Ḥafṣ as a *kāfir*, apparently on account of his involvement with *kalām*).

¹²⁴ Or perhaps "about."

¹²⁵ Cf., *Talbīs*, 82, where a slightly different version of this saying is given; see also Tritton, *Muslim Theology*, 53, where some of the anti-*kalām* statements attributed to Shāfiʿī are cited in translation.

The term juz^2 , here roughly synonymous with the term jawhar or jawhar fard, refers to the atom as an indivisible entity (cf., Mu^ctamad , 280, 8-9: ومعنى الجرزء عبارة عن بعض [the term particle (or atom) is an expression for (entities) that make up bodies ($ajs\bar{a}m$); in reality ($ajuz^2$) is indivisible whether it is part of a whole or exists by itself]). For more on these terms, see "Djawhar," EI^2 , II, 493-494 (S. van den Bergh); and "Djuz" EI^2 , II, 607-608 (L. Gardet); cf., also EI^2 , II, 219-220, on the term dharra. For the impact of atomism on the natural sciences, see Dhanani, The Physical Theory of Kalām; Atoms, $Space and Void in Basrian Mu^ctazilī Cosmology (Leiden: E. J. Brill. 1994).$

¹²⁷ A theory adopted by the Mu'tazilī theologian an-Nazzām (d. ca. 840) to provide a non-atomistic explanation for the possibility of movement—seemingly rendered impossible by an-Nazzām's doctrine of the infinite divisibility of bodies. Closely linked to the concept of *mudākhala* (mutual penetration of bodies), the theory of the leap maintained that a body may pass from one point to another without having to pass through all of the intermediate points of space. For a fuller explanation of the theory and its place in the thought of an-Nazzām, see especially the two studies by J. van Ess, *Science and Theology: The Case of Abū Isḥāq an-Nazzām* (Ann Arbor 1978), 4-16; and his "Une lecture à rebours de l'histoire du mu'tazilisme," *REI*, 46 (1978), 199ff. Although the theory of the leap came to be associated with the theology of an-Nazzām among later Muslim thinkers, W. Madelung has shown that it played an important role in the thought of the Imāmī theologian, Hishām

plenum $(mal\bar{a}^{2})$, 128 the atom (jawhar), and the accident $({}^{c}arad)$, 129 or such questions as whether an accident can endure over two separate moments of time, 130 whether the power to act (qudra) [exists only] at the time of the

b. al-Ḥakam (d. 795-6), and perhaps for some of the same reasons, since Hishām also rejected atomism (EI^2 , III, 492). It is entirely possible, of course, that the idea of the leap was taken over from Greek sources since, as van Ess has shown, the idea is found already in the work of the late Neoplatonic philosopher, Damascius (van Ess, *Theology and Science*, 15). On objections to the concept of the leap among later Muʿtazilī and Ashʿarī theologians, see Gimaret, *La doctrine dʾal-Ashʿarī*, 54-60. It is interesting that, beginning in the 11th century (if not before), Ḥanbalī theologians took up the question (cf. e.g., Ibn al-Jawzī, Ṣayd al-Khāṭir, 479; and Abū Yaʿlā, Muʿtamad, 39, 280, where the position of the Muʿtazilī theologian, Abūʾl-Hudhayl, is in effect endorsed). For more on this term, see Tritton, *Muslim Theology* (London, 1947), 93; Pines, *Beiträge zur islamischen Atomenlehre* (Berlin 1936), 12, 141; R. Frank, *The Metaphysics of Created Being*, 19; A. Dhanani, *The Physical Theory of Kalām* (Leiden 1994), espec., 176-181; and *KAS*, §\$27-29. For the most definitive account of the thought of Nazzām and its impact on subsequent developments within Muʿtazilsm and medieval Islamic theology as a whole, see J. van Ess, *Theologie und Gesellschaft im 2. und 3. Jahrhundert Hidschra*, III, 296-445.

128 The terms *khalā*² (void) and *malā*² (plenum) here refer to a debate carried on primarily within the Muʿtazilī and Ashʿarī schools, it would seem, over the question of whether there is such a thing as empty, unoccupied space (*khalā*²), or whether the world is to be thought of as completely filled (*malā*²). Without reproducing the details of the debate here, suffice it to say that atomists, within both the Muʿtazilite and Ashʿarite schools, appear to have argued for the theory of the void, that is, that there exists between atoms and bodies interstices, i.e., empty spaces which are susceptible of being occupied by atoms or bodies. This was the position of both al-Jubbāʾī and al-Ashʿarī, for example, and both argued that if there is no void in the universe, no movement or displacement of space would be possible. For a fuller discussion of the question, see Gimaret, *La doctrine d'al-Ashʿarī*, 63-64; Pines, *Beiträge zur islamischen Atomenlehre* (Berlin 1936); and H. Wolfson, *The Philosophy of the Kalam*, 466ff., esp., 492ff. Also see the work by Dhanani referred to in the preceding note, espec., 71-89, where the question of the void is taken up.

 129 On the terms jawhar (atom) and $^{\varsigma}arad$ (accident), see KAS, §5 and notes to the translation.

 130 The question, that is, whether accidents are strictly momentary phenomena or have the capacity to endure $(baq\bar{a}^2)$ a succession of instants, was debated at some length by medieval $mutakallim\bar{u}n$. According to al-Ash'arī $(Maq\bar{a}l\bar{a}t, 358\text{-}360)$ and al-Baghdādī $(U\bar{y}\bar{u}l, 50\text{-}52)$ there was little consensus on this question among the Mu'tazila; some like al-Balkhī and others (especially in the school of Baghdad) took the position that all accidents are strictly momentary phenomena, whereas Abū'l-Hudhayl and al-Jubbā'ī (of the Basran school) held the view that there are different classes of accidents, some momentary in duration and others which have the capacity to survive over time (until driven into non-existence by a contrary accident). Ash'arites, on the other hand, appear to have generally adhered to the view that all accidents exist only for an instant, being created anew in each moment of time

action or is anterior to it, divine essence (dhāt) [or (ism) is the same as the t

cf., al-Baghdadi. Usail. 50, 11 because of their general antique early 11th century some Hanks Abū Ya'lā (d. 458/1066) takes 140, 141, etc.). It is interesting point: accidents come into being more detailed discussion of act La discreme. 75-97, esp., 89-91. 16-23; and Peters. God's Crean

A reference to the positi human action. Murtazilis in ger position that the power to act e and its opposite, that is, entails points, the Murtazila intended to of God's power and one exercis power to act exists only at the t not another, and that this power living associated with the Jahr responsibility. Ash annes adopt human actor, though not the cre a mile in the action and the de-Games surveys the history of the perceptive analysis of the Hank Tames action, see Gimaret, "Th (VATT) 57-178. As Gimaret has to area—as a did on other que

For more on the question important on part III.

CE_§24 where a similar netween the law (name) and the law grammarians and theological was in grammarical circle and mass that is and mass and the divine man are fundamentally a position of how the divine man are manipul positions emerged that is and massaum to be use to one and the same are to one are to on

action or is anterior to it,¹³¹ whether the attributes (sifat) are added to the divine essence (dhat) [or are identical with it],¹³² and whether the name (ism) is the same as the thing named ($musamm\bar{a}$) or other than it.¹³³ I am

(cf., al-Baghdādī, *Uṣūl*, 50, 11). While early Ḥanbalīs generally avoided such questions because of their general antipathy toward *kalām* (cf., the *Ibāna* of Ibn Baṭṭa, e.g.), by the early 11th century some Ḥanbalīs were beginning to take an interest in the question. Thus, Abū Yaʿlā (d. 458/1066) takes up the question repeatedly in his *Muʿtamad* (pp. 30, 36, 140, 141, etc.). It is interesting that Abū Yaʿlā follows the Ashʿarī position on the main point: accidents come into being and cease to exist in each instant of time (cf. 30, 36). For a more detailed discussion of accidents within the context of medieval *kalām*, see Gimaret, *La doctrine*, 75-97, esp., 89-91; Frank, *The Metaphysics of Created Being* (Istanbul 1966), 16-23; and Peters, *God's Created Speech* (Leiden 1976), 123ff.

¹³¹ A reference to the positions taken by Ash arīs and Mu tazilīs on the question of human action. Mu^ctazilīs in general (though there were differences among them) took the position that the power to act exists prior to the act and is a power to perform both an act and its opposite, that is, entails choice on the part of the human actor. By insisting on these points, the Mu^ctazila intended to maintain that the power to act is a human power independent of God's power and one exercised freely. The Ash'arīs, on the other hand, insisted that the power to act exists only at the time of the action, that it is a power to perform that act and not another, and that this power to act is a creation of God. To avoid a radical determinism (long associated with the Jahmīya) and to make a place for some degree of human responsibility, Ash arites adopted the theory of acquisition (kash), according to which the human actor, though not the creator of the power by which he acts, does, nonetheless, play a role in the action and the decision on which it is based (see EI^2 , IV, 692-4, where L. Gardet surveys the history of the concept of kasb in medieval Islam). For an interesting and perceptive analysis of the Ḥanbalī position (or rather positions) on the larger question of human action, see Gimaret, "Théories de l'acte humain dans l'école hanbalite," BEO, 29 (1977), 57-178. As Gimaret has shown, Ḥanbalism underwent a remarkable evolution in this area—as it did on other questions also.

¹³² For more on the question of the divine attributes, see "The Argument of the Work", Introduction, part III.

133 Cf., §24 where a similar statement is attributed to Shāfiʿī. How the relationship between the *ism* (name) and the *musammā* (named) is to be understood was a problem for both grammarians and theologians. For an interesting account of the debate as it played itself out in grammatical circles, see Versteegh's, *Greek Elements in Arabic Linguistic Thinking* (1977), esp., 149-161. By the 10th century there was virtual unanimity among grammarians that *ism* and *musammā* participate in two distinctly different levels of being and, therefore, are fundamentally different. Among theologians, for whom it was primarily a question of how the divine names are to be understood in relation to a transcendent God, three principal positions emerged: 1) that of the Muʿtazila who, along with the grammarians, maintained that *ism* and *musammā* are fundamentally different (God and the names ascribed to Him are not one and the same; to suppose otherwise is to compromise His oneness and transcendence); 2) that of the Ashʿarites, who in general insisted on the identity of *ism* and

certain that the Companions of the Prophet died without knowing of such matters. If you think that the approach of the dialectical theologians (mutakallimūn) is more prudent than that adopted by Abū Bakr and 'Umar, you are in error. The science of kalām has produced doubts among its proponents, and the odors of heresy (ilḥād) emanate from the errors of their doctrines. ¹³⁴ The root cause of all this is that the theologians are not satisfied with [the study of] the Sharīca and its provisions, and so they seek to probe the divine realities themselves; reason, however, is powerless to apprehend the wisdom (ḥikma) to which God alone has access." ¹³⁵

26 [fol.7b] If someone should ask what this kalām is that has been

 $musamm\bar{a}$; and 3) that of the early Ḥanbalīs (and other traditionalists perhaps), who argued that the very debate over ism and $musamm\bar{a}$ represented a heretical innovation and ought to be avoided (Tabaqāt al-Hanābila, II, 280, 4-10). Up until the 4th century, Hanbalīs generally seem to have adhered to the third position. By the mid-5th/11th century, however, and most likely as a result of Abū Ya'lā's influence, some Ḥanbalīs began to nuance their position on this question (perhaps under the influence of the Kullābīya). In his Mu^ctamad (71-70), Abū Ya^clā devotes several lengthy and involved paragraphs to the question, in which he differentiates between two classes of divine names: 1) those that designate the divine essence itself (among which he mentions such terms as Allāh, qadīm, mawjūd, thābit, etc.), and 2) those that "belong" to the divine essence (such as hayy, 'ālim, qādir, khāliq, etc.). Names of the first class are identical with the divine essence, but of those in the second class he says: "They cannot be said to be identical with [God's] essence or other than it" (71, 18-19). In his ' $aq\bar{\imath}da$, Abū Muḥammad at-Tamīmī (d. 488/1095) indicates that Hanbalīs were at variance on this question, but he himself advocates a position that is very close (if not identical) to that of Abū Yaʿlā (Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila, II, 280, 4-10). Versteegh suggests that the Mu^ctazilite and Ash^carite positions reflected a fundamentally different understanding of the term ism: the Muctazila took it in its literal sense to mean the "physical" expression (lafz), i.e., the finite (human) word as uttered, whereas for the Ash^carites the term ism referred to the essence of the thing named. When Ash arites said that the ism and the musammā are one and the same they were saying, in effect, that the essence of the name and the thing named are one and the same (Versteegh, 158-161; cf., Baghdādī, *Uṣūl*, 114ff.; and Bāqillānī, *Tamhīd* [ed. McCarthy, Beirut 1957], 225-236). Reflected in the Mu'tazilite and Ash'arite positions, of course, were their respective views on the Quran.

¹³⁴ See *Talbīs*, 85, where the quotation from Ibn ^cAqīl is found in a slightly different form.

 135 Cf., Makdisi, Ibn ' $Aq\bar{\imath}l$ (1997), 149-150. The idea of a transcendent wisdom that lies beyond the reach of reason—a wisdom which God alone possesses, and in relation to which human reason has only two choices, submission or resistance—is a theme to which Ibn al-Jawz $\bar{\imath}$ returns repeatedly in his $\bar{\imath}$ Ayd al-Khāṭir (see, e.g., 323-326, 364-366, 367-368, 375-376, 478-479).

condemned, our answer is takallimūn) pieced togethe it] from the philosophers developed in the course of is unnecessary and [at best minds of people, and it is as we have noted in state matters. The 'ulamā' main such things by relying on the text], the results of which

¹³th See §23, where a similar ch ness to philosophy is an allegation even by men who were thems al-Ashfarī alleges that Abū'l-Hud Ashfari does not identify the si simply reiterating a charge made mind is difficult to determine from to keep in mind, however, than undergoing something approaching ideas into kalām, thanks in large n Fakhr ad-Din ar-Rāzi (d. 606/12 the works of later theologians, an In a series of important studies, profound impact of Avicenna Ghazzālī's theology; see especial London, 1994 ; and the more d Heine berg. 1992). Earlier, va. A ricemian logic on al-Ghazzāli blamic Theology," 21-50; cf., Islamic Theology." Zeitschrift S DC [1994],1-42). The changes in This century were both method semificant influence on the future

By pawaitir Ibn al-Jawai he camping with its true meaning or in and II. Ibn al-Jawai frequently he does so he has in mind interpre-

condemned, our answer is that it is something which the theologians (mutakallimūn) pieced together out of what they produced, drawing [some of it] from the philosophers and [some of it] from notions which they developed in the course of debate (jidāl) among themselves, most of which is unnecessary and [at best] of fleeting value. [Kalām] creates doubts in the minds of people, and it is often difficult to free them from such thoughts, as we have noted in statements cited from Ibn 'Aqīl and others on such matters. The 'ulamā' maintain that God has given them protection against such things by relying on the apparent meaning of scripture (zawāhir), to which reason itself points, without having to delve beneath the surface [of the text], the results of which are not to be trusted. The evidence of reason

¹³⁶ See §23, where a similar charge is attributed to Abū Ḥanīfa. *Kalām's* alleged indebtedness to philosophy is an allegation that was made frequently by traditionalists, and sometimes even by men who were themselves associated with kalām (cf., Maqālāt, 485, where al-Ash'arī alleges that Abū'l-Hudhayl borrowed elements of his theology from Aristotle—al-Ash'arī does not identify the so-called borrowed ideas). Whether Ibn al-Jawzī is here simply reiterating a charge made by earlier critics of kalām or has something different in mind is difficult to determine from the general nature of his comments above. It is important to keep in mind, however, that the kalām of Ibn al-Jawzī's time was in the process of undergoing something approaching a paradigm shift as a result of the infusion of Avicennian ideas into kalām, thanks in large measure to the efforts of men like al-Ghazzālī (d. 505/1111), Fakhr ad-Dīn ar-Rāzī (d. 606/1209), and al-Baydāwī (d. 685/1286)—a trend continued in the works of later theologians, among them al-Ījī (d. 756/1355) and al-Jurjānī (d. 816/1413). In a series of important studies, Frank has called attention to the subtle but nonetheless profound impact of Avicenna on the cosmological foundations and framework of al-Ghazzālī's theology; see especially his Al-Ghazālī and the Ashcarite School (Durham and London, 1994); and the more detailed analysis in his Creation and the Cosmic System (Heidelberg, 1992). Earlier, van Ess had called attention to the impact of Aristotelian, Avicennian logic on al-Ghazzālī's thought (see especially his "The Logical Structure of Islamic Theology," 21-50; cf., also Sabra, A. I. "Science and Philosophy in Medieval Islamic Theology," Zeitschrift für Geschichte der Arabisch-Islamischen Wissenschaften, IX [1994],1-42). The changes in kalām that were well underway by the beginning of the 12th century were both methodological and substantive, and were destined to have a significant influence on the future of religious thought in Islam.

¹³⁷ By *zawāhir* Ibn al-Jawzī here seems to mean an understanding of the text that is in keeping with its true meaning or intention. As will be seen later in *KAS*, especially in chaps. II and II, Ibn al-Jawzī frequently attacks *zāhir/zawāhir* interpretations of scripture; when he does so he has in mind interpretations that carry with them anthropomorphic implications.

cannot be denied, for by it we have access to a knowledge [of God's existence] that cannot be refuted.

27 Abū Sulaymān b. al-Khaṭṭābī¹³³ said: "Satan has [sometimes] come in the guise of reasonableness, saying to those in whom he perceives a high degree of intelligence and understanding: 'Do not be satisfied with a knowledge of the apparent meaning (zāhir) of the traditions of the Prophet (sunna), for this is the sort of understanding characteristic of the uneducated masses ('āmma).' Satan thus misleads them so as to entangle them in doubt. Then when they consider the Book of God in which they profess to believe, they confuse one thing with another and interpret the text (ta²awwala) in the light of what happens to occur to them [at the moment]. They display contempt for the traditions of the Prophet and distort their contents in the course of transmitting them." 'Amr b. 'Ubayd, '139' for example, used to say:

"If the expression 'May de Preserved Tablet' (Lowb) for his misdeeds?" I 'An Mas' ūd in which the lame spoke the truth given to coheres in the mother's will become an embryo. The and now as well as its farenjoy bliss—is recorded.' said: "If al-A'mash had rehim of having fabricated it have rejected it: if Ibn I refused to accept it; and elfol.8a] these words to

¹³⁸ Ḥamd (or Aḥmad) b. Muḥammad b. Ibrāhīm Abū Sulaymān al-Khaṭṭābī al-Bustī (d. 388/998, according to some in 386/996), a native of Bust (Sijistān) whose learning spanned a number of disciplines (law, tradition, literary criticism and theology). His reputation as a scholar seems in part to have been the result of his ability to integrate fields of learning (especially tradition, literary criticism and theology) that tended increasingly in his day to go their separate ways. His two most influential works (Kitāb Gharīb al-Ḥadīth and his Sharh al-Asmā' al-Husnā) were products of an interdisciplinary effort, and influenced several generations of scholars after him. His Sharḥ al-Asmā', e.g., was one of the principal sources of al-Bayhaqī's Kitāb al-Asmā' wa'ṣ-Ṣifāt. Although they belonged to different schools (al-Khaṭṭābī was a Shāfiʿite and possibly also an Ashʿarite), Ibn al-Jawzī had a great deal of respect for his views and cites him frequently in KAS (see, e.g., §§27, 58, 69, 85, 115, 144, 162, 180, 224, 225). Al-Khaṭṭābī was also a poet (his literary abilities attracted the attention of Tha alibi, among others) and a deeply religious person. For a list of his works and the most important sources on his life and thought, see GAS, I, 210-211; EI^2 , IV, 1131-1132; and above all, Audebert, al- $\mu at \bar{a}b\bar{b}$ et l'inimitabilité du Coran (Damascus 1982), esp., 19-53. Also see Allard, Le problème des attributs divins (Beirut 1965), 351-364; and Gimaret, Images, 46-48.

¹³⁹ A disciple of Ḥasan al-Baṣrī, a defender of Qadarism and a vigorous opponent of predestinarian views that began to gain currency in the generation after Ḥasan. Although claimed by later Muʿtazilīs as the founder of their school (along with Wāṣil b. ʿAṭāʾ), this seems doubtful, since none of the views attributed to him (apart from his Qadarī beliefs) are characteristic of Muʿtazilism or even of proto-Muʿtazilism. As the text cited at the end of §27 indicates, he was openly sceptical of traditions then coming into circulation, which represented the Prophet as defending the notion that what happens on earth, including the sinful acts of human beings, is decreed by God. For more on his attitude toward the newly emerging "science" of ḥadīth, see van Ess, "L'autorité de la tradition prophétique dans la théologie muʿtazilite," in La notion d'autorité au moyen âge, ed. G. Makdisi (Paris 1982), 215-216. On the question of his relationship to the later Muʿtazilī school, see van Ess,

[&]quot;Une lecture à rebours de l'hi Farmative Period, 107ff. For a Suppl., I. 338).

S. 111:1.

That is, if the misdeeds of and therefore decreed by God for his transgressions. One must have been in the lawly multiple (green 'Umar b. 'Uhund Beirut with slight variation, in a must hard (Beirut, 1967), 10, 19. Minim, III, 276, 16-17; and Iem see Watt. Formative Period, 10, 1957), which includes a critical earld commentary.

Although this tradition do I mayyad period (cf., Wan, Form became a favorite in those cure above saying, in its many permitable. Bukhārī, bud al-thologismu, 16: Tirmidhi, qudar 4 (18-Asmā-1886-7, where several)

In the standard versions of while (d. ca. 703), and al-A/man mansmitters (cf., Watt. Formation and Zayd is discussed).

"If the expression 'May the hands of Abū Lahab perish' ¹⁴⁰ is recorded in the 'Preserved Tablet' (*lawḥ maḥfūẓ*), how can Abū Lahab be held responsible for his misdeeds?" ¹⁴¹ ['Amr] also commented on a tradition attributed to Ibn Mas'ūd in which the latter reported: "The Messenger of God who faithfully spoke the truth given to him said to me: 'The individual human being coheres in the mother's womb during a period of forty days; [from] a drop it becomes an embryo. Thereafter the term of its life, its fortune in the here and now as well as its fate in the hereafter—whether it will be damned or enjoy bliss—is recorded." ¹⁴² [In his commentary on this tradition 'Amr] said: "If al-A'mash had reported this tradition to me, I would have accused him of having fabricated it; if Zayd b. Wahb had reported it to me, I would have rejected it; if Ibn Mas'ūd ¹⁴³ had reported it to me, I would have refused to accept it; and even if the Messenger of God himself had spoken [fol.8a] these words to me, I would have said to him: 'They are not

[&]quot;Une lecture à rebours de l'histoire du Mu'tazilism," *REI*, 47 (1979), 56ff.; and Watt, *Formative Period*, 107ff. For a list of medieval sources on him, see *GAS*, I, 597 (cf. *GAL*, Suppl., I, 338).

¹⁴⁰ S. 111:1.

¹⁴¹ That is, if the misdeeds of Abū Lahab had in fact been recorded in the *lawh mahfūz* (and therefore decreed by God) from the beginning, he cannot justly be held responsible for his transgressions. One must conclude then, according to 'Amr, that this text could not have been in the *lawh mahfūz* (cf., *El²*, IV, 371a; and van Ess, *Traditionistische Polemik gegen 'Umar b. 'Ubaid* [Beirut, 1967], 16). The text, cited here by Ibn al-Jawzī, is found, with slight variation, in a number of sources (see, e.g., Dāraquṭnī, *Akhbār 'Umar b. 'Ubayd* (Beirut, 1967), 10, 19; *Ta²rīkh Baghdād*, XII, 170, 20-21; 172, 15-16; 183, 18-19; *Mīzān*, III, 276, 16-17; and Ibn Kathīr, *Bidāya*, X, 81, 22-23). For discussions of this text, see Watt, *Formative Period*, 108; and esp., J. van Ess, *Traditionistische Polemik* (Beirut, 1967), which includes a critical edition of Dāraquṭnī's polemic against 'Amr with a translation and commentary.

¹⁴² Although this tradition does not appear to have come into circulation until late in the Umayyad period (cf., Watt, *Formative Period*, 104; and van Ess, EI^2 , IV, 371a), it gradually became a favorite in those circles that championed a predestinarian point of view. The above saying, in its many permutations, appears in virtually all of the major collections of *ḥadīth:* Bukhārī, *bad² al-khalq*, 6; *anbiyā²* 1; *qadar* 1; Muslim, *qadar* 1; Abū Dāwūd, *sunna*, 16; Tirmidhī, *qadar* 4 (2137); *Musnad*, I, 382, 414, 430, etc. Cf., Bayhaqī, *Kitāb al-Asmā²*, 386-7, where several versions of this tradition are cited and discussed.

¹⁴³ In the standard versions of this tradition, the names Ibn Mas^cūd (d. ca. 652), Zayd b. Wahb (d. ca. 703), and al-A^cmash (d. 765), respectively, appear in the *isnād* as the earliest transmitters (cf., Watt, *Formative Period*, 113, where the relationship between al-A^cmash and Zayd is discussed).

[consistent with] the revelation (sharī^ca) given to you.""¹⁴⁴

28 Abū'l-Hudhayl, 145 one of the *mutakallimūn*, used to assert that the objects of God's creative power $(maqd\bar{u}r\bar{a}t\ al-b\bar{a}ri^2)^{146}$ will arrive at a point

¹⁴⁶ The term *maqdūrāt* has been rendered variously by scholars, but for Abū'l-Hudhayl it generally has the same sense as the terms hawadith and muhdathat, i.e., phenomenal occurrences (entities, events or movements) brought into being by God's power (qudra); they are from Abū'l-Hudhayl's perspective actualizations (objects) of God's power. For a variety of reasons, but primarily, it would seem, to defend the idea of creation ex nihilo against the philosophers, on the one hand, and the dahrīya (materialists), on the other, Abū'l-Hudhayl advanced the view that the maqdūrāt (all things that have ever been or will ever be) form a "whole" (kull, jamī) that must necessarily be finite in terms of both space and time. There must be a last $maqd\bar{u}r$ if we are to suppose that there was a first (as the Quranic doctrine of creation requires); when the last maqdur has been actualized all movement will cease as will the creation of new beings. Abū'l-Hudhayl postulated that this would happen sometime in the hereafter, at which time all movement (activity) in Paradise and Hell would cease, and the inhabitants of each would be reduced to a state of permanent quiescence (cf., Talbīs, 83, 12-14; Maqālāt, 163, 13-14; 475, 1-2; 485, 11-14; and al-Khayyāt, al-Intiṣār, 12, 8-10). Despite the good intentions behind the theory, it was perceived as problematic almost from the beginning—partly because of the dubious conclusions Abū'l-Hudhayl drew from it, but primarily because it appeared to impose limits on God's power. This was the criticism levelled by theologians such as al-Baghdādī (*Uṣūl*, 50f., 94, 238), and it appears to be the central problem for Ibn al-Jawzī (in addition to §§28 and 29, cf., also his Talbīs, esp., 83, 9-19). Because of the problems which attended the theory, it was soon abandoned by Muctazilīs themselves (even by some of Abū'l-Hudhayl's own students, among them Shaḥḥām and Jafar b. Ḥarb), and there are reports that Abū'l-Hudhayl himself eventually abandoned it, although van Ess is convinced that he did not do so, and produces some evidence indicating that the theory survived in isolated pockets within the school for several generations. For a fuller discussion of Abū'l-Hudhayl's views on the maqdūrāt, see R.M. Frank's important studies, "The Divine Attributes According to the Teaching of Abū'l-Hudhayl," Muséon, 82 (1969), 451-506, esp., 473-490; and The Metaphysics of Created Being According to Abū'l-Hudhayl al-Allāf (Istanbul 1966), 22ff.; as well as the study by van Ess, "Abu l-Hudhayl in Contact: The Genesis of an Anecdote," Islamic Theology and Philosophy, (Albany 1984), 13-30; and his Theologie und Gesellschaft im 2.

in time when neither He n if one of the inhabitants that time had arrived—th The inhabitants of Paradis and the tormenting of the

29 [The words of] this scriptural texts, including ever]." Had [Abū'l-Hudh that contingent entities (hinto existence (wujūd); rat a succession of instants (hi cannot be termed "finite" terminated; the power (qui reach its limit) since He entities (makhlūqāt) and a tingent entities] all at once

¹⁴⁴ Cf., *Ta*³*rīkh Baghdād*, XII, 172, 5-8; and *Mīzān*, III, 278, 17-19.

¹⁴⁵ Abū'l-Hudhayl Muḥammad b. Hudhayl al-ʿAllāf (d. 226/840), one of the most original and influential members of the early Muʿtazilī school of Basra. He is credited, e.g., with the introduction of atomism into Islamic theology, a doctrine that was to become the dominant view not only within the Muʿtazilī school but also in both Ashʿarism and in non-Ashʿarite traditionalist *kalām* down to the end of the Middle Ages. For a masterful account of what is currently known of the life and thought of Abū'l-Hudhayl in its most important aspects, see J. van Ess, *Theologie und Gesellschaft im 2. und 3. Jahrhundert Hidschra*, III, 209-296; for a much briefer, though by now dated, summary, see the article on him by Nyberg, *El*², I, 127-129. *GAS*, I, 617-618, contains a list of the most important medieval sources on him.

and 3. Jahrhundert Hissolms. It mought, see van Ess. "Une leca 216-240; and the article by Nyllife and thought, see GAS, I. 61

The punishment of Hell experienced at the moment when fixed, and the inhabitants of B Shahrastāni, Milal [Cairo 1910] Unil. 94, 14-16; and Ibn Taym movement will have ceased. So punishment frozen in time, if a distinguished from that of Jahamuhilated so that in the end on

⁻ S. 16:97; cf., Zād al-Masi

Since the word here in temative reading.

If God had created all of past (since things obviously decreasive activity would be a thing be finite in terms of time or deactivity as being eternal (with have ceased, and God's power to further actualizations of the speaks of the infinite in this p

in time when neither He nor any one else will have power over them so that if one of the inhabitants of Paradise were to reach out to take a fig—and that time had arrived—the Creator would be unable to secure it for him. The inhabitants of Paradise will become motionless, being unable to move, and the tormenting of the inhabitants of Hell will cease. 147

29 [The words of] this foolish man are in conflict with a number of scriptural texts, including the verse: "What is with God will remain [forever]." Had [Abū'l-Hudhayl] reflected on this matter he would have realized that contingent entities (hawadith) which do not yet exist have not entered into existence ($wuj\bar{u}d$); rather they are brought into being (one by one) over a succession of instants (halan fa-halan). What has not entered into existence cannot be termed "finite" (mutanahiyan) until it has been in existence and terminated; the power (qudra) of God, however, cannot come to an end (or reach its limit) since He has not yet created the totality of contingent entities ($makhl\bar{u}q\bar{a}t$) and abrogated His $maqd\bar{u}r\bar{a}t$, for had He created [contingent entities] all at once (dafan) they would be limited [in duration].

und 3. Jahrhundert Hidschra, III, 255ff. For a more general introduction to Abū'l-Hudhayl's thought, see van Ess, "Une lecture à rebours de l'histoire du mu^ctazilisme," *REI*, 46 (1978), 216-240; and the article by Nyberg in EI^2 , I, 127-129. For a list of primary sources on his life and thought, see *GAS*, I, 617-618; and *GAL*, Suppl., I, 338.

¹⁴⁷ The punishment of Hell will not literally come to an end; rather the punishment experienced at the moment when the last *maqdūr* has been realized will become permanently fixed, and the inhabitants of Hell will remain in that condition presumably for ever (cf., Shahrastānī, *Milal* [Cairo 1910], I, 73, 3-5; Ibn Ḥazm, *Fiṣal*, IV, 83, 21-84, 4; al-Baghdādī, *Uṣūl*, 94, 14-16; and Ibn Taymīya, *Minhāj*, I, 310-311). What will be different is that all movement will have ceased. Strictly speaking then, punishment will continue but it will be punishment frozen in time, if that is possible to conceive. Abū'l-Hudhayl's view is to be distinguished from that of Jahm b. Ṣafwān, who held that the *maqdūrāt* will be totally annihilated so that in the end only God will remain (cf. *Maqālāt*, 148, 11-149, 5).

¹⁴⁸ S. 16:97; cf., Zād al-Masīr, IV, 488.

¹⁴⁹ Since the word here in the MS is blurred, *mutanāhiyan* should be regarded as a tentative reading.

¹⁵⁰ If God had created all of them at once that event would necessarily have been in the past (since things obviously do exist); hence, from the vantage point of the present, His creative activity would be a thing of the past, and the <code>makhlūqāt/maqdūrāt</code> would necessarily be finite in terms of time or duration. One could not in that case speak of God's creative activity as being eternal (without end). The <code>maqdūrāt</code> would then be finite because they have ceased, and God's power (<code>qudra</code>) would be limited in the sense that there would be no further actualizations of that power. This leads me to conclude that when Ibn al-Jawzī speaks of the infinite in this paragraph it is an infinity of time or duration, not one of

THE PLACE (

Thus [Abū'l-Hudhayl's] belief that God's $maqd\bar{u}r\bar{a}t$ are finite is worse than unbelief (kufr), for anyone who holds that God's $maqd\bar{u}r\bar{a}t$ are subject to limitations must also hold that His knowledge (cilm), and even His essence $(dh\bar{a}t)$, are finite. Indeed, al-Jubbā' \bar{a} 1 himself wrote a book in which he declared Abū'l-Hudhayl to be an infidel $(k\bar{a}fir)$.

Thumāma¹⁵³ once observed people rushing [to the mosque] to perform the Friday prayers and he said: "Look at these cattle! What has this Arab, that is, the Messenger of God, done to the people?" ¹⁵⁴ The Mu^ctazilīs of Baghdad maintained that anyone who steals so much as a grain of wheat and dies without having repented will remain in Hell forever. ¹⁵⁵ Hishām b. al-Ha-

number, that he has in mind. Indeed, the question of number does not seem to figure in his response to Abū'l-Hudhayl. Since the latter's notion of the infinite concerned primarily the question of number, Ibn al-Jawzī's response must be judged less than adequate. For Ibn Taymīya's assessment of the Hudhaylian doctrine of the *maqdūrāt*, see his *Minhāj*, I, 310-311; cf., also 'Abd al-Qādir al-Jīlānī's *Ghunya*, 92, 23ff.

figure in the Basran branch of the Muʿtazila in the period following the disestablishment of the school by al-Mutawakkil. His principle teacher in *kalām*, Abū Yaʿqūb ash-Shaḥhām, was a disciple of Abūʾl-Hudhayl, and al-Jubbāʾī counted among his students a number of influential Muʿtazilīs, including al-Ashʿarī himself for a time. Since none of his many works are extant, his views can be known only through the writings of his critics (al-Ashʿarī, e.g.) or those who considered him their spiritual master ('Abd al-Jabbār) and who reproduced his teaching in their various writings. It is clear that al-Jubbāʾī was a powerful, systematic thinker, and his teaching was a major factor in the subsequent development of theology in medieval Islam, not only among the Muʿtazila (cf., Frank, "Remarks on the Early Development of the *Kalām*," *Atti del terzo congresso di studi arabi e islamici* [Naples 1967], 315-329; and Gimaret, D. "Matériaux pour un bibliographie des Gubbāʾī", *Journal Asiatique*, 264 [1976], 277-332). For more on him, see the references in the article by L. Gardet, *El*², 569-570; and *GAS*, I, 621-622.

 152 Cf., Farq (English trans., 125), where Baghdādī states that al-Jubbā'ī wrote a work in which he condemned Abū'l-Hudhayl as an unbeliever ($k\bar{a}fir$). For Murdār's criticism of Abū'l-Hudhayl's views on the $maqd\bar{u}r\bar{a}t$, see EI^2 , VII, 604b.

 153 Thumāma b. Ashras Abū Maʻn an-Numayrī (d. 213/828), an influential member of the Muʻtazilī school of Baghdad, a close associate of al-Ma'mūn, and one of the teachers of al-Jāḥiz. Although ascetic tendencies were strong within the school of Baghdad, Thumāma was known for his enjoyment of the "good" life and his association with men of high station. For a summary biography with a list of the medieval sources on him, see *GAS*, I, 615-616.

150 An early Imāmī theologi tendencies, exerted an importan them an-Nazzām. For a skeuch o art, by W. Madelung on him in

more recent research, see J. van

bodies resemble each och

¹⁵⁴ Cf., Ibn Qutayba, *Ta'wīl Mukhtalif al-Ḥadīth*, 6.

¹⁵⁵ Cf., *Manāqib*, 168, 17; and al-Jīlānī, *Ghunya*, 93, 13-14.

Hidschra. I. 349-379. ⁵⁷ Ahmad b. Yaḥyā b. Isbāq 99] Loriginally a member of the Manichean Abū Isā al-Warrāg Ibn al-Jawzi, embraced a numbe scepticism regarding the revealed much as its content that angered was worse than Iblis himself: et with respect (Managam, VL 10 the case of Ibn ar-Rawandi may w him in Kitāb Muntapam (VI. Ramer. "Ibn al-Gauzis Bernem un in Beimäge zur Erschliessung d [1986], 51-67). There Ibn al-Jan ar-Rāwandī and cites a number a-JuboFi, his son Abū Hāshim Mir tazilism (cf. also Tabir, 11) according to van Ess, may have a in his life and his theological vi E en the date of his death has h from 250 to 300AH. Among th ar-Ri- andi, especially importa S.emergeschichte," RSO, 14 [19] Im al-Rawendi, deux reprouves Ef. EF. III. 905-906 t J. van Es 17 (1987/89), 5-25 his "Une 1875 163-191 t and the study Enils al-Zumarrad," JAOS, 114 37-86. J. Van Ess maintains (on I'm ir-Riwandi was not the day sources, but rather more likely ; women launched against him is scentical of van Ess's reading ar-12 and is essentially correct sources on line ar-Riwandi, that of the ar-Rivermin and his place

kam¹⁵⁶ used to teach that God should be conceived of as a body and that bodies resemble each other. As for Ibn ar-Rāwandī, 157 nothing absorbed

 $^{^{156}}$ An early Imāmī theologian (d. 179/795) who, despite certain anthropomorphist tendencies, exerted an important influence on a number of early Mu^ctazilī thinkers, among them an-Nazzām. For a sketch of his life and a summary of his teaching, see the excellent art. by W. Madelung on him in EI^2 , III, 496-498; for a more detailed treatment reflecting more recent research, see J. van Ess, *Theologie und Gesellschaft im 2. und 3. Jahrhundert Hidschra*, I, 349-379.

¹⁵⁷ Aḥmad b. Yaḥyā b. Isḥāq Abū'l-Ḥusayn ar-Rāwandī (d. 298 or 310 [*Muntaẓam*, VI, 99]), originally a member of the Mu'tazilī school who, allegedly under the influence of the Manichean Abū 'Isā al-Warrāq, abandoned the teachings of the school and, according to Ibn al-Jawzī, embraced a number of dangerous heretical views combined with a systematic scepticism regarding the revealed religions. It was the tone of Ibn ar-Rāwandī's critique as much as its content that angered Ibn al-Jawzī and explains his remark that Ibn ar-Rāwandī was worse than Iblīs himself: even though Iblīs disobeyed God, he at least addressed Him with respect (Muntazām, VI, 102, 15-18). The importance which Ibn al-Jawzī attached to the case of Ibn ar-Rāwandī may be seen in the unusually long biographical notice devoted to him in Kitāb Muntazam (VI, 99-105; for a translation of Ibn al-Jawzī's notice, see H. Ritter, "Ibn al-Ğauzīs Bericht über Ibn ar-Rēwendī," Der Islam, 19 [1931], 1-17; reprinted in Beiträge zur Erschliessung der Arabischen Handschriften in Istanbul und Anatolien, II [1986], 51-67). There Ibn al-Jawzī outlines some of the more dangerous views held by Ibn ar-Rāwandī and cites a number of refutations of him, all by Mu'tazilī scholars: Abū 'Alī al-Jubbā'i, his son Abū Hāshim, and Abū'l-Ḥusayn al-Khayyāt, the Baghdādī historian of Mu'tazilism (cf. also Talbīs, 111-112). Because none of Ibn ar-Rāwandī's works (which, according to van Ess, may have numbered as many as a hundred) are extant, the reconstruction of his life and his theological views by modern scholarship has progressed rather slowly. Even the date of his death has been the subject of considerable debate, with views ranging from 250 to 300AH. Among the contributions of modern scholarship to the study of Ibn ar-Rāwandī, especially important are the writings of P. Kraus ("Beiträge zur islamischen Ketzergeschichte," RSO, 14 [1934], 93-129, 335-379); H. S. Nyberg ("CAmr Ibn 'Ubaid et Ibn al-Rawendi, deux reprouvés," Classicisme et declin [Paris 1957], 125-136); G. Vajda (cf., EI^2 , III, 905-906); J. van Ess ("Ibn ar-Rewandī, or the Making of an Image," al-Abhath, 27 [1987/89], 5-25); his "Une Lecture à rebours de l'histoire du mu'tazilisme," REI, 46 [1878], 163-191); and the study by S. Stroumsa, "The Blinding Emerald: Ibn al-Rāwandī's Kitāb al-Zumurrud," JAOS, 114 (1994), 163-185; and her Freethinkers of Medieval Islam, 37-86. J. van Ess maintains (on the basis of a set of carefully constructed arguments) that Ibn ar-Rāwandī was not the dangerous heretic that he is made out to be in our medieval sources, but rather more likely a questioning believer who became the victim of a vicious campaign launched against him by the Mu^ctazila of Baghdad. Stroumsa, on the other hand, is sceptical of van Ess's reading of the sources and argues that the traditional view of Ibn ar-Rāwandī is essentially correct. It is perhaps not entirely surprising, given the state of our sources on Ibn ar-Rāwandī, that modern scholarship should arrive at rather different views of Ibn ar-Rāwandī and his place in the intellectual history of medieval Islam. For a useful

more of his time than reproaching the Creator. Such also was the case of Abū'l-'Alā' al-Ma'arrī, 158 as is [fol.8b] evident from the following lines:

Commandments there are which some people take lightly, Yet no one knows whom destruction will befall.

The Book of Muḥammad, and the Book of Moses,

The Gospel of Mary's Son and the Psalms of David. 159

In another poem he said (may God punish him!):

The vicissitudes of time wrench lovers from each other;
O God, judge between that and me!
Do you forbid (to humankind) the premeditated taking of life,
While You Yourself dispatch two angels to seize it?
You claim there will be a second chance in the hereafter.
How much better it would be to escape both states!¹⁶⁰

survey of the medieval Arabic sources on Ibn ar-Rāwandī, see GAS, I, 620-621.

[Anthrope or

30 I have observed that s positions on matters of m are three persons, namel Qādī [Abū Yaslā]. and I writing and whose books they have descended to the Itexts from the Ouran and in accordance with the recu Thus when they learn the they conclude that God ha which [they say is an attri two eves, a mouth, an u prostration (subuhāt), two chest and a thigh, two le reference to a head." Th and that a person may ad them even say that [God] advancing views that con meral interpretation of the they go on to apply the term

¹⁵⁸ Cf., *Talbīs*, 111-112, where Ibn al-Jawzī lumps the cases of Ibn ar-Rāwandī and al-Maʿarrī together; see also *Muntaẓam*, VIII, 185, where Abū Ḥayyān at-Tawḥīdī is added to the list of reprobates. The notice in the *Muntaẓam* is particularly scathing in its condemnation of Abū'l-ʿAlāʾ al-Maʿarrī; apart from his vegetarianism, his sympathy for the plight of animals and his ascetic lifestyle, which Ibn al-Jawzī notes with some interest, the poet is accused of harboring severe doubts concerning a number of doctrines central to Islam (prophecy, the revealed character of the Quran, resurrection and the afterlife) and concealing a scepticism, even unbelief, under the cover of pious-sounding language. Ibn al-Jawzī was not alone in his views, as Laoust points out in his important study of the poet ("La vie et la philosophie d'Abū-l-ʿAlāʾ al-Maʿarrī," *BEO*, 10 [1944-45], 136-138). For a critical discussion of the views held by Abū'l-ʿAlāʾ, see R. Nicholson, *Studies in Islamic Poetry* (Cambridge 1921), esp., ch. 2; and H. Laoust, "La vie et la philosophie d'Abū'l-ʿAlāʾ al-Maʿarrī," *BEO*, 10 (1944-45), 119-156. Smoor's article on him in *El²*, V, 927-935, provides an overview of his life and his literary production (cf., also *GAL*, I, 254-255; and Suppl. I, 449-454).

¹⁵⁹ The following line, not included by Ibn al-Jawzī, reads: "No nation gave heed to their bans, [and so] their wisdom perished in vain." Cf., Nicholson, *Studies in Islamic Poetry* (Cambridge 1921), 215, where additional lines are cited; also cf., *Muntazam*, VIII, 187; and Taha Husayn, *Ta*^c*rīf al-Qudamā*², 24, 57, 110, 146, 193, 306, 324, 330. For H. Laoust's rendering of these lines, see his "La vie et la philosophie d'Abū'l-ʿAlā̄² al-Maʿarrī," *BEO*, 10 (1944-45), 142.

¹⁶⁰ That is, by never having been born. According to Smoor, al-Ma'arrī regarded the act of procreation as itself a sin (El^2 , V, 930b). In his Muntazam (VIII, 188) Ibn al-Jawzī prefaces the above lines (which he says he took from the history of Abū'l-Ḥasan Muḥammad b. Hilāl b. Muḥsin aṣ-Ṣābi') with the remark: "I mention these lines of poetry only to demonstrate this man's unbelief (kufr)" (cf., $Ta^cr\bar{t}f$ al-Qudamā', 25, 56, 116, 145, 193, 283, 291, and 306).

That is, usul ad-din, vir...
rests. As Ibn al-Jawzi insists n
must be the principle guide.

On Ibn Hamid, see motes t

See notes to §37.

see notes to §37.

[&]quot;Cf.. §32 where the charg al-'Althi (d. 634) preserved in accused of bringing shame on t المائلة المائلة was th embrace of ta'wil and his unde charge of bringing shame on th my opposing factions within the

That is, an attribute over a

CL. Gumaret, Image, 54-55

[Anthropomorphist Tendencies in the Ḥanbalī School]

30 I have observed that some members of the [Ḥanbalī] school have taken positions on matters of $usull^{161}$ that are not acceptable. Among them there are three persons, namely, Abū 'Abd Allāh b. Ḥāmid,162 his disciple the Qādī [Abū Yaclā], 163 and Ibn Zāghūnī, 164 who have detailed [their views] in writing and whose books have brought shame on the school.165 In my view they have descended to the level of the vulgar masses ('awāmm') by interpreting [texts from the Quran and the hadīth bearing on] the divine attributes (sifāt) in accordance with the requirements of sense perception ('alā muqtaḍā'l-ḥiss). _ Thus when they learn that God created Adam in his own "form" (sūra), they conclude that God has a form [like ours?] consisting of a face (wajh), which [they say is an attribute] added to His essence $(z\bar{a}'id \, ^cal\bar{a}'dh - dh\bar{a}t)$, 166 two eyes, a mouth, an uvula, molars, a forehead bearing the marks of prostration (subuḥāt), two hands, fingers—even a little finger and a thumb—a chest and a thigh, two legs and two feet, but they add: "We know of no reference to a head." They also assert that God can touch and be touched, and that a person may actually draw near to the divine essence. Some of them even say that [God] breathes. They delight the uneducated public by advancing views that contravene the canons of reason. Having adopted a literal interpretation of the divine names (asmā') and the attributes (sifāt) they go on to apply the term "attribute" [to both of them] indiscriminately—an

¹⁶¹ That is, $u\bar{sul}$ ad- $d\bar{u}n$, viz., those foundational theological principles on which religion rests. As Ibn al-Jawzī insists repeatedly in *KAS*, these are matters in which reason ('aql) must be the principle guide.

¹⁶² On Ibn Ḥāmid, see notes to §14.

¹⁶³ See notes to §37.

¹⁶⁴ See notes to §37.

 $^{^{165}}$ Cf., §32 where the charge is repeated. As we learn from the $Ris\bar{a}la$ of Abū'l-Faḍl al-ʿAlthī (d. 634) preserved in Ibn Rajab's Dhayl (II, 210, 12), Ibn al-Jawzī too was accused of bringing shame on the school through the views he championed (والقد سوُدت) was the way al-ʿAlthī put it [see Appendix, §17]), particularly his embrace of $ta^3w\bar{l}$ and his understanding of the divine attributes. It would appear that the charge of bringing shame on the school was one used fairly commonly in the 12th century by opposing factions within the school.

¹⁶⁶ That is, an attribute over and above the divine essence and therefore separate from it.

¹⁶⁷ Cf., Gimaret, *Image*, 54-55.

innovative method of designation for which there is no evidence (dalīl) in scripture or in reason. 168 They ignore the scriptural texts (nusūs) that discourage a literalistic interpretation (zawāhir) in favor of modes of representation $(ma^c \bar{a}n\bar{i})$ that are necessary to God's [oneness and transcendence] and [require] the negation of those references $(sim\bar{a}t)^{169}$ which, when taken literally, imply origination in time (hudūth). They are not satisfied to call such, "an attribute of action" (sifat fiel) but insist on designating it "an attribute of essence" (sifat dhāt). Then, having declared them to be such, they refuse to interpret them along lines required by literary usage, in which case the expression "hand [of God]" should be taken to mean His power (qudra) or blessing $(ni^c ma)$; [references to His] "arriving" $(maj\bar{v})$ or "coming" $(ity\bar{a}n)$ as His kindness (birr) or His benevolence (lutf), and [references to His] "thigh" (sāq) as His might (shidda). [fol.9a] Rather, they say: "We interpret such expressions literally ('alā zāhir)." However, since the literal meaning takes human qualities ($nu^c\bar{u}t$ $al-\bar{a}dam\bar{v}\bar{v}n$) as its point of reference, the expression may be construed in its concrete, literal sense (*calā hagīgatihi*) only when that is possible;¹⁷⁰ if that is not possible then it ought to be construed metaphorically ('ala majāz). [In reality,] they are steeped in [the methods] of anthropomorphism (tashbīh), 171 their following having come [largely] from the uneducated classes ('awāmm). 172

31 I have thus [thought it necessary to] expose the errors of both those who follow and those who are followed [in these matters]. I say to my fellow Ḥanbalīs: "You are proponents of scripture and tradition (naql wa $ittib\bar{a}^c$), and your distinguished $im\bar{a}m$, Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal, used to say when he was being scourged [on account of his beliefs]: 'How can I say what has

not been said [before]. heretical doctrines into hi matters as the recitation // (girdfu) and what is read [Ahmad] taught that God attributes of essence On what grounds do we matters? Some of you have am attribute added to His are in conflict with estab oppose innovation (bid'a). be interpreted literally (godine). [alleged to be on only acceptable method is appear in the text [without to be added.

32 "If you had understoo would not have fallen into God (rain Allah)." Christaffa of God which entere God sits on the Throne in the realm of the physical ser

 $^{^{168}}$ For more on the problem of terminological confusion, see §33, item 1 and notes to the translation.

¹⁶⁹ By *simāt* Ibn al-Jawzī appears to mean those "attributes" mentioned above which, if taken literally, would imply that God is a corporeal being.

¹⁷⁰ Or "acceptable" in the sense that it is compatible with God's essential nature, including above all His oneness and His transcendence.

¹⁷¹ At the end of this sentence, *DST* (6) and BA, 20a insert the following: "But they resent the application of [the term *tashbīh*] to them and they say: 'We are Ahl as-Sunna'. Their statements, however, are clearly anthropomorphist in character (وكالمهم صريح في)."

¹⁷² See D. Gimaret, *Dieu à l'image de l'homme* (Paris 1997), 54-55, where parts of this paragraph are translated.

That is, by the early authori

On the analogous question mamed), see notes to §25 where On the question of his also the art. "Bid a" in El.", L. 1. mamples one, for which the English

That is, between the literally arromach allegedly advocated by

Ci., S. 4: 171. For a discutive line al-Jawzi is based on comline" or corporealist in manure L. s 133 and 43, where the question

In the Christian view, as req

not been said [before]?'173 Be on your guard, therefore, lest you introduce heretical doctrines into his teaching! Did [Ahmad] ever discourse on such matters as the recitation ($til\bar{a}wa$) and what is recited ($matl\bar{u}w$), the reading $(qir\bar{a}^{2}a)$ and what is read $(maqr\bar{u}^{2})$?¹⁷⁴ Has anyone ever reported to you that [Aḥmad] taught that God's sitting on the Throne (istiwā) is one of the attributes of essence (sifāt adh-dhāt) or an attribute of action (sifāt al-fi^cl)? On what grounds do you justify venturing into [a discussion of] such matters? Some of you have stated that a 'hand' is to be ascribed to God as an attribute added to His essence (zā'ida 'alā'dh-dhāt). All such statements are in conflict with established norms and are repugnant to those who oppose innovation (bid^ca). ¹⁷⁵ You insist that the traditions of the Prophet are to be interpreted literally ('alā zāhir), but the literal meaning of 'foot' (qadam), [alleged to be one of the divine attributes], is 'limb' (jāriha). The only acceptable method is to allow [the words of scripture] to stand as they appear in the text [without comment]. They are to be recited, but nothing is to be added.

32 "If you had understood the difference between the two positions, ¹⁷⁶ you would not have fallen into error. When it is said that Jesus is the spirit of God $(r\bar{u}h, All\bar{a}h)$, ¹⁷⁷ Christians maintain that 'spirit' $(r\bar{u}h)$ is an attribute (sifa) of God which entered into Mary. ¹⁷⁸ [Likewise] those who affirm that God sits on the Throne in His essence $(bi\text{-}dh\bar{a}tihi)$ have relegated Him to the realm of the physical senses $(hissiy\bar{a}t)$. It is essential that due consideration

 $^{^{173}}$ That is, by the early authorities of the Community: the Prophet, Companions, Followers, etc.

¹⁷⁴ On the analogous question of the ism (the name) versus the $musamm\bar{a}$ (the thing named), see notes to §25 where the Ḥanbalī position is discussed.

¹⁷⁵ On the question of bid^ca , see Laoust, La profession de foi d'Ibn Batta, 8, n. 1. Cf., also the art. " Bid^ca " in El^2 , I, 1199. It should be noted here that the question of bid^ca is a complex one, for which the English rendering above (innovation) is not an entirely adequate one.

¹⁷⁶ That is, between the literalist position and (what might be called) the non-interventionist approach allegedly advocated by Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal.

 $^{^{177}}$ Cf., S. 4: 171. For a discussion of this text in relation to the Christian claim (which for Ibn al-Jawzī is based on conceptions rooted in sense experience and, therefore, "materialist" or corporealist in nature), see Ibn al-Jawzī's $Z\bar{a}d$ al-Masīr, II, 260-262; cf. also KAS, §§33 and 43, where the question of $r\bar{u}h$ is revisited.

¹⁷⁸ In the Christian view, as represented here, "spirit" is understood as a physical substance (cf., preceding note).

be given to what can be established by the principle of reason, for it is through this latter that we can know [that] the Creator [exists] and can ascertain Him to be eternal. Use reason, then, to shield God from those finite, corporeal qualities (tashbīh aw tajsīm) that are alien to His being, and permit the traditions of the Prophet to stand exactly as you find them, without adding to or subtracting from them! If you had said: 'We recite them [without comment],' no one would have censured you. It is your interpretation of them in a literalistic fashion ('alā'z-zāhir') alone that is objectionable. Refrain from insinuating into the doctrine of [Aḥmad], our pious ancestor, what he never taught! Instead you have brought shame and dishonor to the school, so much so that the only thing that is now said of a Ḥanbalī is that he is an anthropomorphist (mujassim). Not only that, but you have embellished your doctrine with a narrowly partisan devotion ('aṣabīya) to Yazīd [b. Mu'āwiya] even though you know quite well [fol.9b] that the founder of the school actually permitted the cursing [of Yazīd]. 180

Abū Muḥammad at-Tamīn had brought such shame of until the day of resurrection

33 The errors of the auseven categories. (1) The

¹⁷⁹ Ibn al-Jawzī reports in his *Muntaṣam* (IX, 4, 15-19) that al-Bakrī, an Ashʿarite preacher who was active in Baghdad in 475/1082, stated, apparently in one of his sermons, that some Ḥanbalīs held the view that God even has a penis. Although Ibn al-Jawzī dismisses the charge as false, it does indicate the kind of reputation Ḥanbalīs had in some quarters.

¹⁸⁰ Ibn Rajab reports that the Ḥanbalī school of Baghdad was indeed divided over the question of Yazīd b. Mu'āwiya (see Dhayl, I, 354-358, but esp., 356-357; also Tabaqāt al-Ḥanābila, II, 273-10-15, where Abū Muḥammad at-Tamīmī [d. 488/1095] confirms the observations of Ibn Rajab). According to Ibn Rajab, the Ḥanbalī traditionist Abd al-Mughīth b. Zuhayr (d. 583/1187) was an outspoken defender of Yazīd, but Ibn Rajab also notes that 'Abd al-Mughīth was not alone among Ḥanbalīs in his defense of Yazīd; among others, he mentions $Ab\bar{u}$ 'l-Ḥusayn b. $Ab\bar{\iota}$ Yaʻlā (d. 526) and a certain $Ab\bar{u}$ 'l-Ḥasan b. al-Bannā' who died in 484 (Dhayl, I, 356, and Muntazam, IX, 59). Undoubtedly there were others, possibly including Ibn Abī Yaʿlā's father, Abū Yaʿlā. Ibn Rajab (who bases himself largely on the now lost chronicle of Ibn al-Qaṭīʿī) reports that Ibn al-Jawzī was one of the leaders of the anti-Yazīd faction and even authored a work on the question entitled ar-Radd $^cal\bar{a}$ al-Mutacaṣṣib al-Anīd al-Mānic Man Dhamm al-Yazīd (Dhayl, I, 356, 6; GAL, I, 503, no. 16; and 'Alwajī, Mu'allafāt Ibn al-Jawzī [Baghdad 1965], 103) in which he detailed the case against Yazīd. That Ibn al-Jawzī's position was well known among his contemporaries is evident from the frequent references to it in medieval chronicles (cf., e.g., Ibn Athīr, Kāmil, XI, 562-563 [sub anno 583]; and Ibn Kathīr, Bidāya, XII, 350). It is not surprising that Ibn 'Aqīl too was a member of the anti-Yazīd camp (cf., G. Makdisi, Ibn 'Aqīl [1997], 176). G. Makdisi notes that behind the anti-Yazīd stance was an abiding affection for Alī and especially Husayn. Between these two positions there was a third group of Hanbalīs who refused to take sides over this question. In his 'aqīda, Abū Muḥammad at-Tamīmī (d. 488/1095), while conceding that a case can be made for both positions, demands that

partisan debate over this question community. For a statement of preserved in *Tabaqāt al-Haman* Barbahārī is cited as supporting see Goldziher. *ZDMG*. 53 1885 Studies. II. 96, n.6.

^{488/1095),} an influential and whom Ibn al-Jawzī clearly held is al-Hanābila. II, 250-251; Martin 184; and Ibn al-Jawzī Martin 269-274, 342-343, 423-42-

¹¹⁻² Following the printed edition of al-Bāzī'l-Ashhab (Beirut 1407 15) here as Abū Ya'lā b. al-Farīz.

Ibn Athīr's notice on Abi 1 that the object of Abū Muhaother than Abū Yadā himself. The اً على الحنابلة خربة الا يغسلها الماء used to say: "Abū Yaslā al-Farir an extent that it cannot be washed; and Abū Ya'lā, though in part the social and theological divisions 5th/11th century (cf., Makdisi, # affiliated with that branch of the sel [d. 425]. Abū 'Alī al-Hāshimī [d. more sensitive to the problemanic amributes (and one might also say meological questions) in contrast Abū Ya lā. the sharif Abū Jafa 2-Jawzī came to associate himself reflected in the arguments detailed that it reflects the outlook of a line wished to distance itself from the d somewhat circuitous and number anthropomorphism be taken more

Abū Muḥammad at-Tamīmī¹⁸¹ used to say of one of your leaders¹⁸² that he had brought such shame on this school that it would not be washed away until the day of resurrection."¹⁸³

33 The errors of the authors to whom I have referred above fall into seven categories. (1) They take scriptural texts which refer only to the

partisan debate over this question be set aside in the interest of the school and the larger community. For a statement of Abū Muḥammad's position, see the text of his 'aqīda' preserved in Tabaqāt al-Ḥanābila, II, 273, 10-15; and 382, 10; see also II, 34, 10, where Barbahārī is cited as supporting a similar position. On the wider controversy over Yazīd, see Goldziher, ZDMG, 53 (1899), 645-652; ZDMG, 66 (1912), 139-142; and Muslim Studies, II, 96, n.6.

¹⁸¹ Abū Muḥammad Rizq Allāh b. 'Abd al-Wahhāb b. 'Abd al-'Azīz at-Tamīmī (d. 488/1095), an influential and well-connected member of the Ḥanbalī school of Baghdad whom Ibn al-Jawzī clearly held in high regard. For biographical details, see esp., *Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila*, II, 250-251; *Muntazam*, IX, 88-89; *Dhayl*, I, 77-85; *Kāmil*, X, 253; *Shadharāt*, III, 384; and Ibn al-Jawzī, *Manāqib Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal*, 525 (cf., also G. Makdisi, *Ibn 'Aqīl*, 269-274, 342-343, 423-424).

¹⁸² Following the printed edition of *DST* (Damascus 1345/1926, p. 8, n. 1), the editor of *al-Bāzī'l-Ashhab* (Beirut 1407/1987), Muḥammad Munīr, identifies the person referred to here as Abū Ya'lā b. al-Farrā.

¹⁸³ Ibn Athīr's notice on Abū Ya'lā (al-Kāmil, X, 52, 19-21) makes it reasonably certain that the object of Abū Muḥammad's remarks (reported above by Ibn al-Jawzī) was none other than Abū Yaʿlā himself. The last sentence of Ibn Athīr's notice reads: وكان ابن تميميّ Ibn Tamīmī al-Ḥanbalī الحنبليّ يقول: لقد خرى أبو يعلى الفرّاء على الحنابلة خرية لا يغسلها الماء used to say: "Abū Ya'lā al-Farrā" brought disgrace (lit. heaped refuse) on Ḥanbalīs to such an extent that it cannot be washed away"]. The conflict between Abū Muḥammad at-Tamīmī and Abū Ya^clā, though in part the result of a personal rivalry, at the same time reflected the social and theological divisions that existed within the school (especially in Baghdad) in the 5th/11th century (cf., Makdisi, Ibn 'Aqīl, 267-268 and 342-350). Abū Muhammad was affiliated with that branch of the school (which included such names as Abū'l-Faraj at-Tamīmī [d. 425], Abū 'Alī al-Hāshimī [d. 428] and Ibn 'Aqīl) that was intellectually more open, more sensitive to the problematic of the traditionalist position on the question of the divine attributes (and one might also say, less resistant to Ash'arī and Mu'tazilī perspectives on theological questions) in contrast to the more traditionalist views of men like Ibn Ḥāmid, Abū Yaclā, the sharīf Abū Jacfar and Ibn Zāghūnī. It was the former tendency that Ibn al-Jawzī came to associate himself with; it is the viewpoint of that wing of the school that is reflected in the arguments detailed in KAS. The importance of KAS lies, in part, in the fact that it reflects the outlook of a line of Hanbalī thinkers in the 11th and 12th centuries that wished to distance itself from the die-hard traditionalist wing of the school by insisting, in a somewhat circuitous and nuanced manner, that the Ash'arī and Mu'tazilī critique of anthropomorphism be taken more seriously.

awṣāf (qualifications) ¹⁸⁴ and construe them as though they were akhbār aṣ-ṣifāt. ¹⁸⁵ Not everything ascribed to God [in scripture], however, should be assigned the status of an attribute (ṣifa). Thus, when the Quran relates God as having said: "I breathed into [Adam] My spirit $(r\bar{u}h)$," ¹⁸⁶ the reference to "spirit" $(r\bar{u}h)$ here should not be taken to mean that God possesses an attribute by that name. ¹⁸⁷ Indeed, those who term a simple qualification ($mud\bar{a}f$) an attribute have departed from normative practice. ¹⁸⁸ (2) They say that the meaning of those sayings of the Prophet that fall into the category

of the mutashābihāt (ambig they add: "We take [these of How strange it is that the knows? Can the term is anything other than "siming "movement" (intiqāl? Can understanding) that attribut same basis as essence (dhāt peremptory evidence (addi rejects what is ascribed to he [not] blasphemed in a de that those who reject tradit forth, are predicated of G traditions in question have

¹⁸⁴ That is, "qualifications ($aws\bar{a}f$)" which may be ascribed to God based on a scriptural text. Although Ibn al-Jawzī does not use the expression $akhb\bar{a}r$ $al-aws\bar{a}f$ (texts on the basis of which a qualification may be ascribed to God) here, that, in fact, is what he is referring to. For more on the $aws\bar{a}f$ and the distinction between these latter and the sifat, see note 188.

¹⁸⁵ Scriptural texts on the basis of which a divine attribute may be predicated of God.

¹⁸⁶ See S. 12:29, and 38:72.

¹⁸⁷ Ibn Ḥāmid is said to have insisted on $r\bar{u}h$ as one of the divine attributes, indeed as one of the attributes of essence ($sifa min dh\bar{a}tihi$ [§44]). See also §62, where the question of $r\bar{u}h$ in relation to God is discussed.

¹⁸⁸ Ibn al-Jawzī's insistence on differentiating between the *awṣāf* and the *ṣifāt* reflects a distinction that had long been standard within Sunnī, and especially Ash'arī, theological circles. Ash arites were not the first, however, to make the distinction. It is to be found in the teachings of Ibn Kullāb (d. 855) and appears to go back as far as Hishām b. al-Hakam, the early Imāmī theologian (d. 795/6). Within this theological tradition the sifāt were held to be actual identifiable "entities" $(ma^c\bar{a}n\bar{\imath})$ within the divine essence itself, hence the designation attributes of essence, of which there were eight: life (hayāt), knowledge ('ilm), power (qudra), will $(ir\bar{a}da)$, hearing (sam^c) , sight (basar), speech $(kal\bar{a}m)$, and duration $(bag\bar{a}^2)$. They are based on explicit references in the Quran and the sayings of the Prophet, that is, on what Ibn al-Jawzī calls peremptory evidence (see below, item no. 4 in §33; also §14). The awṣāf, by contrast, refer to "qualities" (Gimaret prefers the term "qualificatives" since it calls attention to the fact that the awṣāf are primarily words used by human beings) that in some way refer to God's actions, but, unlike the sifāt, they do not define the divine essence. Concerned to preserve the absolute unity of the divine essence, the Mu^ctazila rejected the Ash arite understanding of sifāt as referring to specific entities $(ma \cdot \bar{a}n\bar{i})$ in the divine essence, and insisted that there is no real difference between awsāf and sifāt; for them terms like wasf (quality) sifa (attribute) and ism (name) may be used interchangeably; they are merely words that we apply to God, nothing more. For more on the distinction between awṣāf and sifāt, see Gimaret, Doctrine, 235-245; also El^2 , IX, 551a-552; Frank, El^2 , suppl. 343-348; and his "Attribute, Attribution, and Being...," Philosophies of Existence, Ancient and Medieval, 258-278. For a Hanbalī statement on the divine attributes that reflects the clear influence of Ash'arism, see Abū Ya'lā, Mu'tamad, 44.

the Quran, the muhkamāt those whose meaning is ambiguous. It is who sent down to you the Bothe essence of the Book—and those hearts there is an inclinational desiring dissension and seeking save only God." This distinction the sayings of the Prophet.

Ibn al-Jawzi's position is the mysteries which the human missioned be allowed to stand without since, by equating the mystery makes a mockery of that mystery literal interpretation, or indeed, to

An allusion to the saying in t

Notions that are perfectly of mached to the mutashābihār, who

On him, see notes to \$36.

The twofold blasphemy mess than the respect it deserves a

Also referred to as thebar as single authority in contrast to the two sources) and magazine

of the $mutash\bar{a}bih\bar{a}t$ (ambiguous sayings) is known only to God. ¹⁸⁹ But then they add: "We take [these obscure texts] in their literal sense (' $al\bar{a}$ $z\bar{a}hirih\bar{a}$)." How strange it is that the literal meaning ($z\bar{a}hir$) is one that only God knows? ¹⁹⁰ Can the term $istiw\bar{a}^2$, ¹⁹¹ when taken in its literal sense, mean anything other than "sitting" ($qu^c\bar{u}d$), or the term $nuz\bar{u}l$ anything other than "movement" ($intiq\bar{a}l$)? ¹⁹² (3) They ascribe attributes to God [carelessly, not understanding] that attributes ($zif\bar{a}t$) ought to be predicated of God on the same basis as essence ($zif\bar{a}t$) is predicated, [that is,] only on the authority of peremptory evidence ($zif\bar{a}t$) is predicated, [that is,] only on the authority of peremptory evidence ($zif\bar{a}t$) and $zif\bar{a}t$ is predicated, [that is,] only on the authority of peremptory evidence ($zif\bar{a}t$) is predicated, [that is,] only on the authority of peremptory evidence ($zif\bar{a}t$) and $zif\bar{a}t$ is predicated traditions ($zif\bar{a}t$) and $zif\bar{a}t$ is ascribed to God in reliable traditions ($zif\bar{a}t$) has he [not] blasphemed in a double sense? ¹⁹⁴ The majority of Ḥanbalīs hold that those who reject traditions in which a leg, foot, fingers, palm, and so forth, are predicated of God are to be declared unbelievers even if the traditions in question have come down to us from a single source ($zif\bar{a}t$), ¹⁹⁵

¹⁸⁹ This sentence presupposes the traditional distinction between two classes of verses in the Quran, the *muḥkamāt* (those whose meaning is clear) and the *mutashābihāt* (verses whose meaning is ambiguous). This classification is based on S. 3: 7, which reads: "He it is who sent down to you the Book in which there are clear verses (*muḥkamāt*)—they are the essence of the Book—and those that are ambiguous (*mutashābihāt*). As for those in whose hearts there is an inclination to fall away, they follow the ambiguous part (مِنْ اللهُ وَمَا اللهُ عَلَى اللهُ اللهُ عَلَى اللهُ اللهُ عَلَى اللهُ اللهُ اللهُ اللهُ عَلَى اللهُ اللهُ اللهُ عَلَى اللهُ ال

¹⁹⁰ Ibn al-Jawzī's position is that the *mutashābihāt* (ambiguous or obscure texts) concern mysteries which the human mind cannot penetrate. That being the case, all such texts should be allowed to stand without comment. A literal interpretation is particularly offensive since, by equating the mystery known to God alone with the literal (obvious) meaning, it makes a mockery of that mystery. A frankly acknowledged agnosticism is preferable to a literal interpretation, or indeed, to any interpretation at all.

¹⁹¹ An allusion to the saying *istawā calā'l-carsh* (God is seated, or established, on the throne), an expression that is found in both the Quran and the *ḥadīth*.

¹⁹² Notions that are perfectly comprehensible! If this is the kind of meaning that is to be attached to the *mutashābihāt*, where is the mystery or the ambiguity?

¹⁹³ On him, see notes to §36.

¹⁹⁴ The twofold blasphemy may be this: 1) a source that ought to be accepted is given less than the respect it deserves, and 2) God is denied attributes which are rightly His.

¹⁹⁵ Also referred to as *khabar al-wāḥid* or *khabar al-infirād*, i.e., traditions going back to a single authority in contrast to those that are termed $mashh\bar{u}r$ (reports that go back to more than two sources) and $mutaw\bar{a}tir$ (those that go back to multiple sources). See §14, where

for, in our view, their contents belong to the category of authoritative knowledge ('ilm)." Statements of this sort can come only from one who does not understand either the principles of jurisprudence or those of reason. (4) They fail to distinguish between those prophetic traditions that rest on multiple authorities (khabar mashhūr) such as "He (God) descends to the lowest heaven," and traditions that are not at all reliable such as, for example, the saying "I saw my Lord in the best form (fī aḥsani sūratin)." 196 In fact, they establish divine attributes on the basis of both categories of traditions indiscriminately. (5) They make no distinction between traditions whose line of transmission goes back to the Prophet ($marf\bar{u}^c$) and [fol.10a] those that go back only to a Companion or a Follower (mawqūf). 197 Indeed, they predicate attributes of God on the basis of both types of traditions without distinction. (6) They interpret certain expressions metaphorically $(ta^2awwal\bar{u})$ in one place but refuse to do so in [another] place. Thus, for example, they take the divine saying: "He who comes to Me walking I will come to him running" 198 as a figure of speech referring to God's bestowal of blessings on His creatures. However, in connection with the saying of 'Umar b. 'Abd al-'Azīz:199 "On the day of resurrection, God will come

walking,"200 they insist on a interpret a saying going bac so when considering [a sin Finally, they make sense en hadīth. Thus, they say that moves from place to place that such statements are not they deceive those who lister and reason (al-hiss wall-cal

The Necessity of

34 If someone should ask as something by means of exp should be pointed out that so to such an extent that they the realm of the senses, an affinity (mujānasa) for this

definitions of these terms are given. For more on these terms, see EI^2 , IV, 896a; III, 25; and B. Weiss, "Language and Tradition," *Der Islam*, 61 (1984), 94-95; also *KAS*, §§102 and 116 where the question of $\bar{a}h\bar{a}d$ traditions is discussed in relation to the "establishment" of the divine attributes.

¹⁹⁶ See §§72, 74, 76, 79 and 184, where this saying or approximations of it are cited and discussed.

¹⁹⁷ See §113 where Ibn al-Jawzī comments on the value of traditions that derive from $t\bar{a}bi'\bar{r}$ sources, i.e., reports derived from Followers.

¹⁹⁸ These words belong to that class of sayings known as the *ḥadīth qudsī* or divine sayings. For other references to this tradition in *KAS*, see §§115, 181, and 222; cf., Ibn al-Jawzī's *al-Mashyakha* (Beirut 1980), 65-66, where the *isnād* is given in full as well as a brief sketch of Ibn al-Jawzī's early encounter with the saying. Virtually all of the canonical collections of *ḥadīth* contain the saying in one or another of its variant forms: Bukhārī, *tawḥīd*, 15, 3 (Houdas, *Les traditions*, IV, 588[3]); Muslim, *dhikr*, 2, 19, 20; *tawba*, 1; *Musnad*, II, 251, 315, 391, 413, etc. For medieval discussions of this saying, see esp., Ibn Qutayba, *Ta'wīl Mukhtalif al-Ḥadīth* (Cairo 1386/1966), 224; al-Bayhaqī, *al-Asmā*², 457ff.; and Ibn Khuzayma, *Kitāb at-Tawḥīd*, 7. For additional references and a summary of more recent scholarly discussion of the saying, see W. Graham, *Divine Word*, 127-128.

The eighth caliph of the Umayyad dynasty, noted for his piety, his tolerant attitude toward non-Muslims, and his far-reaching reform of governmental policy, especially with respect to the $maw\bar{a}l\bar{\imath}$ question. See the biographical notices on him in the $Tabaa\bar{a}t$ of Ibn

Sa'd (V, 330-408), and the Hannumber of his sayings are found the author of a full-length biograph Press) under the title Siral University 1984/1404 (see also 'Alway 180).

utterance transmitted by 'Uma' of meant since in the following law 'Abd al-'Azīz' (the speech or sa available to me for traces of the another of 'Umar's sayings bearing

or whether a distinction is intendoccurs fairly frequently in KAS, is to denote one particular species of makān ilā makān).

²⁰² The term sophistry is not imposense of specious arguments and obfuscation.

walking,"²⁰⁰ they insist on a literal interpretation. How strange it is that they interpret a saying going back to the Prophet metaphorically but refuse to do so when considering [a similar saying] from 'Umar b. 'Abd al-'Azīz! (7) Finally, they make sense experience the basis of their interpretation of the hadīth. Thus, they say that God Himself (bi-dhātihi) descends (yanzilu) and moves from place to place (yantaqilu wa yataḥarraku).²⁰¹ They maintain that such statements are not to be understood rationally. By such sophistry they deceive those who listen to them and they contradict both sense experience and reason (al-ḥiss wa'l-'aql).²⁰²

[The Language of Revelation and The Necessity of Metaphorical Interpretation (Ta'wīl)]

34 If someone should ask why the Messenger of God summoned [people] to something by means of expressions that are seemingly anthropomorphic, it should be pointed out that sense experience conditions the way people think to such an extent that they are scarcely able to conceive what lies beyond the realm of the senses, and the reason for that lies in the natural human affinity (*mujānasa*) for things temporal (*ḥadīth*). [This explains why] some

Sa'd (V, 330-408), and the *Ḥilya* of Abū Nuʿaym, (V, 253-353) where a very large number of his sayings are found (cf., also Ibn al-Jawzī's Ṣafwa, II, 63-72). Ibn al-Jawzī is the author of a full-length biography of ʿUmar, published in Cairo 1331/1912 (al-Muʾayyid Press) under the title Sīrat ʿUmar ibn ʿAbd al-ʿAzīz, and reprinted again in Beirut in 1984/1404 (see also ʿAlwajī, Muʾallafāt Ibn al-Jawzī [Baghdad 1965] 112, 129, 163, 180).

²⁰⁰ It is not entirely clear to me whether this saying is meant to be taken as a prophetic utterance transmitted by 'Umar or a saying from 'Umar himself. Apparently the latter is meant since in the following line of the Arabic text it is referred to as "kalām 'Umar b. 'Abd al-'Azīz' (the speech or saying of 'Umar). I have searched the sources on 'Umar available to me for traces of this saying but so far without result. See §§185-186 where another of 'Umar's sayings bearing on the question of God's walking is cited and discussed.

²⁰¹ It is not clear here whether *intaqala* and *taḥarraka* are meant to be taken as synonyms or whether a distinction is intended? In general *taḥarraka*, which, along with *intaqala*, occurs fairly frequently in *KAS*, is used to denote motion in general whereas *intaqala* tends to denote one particular species of motion, *viz.*, movement from one place to another (*min makān ilā makān*).

²⁰² The term sophistry is not intended here in its technical sense but in the more general sense of specious arguments and forms of reasoning used for the purpose of deception or obfuscation.

people worship the stars and attribute beneficial and harmful influences to them;²⁰³ [why] some people worship light and attribute good to it and evil to darkness;²⁰⁴ [why] some people worship angels, some the sun, some Jesus, some 'Uzayr, 205 and some the cow, and [why] the majority of people [worship] idols. [People] have a natural affinity for those things whose existence can be apprehended through the senses. It was for this reason that [the Children of Israel] said to Moses: "Make us a god." If revelation (sharā'i') had been given [to the Prophet] in the language of pure transcendence (bi²t-tanzīh al-maḥd), 207 it would have had to express itself through negation and denial (an-nafy wa'l-jaḥd). When they 208 said [to the Prophet]: "Describe your Lord to us,"209 the verse: "Say, He is God the One" was revealed.210 Had [the Prophet] merely said that He is not a body (jism), [fol.10b] or an atom (jawhar), or an accident ('arad); that He is without length or breadth; that He neither occupies space nor is encompassed by space; that none of the six spatial relations apply to Him; that He neither moves (mutaharrik) nor is at rest (sākin); and that He is not accessible to the senses (aḥsās), et cetera,-[they would not have understood]. Had [the Meccans] only said: "Limit your use of [the language of] negation by making concrete²¹¹ the One to whose worship you summon us [instead of relying solely on the language of] negation,212 otherwise you call us to something that has no

reality [for us"—they would that God applied to Himsel hend—such as, for example anger, building the House [of God] which can be too hands, foot, ascending the purpose of rendering His expoint of revelation (shart transcendence (tanzih), aktifor this reason that the Profon another occasion when I the affirmative. There is nothing like werse: "There is nothing like the such representations (taskih) werse: "There is nothing like the such representations (taskih) werse: "There is nothing like the such representations (taskih) werse: "There is nothing like the such representations (taskih) werse: "There is nothing like the such representations (taskih) were such representation

 $^{^{203}}$ See $Talb\bar{\imath}s$, 74, where the Ṣābiʾūn are described as worshippers of the stars: "Most of them (says Ibn al-Jawzī) claim that the world is uncreated. Some of them term the stars angels $(mal\bar{\alpha}^{2}ika)$ while others call them gods and worship them..."

 $^{^{204}}$ Cf., $Talb\bar{\imath}s$, 75ff., where Ibn al-Jawzī discusses the Mazdian ($maj\bar{u}s$) dualism of light and darkness.

²⁰⁵ Cf., S. 9:30, and *Zād al-Masīr*, III, 422, where Ibn al-Jawzī summarizes the principal views current in the scholarship of his day with regard to 'Uzayr (cf., also *Talbīs*, 73). For a brief summary of modern research on the name, see the art. by H. Lazarus-Yafeh, *El*², X, 960

²⁰⁶ S. 7: 138. Cf., Exodus 32:1-5.

²⁰⁷ A language stripped of all images and symbolic expressions.

²⁰⁸ That is, the Meccans.

²⁰⁹ See $Z\bar{a}d$ al-Mas $\bar{i}r$, IX, 265ff., where Ibn al-Jawz \bar{i} presents different views as to the identity of the questioner(s).

²¹⁰ S. 112:1.

²¹¹ Literally, by distinguishing (*bi-an tumayyiza*).

²¹² That is, limit the use of negation so that God's existence may be discerned as something concrete and real.

the Black Stone is the right har of God) This is the tradition a Mushkil al-Ḥadīth. 117. report من خلن بها من شاء من خلن whomever God wills may touch interpretation of this tradition—also the Sharīf Abū Jaffar d. 47 were prepared to adopt such a tradition, see Ibn Fūrak, 117–19

is a part is cited and discussed. It of the standard collections of he and 21 (aymān wa nudhār 16 Musnad. V. 447-448. Al-Bayan of the tradition, see Mustamas. 50 is possible to speak of God's

²¹⁵ Cf., KAS, §§114-116 trail Sunan, muqaddima, 13 (181).

permissible if their purpose is to used as a basis for understanding the divine attributes) they cease to

reality [for us"—they would have spoken the truth]. It was for this reason that God applied to Himself expressions $(asm\bar{a}^2)$ which they could comprehend—such as, for example, hearing, seeing, understanding, expressing anger, building the House, and designating the [Black] Stone as the hand [of God] which can be touched, and to mention such expressions as face, hands, foot, ascending the Throne $(istiw\bar{a}^2)$ and descending—all for the purpose of rendering His existence capable of affirmation. From the vantage point of revelation $(shar^c)$ this is more important than an emphasis on transcendence $(tanz\bar{\imath}h)$, although the latter is an essential part of it. It was for this reason that the Prophet once asked a slave-girl: "Where is God?" On another occasion when he was asked whether God laughs he answered in the affirmative. However, while [the Prophet] affirmed God's existence by appealing to images (suwar) drawn from sense experience, supposing such representations $(tashb\bar{\imath}h)$ [to be literally true] was proscribed by the verse: "There is nothing like unto Him."

الحجر الأسود يمين الله في الأرض، فمن صافحه فكأنّما صافح الله (the Black Stone is the right-hand of God on earth; whoever touches it, touches [the hand of] God) This is the tradition as reported by Ibn Rajab, Dhayl, I, 174-175; Ibn Fūrak, Mushkil al-Ḥadīth, 117, reports a slightly different version of the ḥadīth: الحجر الأسود يمين الشاء من خلق (the Black Stone is the right-hand of God on earth; whomever God wills may touch it). Ibn Rajab notes that some Ḥanbalīs insisted on a literal interpretation of this tradition—e.g., al-Ḥasan b. al-Fā'ūs (d. 521/1127) and undoubtedly also the Sharīf Abū Ja'far (d. 470/1077). Ibn Rajab notes, however, that not all Ḥanbalīs were prepared to adopt such a position. For a discussion of other interpretations of this tradition, see Ibn Fūrak, 117-119, and Ibn Qutayba, Ta'wīl, 277 (cf., Lecomte, 240).

²¹⁴ See *KAS* §§122-123 (tradition # 17) where the larger tradition of which this question is a part is cited and discussed. The tradition (with slight variations) is found in a number of the standard collections of *hadīth*: Muslim, 5 (*masājid*): 33; Abū Dāwūd, 2 (*ṣalāt*): 167; and 21 (*aymān wa nudhūr*): 16 (an abridged version); Nasā'ī, 13 (*sahw*): 20; and the *Musnad*, V, 447-448. Al-Bayhaqī, *Asmā*', 421-422, cites the short version and comments on it briefly (cf., Ibn Khuzayma, *Tawhīd*, 121-122). For an interesting Ḥanbalī discussion of the tradition, see Mu^c tamad, 56, where, on the basis of this text, Abū Yaʿlā argues that it is possible to speak of God's "whereness" (*aynīya*).

²¹⁵ Cf., KAS, §§114-116 (tradition # 14). For the text of the tradition, see Ibn Māja, Sunan, muqaddima, 13 (181).

²¹⁶ S. 42:11. The point seems to be that images drawn from human experience are permissible if their purpose is to affirm the reality of God's existence. But once they are used as a basis for understanding the nature of the divine essence (including the question of the divine attributes) they cease to be permissible.

35 The Messenger did not utter his sayings (aḥādīth) en bloc (jumlatan) [at a particular point in time], but rather individually on [many] different occasions. Consequently, those who have compiled them [into books], with chapters arranged according to "image" (ṣūra), 217 have committed an egregious error. Collections (majmūs) of this sort, even those containing sound traditions, are of little value (yasīr), [but they do call attention to the fact that the Prophet] was an Arab given to the use of metaphorical language (tajawwuz). Did [the Prophet] not say: "The Cow' and 'the People of Imrān' 219 will come forth [on the day of resurrection] like two clouds or like two flocks of birds soaring in the air with outstretched wings," or that "death will be led forth [on the day of resurrection] in the form of a speckled ram and will be slain." 220

36 If someone should a scriptural texts (ahādīth) stand as they are, our answer first place, [the texts of se order to focus attention in When they are interpreted d of [these texts] contain ex metaphorical interpretation Lord comes"224 refers to the Ahmad b. Hanbal said: Th conclusion, for movement if a term like "hand" had bee "power" (qudra), this latter include the notion of poter diverting attention away fro had adopted a metaphorical have widened and the result persons asked [the sala] the (istawā) on the Throne sitting on the Throne is an e its modality (kayf) is unknown

²¹⁷ That is, images (*ṣuwar*) applied to God in the Quran and the *ḥadīth*. It would seem from Ibn al-Jawzī's comments above that there were works in existence devoted to a treatment of these images, i.e., works in which individual chapters focussed on the question of a particular *ṣūra*, or perhaps entire works devoted to the treatment of a single image. Unfortunately, Ibn al-Jawzī does not tell us enough about such works to make it possible to identify them with confidence. He may, however, have in mind here works like Ibn Khuzayma's *Kitāb at-Tawhīd*, which in fact consisted of series of chapters, each devoted to a particular image. Ibn al-Jawzī makes it clear elsewhere in *KAS* that he had little sympathy for the views of Ibn Khuzayma. Ibn al-Jawzī may also have in mind works like Ibn Zāghūnī's *Taṣḥīḥ Ḥadīth al-Aṭīṭ*, a short treatise devoted to a discussion of a particular facet of the *istiwā*'-image (i.e., God seated on the Throne). The work is lost, however, and our only knowledge of it is based on a brief reference in Ibn Rajab's *Dhayl* (I, 181, 18-19). The clear implication of Ibn al-Jawzī comments above is that there were other works of this kind in ciruculation, perhaps authored by the other men he takes to task in *KAS*.

²¹⁸ The point here is that, since the Prophet's utterances were given at different times and under different circumstances, they ought to be understood in light of the specific occasions on which they were given. To abstract them from time and place, and then to insist on a literal interpretation, can only lead to confusion and misunderstanding. The problem with such collections is that in organizing images by kind or type, they are torn from their proper setting and in the end distorted.

²¹⁹ Titles of the second and third surahs of the Quran, respectively. For fuller versions of the *hadīth*, see the following, among others: Muslim, 6 (*ṣalāt al-musāfirīn*) 252, 253; the *Musnad*, IV, 249, 251, 255, 257, 348, 353, 361; Tirmidhī, 42, (*thawāb al-Qur³ān*), 5. Cf., also *Zād al-Masīr*, I, 19.

²²⁰ For the full text, see esp., Muslim, 52 (*janna*), 40; Bukhārī, 65 (*tafsīr surat*), 19 (Houdas, *Les traditions*, III, 379); Tirmidhī, 44 (*tafsīr surat*), 19; *Musnad*, II, 377, 423, 513; and III, 6. The significance of this saying lies (it would seem) in the fact that the Prophet acknowledges these two images as forms of speech that arise out of sense experience, and hence are to be treated as metaphorical expressions.

²²¹ What follows makes it clear Prophet (i.e., *aḥādīth* in the

²²² That is, *īnās* does not occur.

public. Here Ibn al-Jawzī's popular language, it is best not to interpret ordinary believers. Ibn al-Jawzī'd equipped to apply it properly. I extensive use of *ta*²wīl because be of metaphorical exegesis.

²²⁴ S. 89:22.

²²⁵ See the excellent article by R

²²⁶ The notion of *quwwa* as poor and, if applied to God, would have

²²⁷ S. 7:54, etc.

36 If someone should ask why the *salaf* refused to interpret (*tafsīr*) scriptural texts (ahādīth) 221 and insisted that these latter be permitted to stand as they are, our answer is that they did so for three reasons. In the first place, [the texts of scripture] were recited [without explanation] in order to focus attention $(\bar{\imath}n\bar{a}s)$ on the reality of God's existence $(mawj\bar{u}d)$. When they are interpreted this does not happen, 222 given the fact that some of [these texts] contain expressions that do [when explained] require a metaphorical interpretation (ta²wīl).²²³ Thus, for example, the verse "Your Lord comes"²²⁴ refers to the coming of His command (amr). [fol.11a] Ahmad b. Hanbal said: "The proofs of reason (adillat al-caql) lead to this conclusion, for movement (intigāl) cannot be attributed to Him." Secondly, if a term like "hand" had been explained metaphorically (ta'awwul) to mean "power" (qudra), this latter might have been construed in such a way as to include the notion of potentiality (quwwa), 225 and so could have risked diverting attention away from what is acceptable. 226 Thirdly, if [the salaf] had adopted a metaphorical method of exegesis, the breach (kharq) would have widened and the result would have been confusion. When uneducated persons asked [the salaf] the meaning of the verse "[God] seated himself (istawā) on the Throne (al-carsh),"227 they were simply told that God's sitting on the Throne is an established fact $(ma^c l\bar{u}m)$ and that, even though its modality (kayf) is unknown, it is to be accepted by faith (īmān) and not

²²¹ What follows makes it clear that Ibn al-Jawzī has in mind not just the sayings of the Prophet (i.e., *ahādīth* in the narrow sense of the term) but Quranic passages as well.

²²² That is, *īnās* does not occur.

²²³ The argument in this paragraph assumes that the audience is the general (uneducated) public. Here Ibn al-Jawzī's point is that even though scripture does contain figurative language, it is best not to interpret such language out of respect for the simple faith of the ordinary believers. Ibn al-Jawzī does not oppose the use of ta²wīl if it is confined to circles equipped to apply it properly. In chapters II and III of KAS Ibn al-Jawzī will make extensive use of ta²wīl because he is addressing persons able to understand the intricacies of metaphorical exegesis.

²²⁴ S. 89:22.

²²⁵ See the excellent article by R. Arnaldez, "Kuwwa,", EI², V, 576-579.

²²⁶ The notion of *quwwa* as potentiality (innate unrealized power) implies imperfection and, if applied to God, would have led to a serious qualification of divine *qudra*.

²²⁷ S. 7:54, etc.

to be questioned.²²⁸ —We follow this approach only because the masses ($^{c}aw\bar{a}mm$) are not able to grasp matters that are complex and subtle ($ghaw\bar{a}mid$).

[Leading Proponents of Anthropomorphism Within the Ḥanbalī School]

37 The *imām* Aḥmad used to say: "Let the texts of scripture (*aḥādīth*) stand as they are." Some of his leading disciples followed this principle—men like Ibrāhīm al-Ḥarbī²²⁹ and Abū Dāwūd al-Ashram, ²³⁰ as well as some of the [later] authorities of the school such as Abū'l-Hasan at-Tamīmī, ²³¹ Abū

Muḥammad [at-Tamīmī] Ri b. 'Aqīl.²³³ However, three Ibn Hāmid,²³⁴ the *Oādī* [Ab

biographical notices on him. see and *Ta*'rīkh *Baghdād*, X. 461-46

²²⁸ Literally, asking questions about it is "heresy" (bid^ca).

²²⁹ Ibrāhīm b. Isḥāq b. Ibrāhīm Abū Isḥāq al-Ḥarbī (198-285/811-898), a student of Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal in ḥadīth, and, like Aḥmad, a vigorous opponent of kalām, especially of the Mu^ctazilī variety. His legal affiliation is less certain: both Ibn al-Jawzī (Manāqib, 508; Muntaẓam, VI, 3-7) and Ibn Abī Ya^clā (Ţabaqāt al-Ḥanābila, I, 86-93) list him as a Ḥanbalī and devote important notices to him, but Shāfi^cites also claimed him as one of their own (EI², III, 994). It is interesting that while Subkī includes a notice on him in his Ṭabaqāt ash-Shāfi^cīya (II, 256-257), he does acknowledge that Ibrāhīm studied fiqh under Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal. For additional sources on him, see GAL, Suppl. I, 188, and EI², III, 994.

²³⁰ I have not found an Abū Dāwūd al-Ashram listed in any of the sources on early Hanbalism. It is possible that "al-Ashram" is a corruption perhaps of al-Ash ath, in which case the reference may be to Abū Dāwūd b. al-Ashcath, known also as Abū Dāwūd as-Sijistānī (d. 275/888), author of the well known Kitāb as-Sunna, which he is said to have submitted to Ahmad b. Hanbal for his approval before putting the work into circulation. He was active in early Hanbalī circles and taught hadīth to a number of early Hanbalīs, among them Abū Bakr al-Khallāl. For notices on Abū Dāwūd, see *Tabaqāt al-Hanābila*, I, 159-162; Ta'rīkh Baghdād, IX, 55-59; and Muntazam, V, 97. Another possibility, though on paleographic grounds somewhat more remote, is that the reference here is to Abū Bakr al-Athram Ahmad b. Hani^o (d. 296/909) whose nisha (al-Athram) in Arabic closely resembles al-Ashram. It is relatively easy to explain how a scribe could have mistakenly copied down al-Ashram in place of al-Athram; it is less easy to explain the kunya Abū Dāwūd if Abū Bakr was the intended reading. In light of the problems with the latter option, I am inclined to consider Abū Dāwūd b. al-Ash as the more likely reading. Abū Bakr al-Athram, however, cannot be ruled out. For biographical sources on Abū Bakr, see Muntazam, VI, 83; Manāqib, 507; Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila, I, 66-74; and Tarīkh Baghdād, V, 110-112.

²³¹ Abd al-Azīz b. al-Ḥārith b. Asad b. al-Layth Abū'l-Ḥasan at-Tamīmī (317-371/929-981), an influential 10th century Ḥanbalī whose theological views reflect the subtle influences of Muʿtazilism and Ashʿarism (Makdisi, *Ibn ʿAqīl* [1997], 105-106, 109, and 130). For

²³² For more on Abū Muhan

²³³ See notes to §20.

perhaps the most influential Harjurisprudence, he did compose questions, viz., his Sharh Unit apart from a relatively insignation and important Ḥanbalī master. Streferences to his views on the did 64, 76, 135, 139, 151, 177, 186.

²³⁵ Of the Hanbalis chassised b none is censured more often nor Hanbalī school for a good part of b. al-Farra, known better as Ami the 19th of Ramadan 458 14 A writer (see Tabaqāt al-Handana) Abū Yadā was a complex and a (Ibn Taymīya) for his Shāff me le Ash arite sympathies. But the cri in spite of works like Kuab aclearly anthropomorphist. and t shame on the Hanbali school (at-Tamīmī was deeply offended (Kāmil, X, 52). One is not seen views and, as we learn, again for and rather early in the career of Abū'l-Hasan al-Qazwīnī is memi against his views and composed radd [refutation] in their titles. offensive and raising objections the following: ar-Radd and -43 Labbān, etc. (Tabagāt al-Handa) sources (cf., Kāmil, IX. 460 L m 18 the anthropomorphist charges to simply as Kitāb as-Sifūr, and as

asses mid).

stand -men ne of Abū

ent of lly of . 508; as a f their in his under

². III, early which awūd aid to lation. ıbalīs, bila, I, hough Bakr mbles down f Abū clined thram, m, VI,

1/929uences

Muḥammad [at-Tamīmī] Rizq Allāh b. 'Abd al-Wahhāb, 232 and Abū'l-Wafā' b. 'Aqīl. 233 However, three persons whom we have already mentioned, viz., Ibn Ḥāmid,²³⁴ the *Qādī* [Abū Yaʿlā],²³⁵ and Ibn Zāghūnī,²³⁶ are well-known

biographical notices on him, see esp., Muntazam, VII, 110; Tabaqāt al-Ḥanābila, II, 139, and Ta²rīkh Baghdād, X, 461-462.

²³⁴ Al-Ḥasan b. Hāmid b. 'Alī b. Marwān Abū 'Abd Allāh al-Warrāg (d. 403/1012), perhaps the most influential Hanbalī jurist of his time. In addition to his many works on jurisprudence, he did compose a treatise that dealt with theological and hermeneutical questions, viz., his Sharh Uṣūl ad-Dīn. Unfortunately, none of his writings has survived apart from a relatively insignificant legal catechism (GAS, I, 515). For more on this interesting and important Hanbalī master, see notes to §14. See the following paragraphs of KAS for references to his views on the divine attributes: §§14, 33, 37, 39, 40, 44, 48, 52, 56, 61, 63, 64, 76, 135, 139, 151, 177, 186, 188, 244.

²³⁵ Of the Hanbalīs chastised by Ibn al-Jawzī (in KAS) for their anthropomorphist views, none is censured more often nor more severely than Abū Yaʿlā, a leading influence in the Hanbalī school for a good part of the 11th century. Muhammad b. al-Husayn b. Muhammad b. al-Farrā, known better as Abū Ya'lā or simply the $Q\bar{a}d\bar{i}$, was born 380/990 and died on the 19th of Ramadān 458/14 August 1066. A man of immense learning and a prolific writer (see Tabaqāt al-Hanābila, II, 205-206, for the most complete list of his works), Abū Yaclā was a complex and controversial figure. He was criticized by some Ḥanbalīs (Ibn Taymīya) for his Shāfi'ite leanings on certain legal questions and by others for certain Ash'arite sympathies. But the criticism voiced most often by Hanbalīs was that Abū Ya'lā, in spite of works like Kitāb al-Mu^ctamad, had associated himself with views that were clearly anthropomorphist, and that through his advocacy of such views he had brought shame on the Ḥanbalī school (see KAS §31). Ibn Athīr reports that Abū Muḥammad at-Tamīmī was deeply offended by the views of Abū Yaslā on the question of the sifāt (Kāmil, X, 52). One is not surprised to learn that Ash arites also took exception to his views and, as we learn, again from Ibn Athīr, expressed their views in a quite public way, and rather early in the career of Abū Yaclā (see esp., Kāmil, IX, 460, where the role of Abū'l-Hasan al-Qazwīnī is mentioned). Abū Ya'lā was well aware of the objections raised against his views and composed a number of works which, despite the use of the term radd [refutation] in their titles, were most likely attempts to defend himself by taking the offensive and raising objections to the views of his critics. Among such titles, one notices the following: ar-Radd 'alā'l-Ash'arīya, ar-Radd 'alā'l-Mujassima, ar-Radd 'alā Ibn al-Labbān, etc. (Tabaqāt al-Hanābila, II, 205, lines 8-11). Judging from references in medieval sources (cf., Kāmil, IX, 460), it is quite likely that the work by Abū Ya'lā which occasioned the anthropomorphist charges was his *Ibtāl at-Ta'wīlāt li-Akhbār as-Sifāt*, sometimes referred to simply as Kitāb aṣ-Ṣifāt, and its shorter version Mukhtaṣar Ibṭāl at-Taʾwīlāt. Unfortunately,

²³² For more on Abū Muḥammad at-Tamīmī, see notes to §31.

²³³ See notes to §20.

these works have not survived, but we do have fragments of them quoted in other works. Ibn Abī Ya'lā cites several lengthy passages from the Ibtāl at-Ta'wīlāt in Tabaqāt al-Hanābila (II, 211-212) as does Ibn Taymīya (e.g., in his 'Aqīda Ḥamawīya, 454-455) and others which cannot be mentioned here. Even if it is not possible to be dogmatic on this point, it seems likely that the unnamed work which Ibn al-Jawzī has in mind in KAS when he criticizes Abū Yaʿlā is exactly the Ibṭāl at-Taʾwīlāt; this latter, it would appear, was composed with a somewhat more popular audience in mind than was the case with the Mu^c tamad. It is clear, in any case, that Ibn al-Jawzī was not the first to censure Abū Ya'lā for holding anthropomorphist views; he does appear, however, to have been the most sustained in his critique of the $Q\bar{a}d\bar{i}$. In chaps. II and III of KAS there are some sixty references to Abū Yadā, and virtually all of them involve criticism. Whether there was a political dimension to Ibn al-Jawzī's critique of the $Q\bar{a}d\bar{i}$ is an interesting and important question, though one that cannot be answered satisfactorily until more is known of the internal dynamics of the Ḥanbalī school of Baghdad in the 11th and 12th centuries.—For more on the life and work of Abū Ya'lā, see the following: *Tabaqāt al-Ḥanābila*, II, 193-230 (which must be read with care given the apologetic stance of its author); Muntazam, VIII, 243-244; Manāqib, 520-521; Ta²rīkh Baghdād, II, 256; Bidāya, XII, 101; Kāmil, X, 52; Shadharāt, III, 306-307; GAL, I, 502; Suppl. I, 686; EI², III, 765-766; Makdisi, Ibn Aqīl, 232-234 (and index); and, above all, Abū Yaclā's Muctamad, edited and introduced by W. Haddad. For an interesting perspective on Abū Ya'lā and the intellectual evolution of medieval Hanbalism, see Gimaret, "Théories de l'acte humain dans l'école hanbalite," BEO, 29 (1977), 157-178.

²³⁶ ʿAlī b. ʿUbayd Allāh b. Naṣr b. as-Sarī Abū'l-Ḥasan b. Zāghūnī (d. 527/1132), a leading Ḥanbalī jurist (Dhayl, I, 180), who was also well-known as an expert in the science of *hadīth*, Quranic readings, Arabic grammar, philology and wa^cz (the art of preaching). G. Makdisi refers to him, along with Ibn Ḥāmid and Abū Ya lā, as one of the seven most influential members of the school in the 5th/11th century (Ibn Aqīl, 227). Ibn Zāghūnī received his education in law under Yacqūb al-Barzabīnī (d. 486/1093), Abū Yaclā's leading student in this field. In the discipline of uṣūl al-fiqh and uṣūl ad-dīn, Ibn Zāghūnī's intellectual roots can be traced back to Abū Yaclā and through him to Ibn Ḥāmid. Ibn Zāghūnī composed a number of works on figh and hadīth, and is known to have left behind an important collection of homilies (wa^cz), not to mention a chronicle that covered the important years between 512 and 527 (1118-1132). The chronicle, highly regarded by contemporary scholars, was continued by Ibn Zāghūnī's student Şadaqa b. al-Ḥusayn (Ibn Athīr, *Kāmil*, XI, 449). For a full listing of his works (see Makdisi, *Ibn 'Aqīl*, 265-267; and Dhayl, I, 181). Of the three men whose views on the sifāt are criticized in KAS, Ibn Zāghūnī is the only one whom Ibn al-Jawzī knew personally. Ibn Zāghūnī was his very first teacher in the field of jurisprudence, and one of his earliest teachers in hadīth and wa'z. The two men remained close until Ibn Zāghūnī's death in 527 (cf., Sibṭ b. al-Jawzī, Mir'āt, 481); we can assume that Ibn al-Jawzī's analysis of Ibn Zāghūnī's position on the sifāt was not developed until later in his life. It is the personal relationship between the two men that helps to explain Ibn al-Jawzī's reticence in taking his former teacher to task in KAS. In contrast to Ibn Ḥāmid and Abū Yaʿlā, who are mentioned frequently in chaps. II and III,

as advocates of a method ('calā'l-ḥissiyāt) as its point a refutation of their views associated with such notion would imply my acceptance great importance in the midaunt me. for action based on (ma'rifa) of God is a maner. Aḥmad was once asked a response composed a legal the views which he had set Ibn al-Mubārak, to which he not come down from heaver in refuting the views of Māl

38 Since these three men

and who are criticized severely. 191), and Ibn al-Jawzī's commenture references to Ibn Zāghānī. (\$\$52 and 191): the third (\$105 his writings were jurispreademental-Īdāḥ fī Uṣūl ad-Dīn) as well according to Ibn Rajab, treated astrwā' 'alā al-'arsh (Dhayl, 1, 1) speculate on those of his writing the views of his former teacher, he see the following notices for ad Mantazam, X, 32: Dhayl, 1, 180-15 of Shaṇī, 32; and Makdisi, Ibn And hadāth under Ibn Zāghānī, see I

See \$245 where Ibu al-Jaw teaching of Ahmad; there too h counteract those distortions.

Cf. §46 where the expression or grave situation. In §47 the expr

In other words, duty requiregardless of what others think to

Cf., Taboqāt al-Ḥanābila, I

For more on the question of

as advocates of a method of interpretation that takes sense experience $({}^c a l \bar{a}^\prime l - \dot{p} i s s i y \bar{a} t)$ as its point of departure. I have come to the conclusion that a refutation of their views is essential if [the name of] Aḥmad is not to be associated with such notions. Indeed, my not speaking out on this question would imply my acceptance of their views. 237 This endeavor—a matter of great importance in the minds of many $(amr {}^c az \bar{\imath} m f \bar{\imath}' n - nuf \bar{\imath} u s)^{238}$ —does not daunt me, for action based on evidence $(dal \bar{\imath} l)$ and especially on the knowledge $(ma {}^c r i f a)$ of God is a matter in relation to which $taq l \bar{\imath} d$ is not permissible. 239 Aḥmad was once asked a question [regarding a point of law], and in response composed a legal brief $(fatw \bar{a})$. Someone pointed out to him that the views which he had set forth [in his $fatw \bar{a}$] did not accord with those of Ibn al-Mubārak, to which he responded: "The views of Ibn al-Mubārak did not come down from heaven." Shāfi once said: "I sought divine guidance in refuting the views of Mālik."

38 Since these three men have written books [setting forth their views on

and who are criticized severely, Ibn Zāghūnī is referred to only three times (§§52, 107 and 191), and Ibn al-Jawzī's comments are relatively mild—at least for Ibn al-Jawzī. Of the three references to Ibn Zāghūnī, two concern the question of God's sitting on the throne (§§52 and 191); the third (§106) deals with the question of God's foot. If the majority of his writings were jurisprudential in nature, Ibn Zāghūnī did write a theological treatise (al-Īḍāḥ fī Uṣūl ad-Dīn) as well as a short work entitled Taṣḥīḥ Ḥadīth al-Aṭīṭ, which, according to Ibn Rajab, treated prophetic traditions pertaining to the question of God's istiwā̄ 'alā al-ʿarsh (Dhayl, I, 181). Since Ibn Zāghūnī's works are lost, one can only speculate on those of his writings that Ibn al-Jawzī had in front of him when referring to the views of his former teacher, but there is a good chance that one of them was the Taṣḥīḥ. See the following notices for additional details on the life of this influential Ḥanbalī: Muntaṭam, X, 32; Dhayl, I, 180-184; Shadharāt, IV, 80-81; Bidāya, XII, 220; the Mukhtaṣar of Shaṭṭī, 32; and Makdisi, Ibn ʿAqīl, 265-267. For an interesting report on his early study of ḥadīth under Ibn Zāghūnī, see Ibn al-Jawzī's Mashyakha, 79-80 (cf., Manāqib, 529).

²³⁷ See §245 where Ibn al-Jawzī charges certain fellow Ḥanbalīs with distorting the teaching of Aḥmad; there too he describes his own efforts, in *KAS*, as an attempt to counteract those distortions.

 $^{^{238}}$ Cf. §46 where the expression amr $^{c}az\bar{\imath}m$ occurs; there it seems to imply a threatening or grave situation. In §47 the expression amr $shad\bar{\imath}d$ seems to have the same meaning.

²³⁹ In other words, duty requires doing what is right (following one's conscience) regardless of what others think (cf. §245).

²⁴⁰ Cf., *Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila*, I, 329, 5-7.

For more on the question of *taqlīd*, see §§18-22.

the divine attributes], and especially since the $Q\bar{a}d\bar{i}$ [Abū Yaʻlā] devoted a work to the discussion of scriptural texts $(ah\bar{a}d\bar{i}th)$ [bearing on the matter of the attributes], I will discuss [these texts in the next two chapters] following the order of his treatment ('alā tartībihi), ²⁴² beginning with the Quranic verses.

[fol. 11b] QUE

39 [The Quran states that] Those knowledgeable in the to mean: your Lord will enverse "They desire His face

²⁴² From this it seems clear that the organization of chaps. II and III of *KAS* corresponds to the order followed by Abū Yaʻlā in his work, whose title is unfortunately not given either here nor elsewhere in *KAS*. In my view (and for reasons suggested in the note above on Abū Yaʻlā), the most likely candidate is Abū Yaʻlā's *Kitāb Ibṭāl at-Taʾwīlāt li-Akhbār aṣ-Ṣifāt*, or perhaps its abridgement *Mukhtaṣar Ibṭāl at-Taʾwīlāt*. It is undoubtedly this work or its abridgement that Ibn Athīr had in mind when he referred to a work by Abū Yaʻlā under the title *Kitāb aṣ-Ṣifāt* in connection with the events of 429 (*Kāmil*, IX, 460). If it is Abū Yaʻlā's *Kitāb Ibṭāl at-Taʾwīlāt* that Ibn al-Jawzī is referring to in the passage above, chaps. II and III of *KAS*, which quote Abū Yaʻlā frequently and sometimes at length, may be seen as preserving at least a portion of this lost work and, in doing so, these chapters provide additional information on the views of Abū Yaʻlā—that is, above and beyond those found in the *Muʻtamad*, which was clearly written for professional theologians. It would appear that the information on Abū Yaʻlā in *KAS* reflects views that were designed for a less sophisticated audience. If that is the case, *KAS* may help us fill out the larger picture of Abū Yaʻlā's thought.

As will be seen, chapter II is Quran that were apparently anthropomorphic representations and expressions are properly and God is beyond our categories of 1.2 S. 55: 27.

See Zād al-Masīr, VIII. 114 al-Bavan fi Majazat al-Omia 3 to say that Her (إِنْ رِبُكُ رِحَقِيقَتُهُ His reality will endure [forever] a position that was close to the هو هو قوچهه هو هو ولقسه هي هو face which is He Himself. His 165. 11-12; cf., 484. 5-7]). Whi divine attributes are not always attributes and the divine essent Mustazili. On other facets of the closer to the Ashfari view. His i an saf is essentially Ash ari. Tal appears to be a synthesis of Mir matters of theology, at least discussion of the question of C Asm.F. 301-312; cf., also Ibn Kh

^{5, 30: 39.}

Most likely Dahhāk b. Muzi

[CHAPTER TWO]

[fol. 11b] QURANIC VERSES RELATING TO THE DIVINE ATTRIBUTES

[The First Text]¹

39 [The Quran states that] "The face of your Lord will endure [forever]." Those knowledgeable in the interpretation of the Quran construe this verse to mean: your Lord will endure [forever]. In like fashion they interpret the verse "They desire His face" to mean: they desire Him. Daḥḥāk and Abū

¹ As will be seen, chapter II is a discussion of a series of expressions or texts from the Quran that were apparently used by the "*mujassima*" of the Ḥanbalī school to justify anthropomorphic representations of God. Ibn al-Jawzī aims to show here that if these texts and expressions are properly understood they are perfectly compatible with the view that God is beyond our categories of place, time and form.

² S. 55: 27.

³ See Zād al-Masīr, VIII, 114 where the same explanation is given (cf., Raḍī, Talkhīṣ al-Bayān fī Majāzāt al-Qur'ān, 321, 10, where "face" is interpreted as follows: المراد: وتبقى (to say that His face will endure] means that the essence of your Lord and) ذاتُ ربَك وحقيقتُهُ His reality will endure [forever]). The early Mu^ctazilī theologian, Abū'l-Hudhayl, advocated a position that was close to the one which Ibn al-Jawzī defends here: کسان یقسول [أبو [Abū'l-Hudhayl] used to say: "God has a]) الهذيل]:لله وجه هو هو فوجهه هو هو ونفسه هي هو 'face' which is He Himself; His face is He Himself and His nafs is He Himself" [Maqālāt, 165, 11-12; cf., 484, 5-7]). While some of the details of Ibn al-Jawzī's position on the divine attributes are not always clear, on the question of the relationship between the attributes and the divine essence his position is quite clear and appears to be basically Mu^ctazilī. On other facets of the question of the attributes, however, his position seems closer to the Ash'arī view. His insistence on a clear distinction between the sifāt and the awṣāf is essentially Ash'arī. Taken as a whole, Ibn al-Jawzī's position on the attributes appears to be a synthesis of Mu'tazilī and Ash'arī views—which leads one to suspect that in matters of theology, at least, he was something of an electic. For a somewhat fuller discussion of the question of God's "face" from an Ash arī perspective, see Bayhaqī, *Asmā*², 301-312; cf., also Ibn Khuzayma, *Tawhīd*, 10-18.

⁴ S. 30: 39.

 $^{^{5}}$ Most likely <code>Daḥhāk</code> b. Muzāhim al-Hilālī (d. 105/723), who is said to have transmitted

^cUbayda⁶ take the verse "Everything will be destroyed except His face" ⁷ to mean that everything but God Himself will be destroyed.⁸

We reject the view of those who assert that the term "face" [in these texts]

exegetical traditions on the authority of a number of Companions, among them Ibn 'Umar, Ibn 'Abbās, Abū Hurayra, and Anas b. Mālik. Þaḥḥāk is cited twice in *KAS*: here and again in §210, where he is mentioned in connection with the question of the *kursī*. Aḥmad is said to have respected him as an exegete (*Shadharāt*, I, 124-125). For additional information on him and a list of sources, see *GAS*, I, 29-30.

⁶ Ma'mar b. al-Muthannā Abū 'Ubayda al-Baṣrī (d. 209/824), a distinguished grammarian, philologist, and literary critic who belonged to the Sufrīya branch of the Khawārij. Among Abū 'Ubayda's many works, his Majāz al-Qur'ān is the one for which he is best known; it is undoubtedly this work that lies behind Ibn al-Jawzī's reference above (see Majāz al-Qur'ān [Cairo 1381/1962], II, 112, line 6ff.). Although Ibn al-Jawzī cites Abū 'Ubayda only twice in KAS (here and again in §46, where he refers to his interpretation of the term $s\bar{a}q$ with approval), it is clear from Ibn al-Jawzī's published works (especially his Zād al-Masīr fī 'Ilm at-Tafsīr') that he was well acquainted with Majāz al-Qur'ān and undoubtedly other works by him. For an overview of his life and work, see the article by Gibb in EI^2 (I, 158); for a full list of sources on Abū 'Ubayda as well as an account of his writings, see GAS, VIII, 67-71, and IX, 65-77.—Since the publication of Gibb's article, a number of important studies have appeared in which Abū 'Ubayda's understanding of language and the question of majāz have been treated at some length. See especially the following: J. Wansbrough, "Majāz al-Qur'ān: Periphrastic Exegesis," BSOAS, 33 (1970), 247-266; E. Almagor, "The Early Meaning of Majāz and the Nature of Abū 'Ubayda's Exegesis," in Studia Orientalia Memoriae D. H. Baneth Dedicata (Jerusalem 1979), 307-326; and the seminal study by W. Heinrichs, "On the Genesis of the Ḥaqīqa-Majāz Dichotomy," SI, 59 (1984), 111-140. Heinrichs places Abū 'Ubayda's Majāz al-Qur'ān in a somewhat larger historical context and demonstrates quite conclusively that for Abū 'Ubayda the term majāz had not yet come to mean "metaphorical" interpretation in opposition to haqīqa or non-tropical interpretation. For Heinrichs, the dichotomy between haqiqa and majāz, which looms so large in later exegetical theory, most likely dates from the early 10th century.

refers to a specific qualification of the distribution of the specific qualification of the distribution o

40 In the same category might be reared under My eyes. The expression of mean ounder or by Our co Our oversight (mar'an min

⁷ S. 28: 88.

⁸ Abū ʿUbayda, *Majāz al-Qurʾān*, II (Cairo 1381/1962), 112, line 6ff. Cf., *Zād al-Masīr*, VI, 251-252, where two possible interpretations are given: 1) that the term "face" is to be understood metaphorically as referring to God himself (attributed to Daḥḥāk and Abū ʿUbayda), and 2) that the term is to be interpreted literally (a view ascribed to Ibn ʿAbbās). Ṭabarī (*Tafsīr* [Cairo 1328/1910], X, pt. 20, 81-82) mentions the same two positions but without linking them to the names of specific authorities. Zamakhsharī in his *Kashshāf* (III, 194) explains the expression إلا وجهه ameaning الذات ("Face" is [an expression] meaning the divine essence itself). Ibn Qutayba supports a metaphorical interpretation of the term (*Taʾwīl Mushkil al-Qurʾān* [Cairo 1373/1954], 198, 366), as does Ibn ʿAqīl (*al-Wāḍiḥ fī Uṣūl al-Fiqh* [Beirut/Stuttgart, 1996], I, 94: الذات

That is, an ism that is separa meaning of "added to," Abū Ya' 51 [1857]: "

Let a silve a silv

According to Ibn Hāmid (s qualify as nosAbib

S. 201: 34.

FS. 11: 37. Cf., 23: 27.

CL. Talkin, 224-225.

[&]quot;Muhammad h. al-Qüsim Abi of the Kufan school of grammar a on Qurame philology and eneges al-law if a reference above. Cf., a

refers to a specific qualification (ism) added to the divine essence ($z\bar{a}$) id ' $al\bar{a}$ ' dh- $dh\bar{a}t$). On what authority do they assert this to be so? The only evidence for this view is derived from sense experience; [but taking this latter as one's point of departure] would mean that God is a composite being ($tab^c\bar{i}d$). If what they claim were true it would mean that God Himself ($dh\bar{a}tahu$) will be destroyed and that only His face will endure. Ibn Hāmid writes: "We affirm that God has a face; it is not permissible, however, to assert that He possesses a head." I was shocked at the audacity of such a statement. To be guilty of anthropomorphism [in his view] one has to assert that God has a head.

[The Second Text]

40 In the same category are the following verses: "...in order that you might be reared under My (watchful) eyes," and "build an ark under Our eyes." The expression "under Our eyes" is taken by [some] exegetes to mean "under or by Our command (*amr*)," and by others to mean "under Our oversight (*mar* an *minnā*)." Abū Bakr b. al-Anbārī pointed out that

⁹ That is, an ism that is separate from the divine essence. This would appear to be the meaning of "added to." Abū Yaʻlā clearly endorses this point of view in the Muʿtamad (p. 51 [§85]): وقد وصف نفسه سبحانه بالوجه...وليس بجارحة، وهو صفة زائدة على ذاته خلافًا للمعتزلة وجماعة من الأشعرية ان وجهه في قولهم ان وجه الله جارحة مخصوصة كوجه الواحد منًا، وخلافًا للمعتزلة وجماعة من الأشعرية ان وجهه ذاته is [rather] an attribute added to his essence in contrast to the mujassima [corporealists] who say that the face of God is a bodily member like our face, and in contrast to the Muʿtazila and a group of Ashʿarīs who maintain that His face is His essence). On the question of God's "face," Ibn al-Jawzī does not hesitate to identify himself with a position that Abū Yaʻlā qualifies as Muʿtazilite and Ashʿarite.

 $^{^{10}}$ According to Ibn Ḥāmid (so Ibn al-Jawzī claims), anything less than this does not qualify as $tashb\bar{t}h$.

¹¹ S. 20: 39.

¹² S. 11: 37, Cf., 23: 27.

¹³ Cf., Talkhīş, 224-225.

¹⁴ Muḥammad b. al-Qāsim Abū Bakr b. al-Anbārī (d. 328/940), a leading representative of the Kufan school of grammar and lexicography. He wrote a number of important works on Quranic philology and exegesis, and it is likely that one of these was the source of Ibn al-Jawzī's reference above. Cf., also *KAS*, §120 where Ibn al-Anbārī's views are cited in

among the Arabs the plural [pronoun] is sometimes used even when the referent is singular; hence, one may say: "We travelled to Basra" [when one really means "I travelled to Basra"]. This use of the plural derives from the practice of kings who are in the habit of saying "our command" or "our prohibition." The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{t}$ [Abū Yaʻlā] maintained that "eye" is an attribute added to the divine essence $(z\bar{a}^{\gamma}ida^{\gamma}al\bar{a}^{\gamma}dh-dh\bar{a}t)$. Already before him Abū Bakr b. Khuzayma¹⁷ said, in connection with the above verses: "Our Lord

connection with the term *kanaf* (side). For a survey of his writings as well as a brief biographical sketch, see *GAS*, IX, 144-147 (cf., Brockelmann, *El*², I 485).

¹⁵ See *Zād al-Masīr*, IV, 100-101, where the same linguistic explanation is ascribed to Ibn al-Anbārī, but in slightly different wording. In his "The Genesis of the *Ḥaqīqa-Majāz* Dichotomy" (*SI*, 59 [1984], 116-117 and 140), Heinrichs points out that Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal may well have been one of the first, if not the first, among "the great school-founders" to make use of the term *majāz* and precisely in connection with the Quranic use of the first person plural pronoun to express the singular.

16 Cf., DST, 11, and BA, 43, where the same reading is found. In the Mutamad (51, 1-4 [§84]) however, Abū Yaʻlā states his position as follows: وقد وصف نفسه بالعينين...وهما بالمحترن معنى المحترن على البصر والرؤية وليستا بجارحتين، خلاقًا للمجسّمة في قولهم انهما جارحتان مبنيّتان كبنية الواحد منا، وخلاقًا للمعتزلة وجماعة من الأشعريّة في قولهم: ليستا بصفتين زائدتين على الرؤية (He has described Himself as having two eyes which are two attributes added to [the attribute(s)] of sight and vision, but not in the sense of corporeal entities—this in contrast to the mujassima (corporealists) who say that [the two eyes] are actually two bodily members fashioned in their make-up like [the eyes] of one of us—and in contrast to the Muʻtazila and a group of Ashʻarīs who say that [the two eyes] are not attributes added to vision and sight.). This text raises an interesting question; assuming that the reading على البصر والرؤية على Or does he really mean to suggest that one attribute can be added to another?

17 Muḥammad b. Isḥāq b. Khuzayma b. al-Mughīra Abū Bakr an-Nīsābūrī (223-311/833-924), a Shāfiʿite traditionist noted for his opposition to *kalām*. His *Kitāb at-Tawḥīd wa Ithbāt ar-Rabb*, on which his reputation rested, was essentially a *ḥadīth*-based approach to the question of the divine attributes. The *Kitāb at-Tawḥād*, as G. Makdisi points out (*Ibn ʿAqīl*, 337-340), was an influential text within Ḥanbalī-traditionalist circles in Baghdad during much of the 11th century. The work formed part of the arsenal used to combat Muʿtazilī and Ashʿarī influences in Baghdad, and, undoubtedly, also in other centers where the traditionalist movement was active. Ibn al-Jawzī, who knew the work well and who cites it repeatedly in *KAS*, was generally critical of the work. For him it represented a point of view that was insufficiently sensitive to the anthropomorphist implications of a literalist interpretation of the *akhbār aṣ-ṣifāt*.—In addition to the lengthy notice on Ibn Khuzayma in the *Muntaṣam* (VI, 184-186), see also Subkī, *Ṭabaqāt*, III, 109-113; *Bidāya*, XI, 149; and *Shadharāt*, II, 262-263. For a more complete list of sources on him, and a survey of his

has two eyes by which He God has two eyes." This was justification in scripum God only through a kind the Prophet's statement: were meant only to deny God. Since it has been est not to be supposed that a I divine attributes.

41 Among the verses Jused is the expression: "...to has literary usage, however, if favor [mi/ma] or act of kind

extant writings, see GAS, I, 601 Although the wording is stallowing passage in Ibn Khuza المنظلي وما في السموات العلي وما We المنظلي على صغير وكبير sees what is under the ground a what is in the highest heaven and

CL. KAS. §219, where doll the technical meaning of this exp see the notes to §219.

See motes to §14.

See §§217-219 where this length. The tradition on the An standard medieval collections of the more commonly cited forms Muslim, frum, 101. See also Bul Abi. Diwird, molabim 25: Term 250, 333; II. 27, 149; and VI. 14 aging, see Ibn Khuzayana. Tawé S. 38: 75. The full verse prostating yourself before who

has two eyes by which He sees." Ibn Ḥāmid¹9 said: "We must believe that God has two eyes." This view, however, is an innovation for which there is no justification in scripture. [Champions of this view] attribute two eyes to God only through a kind of inferential reason $(dal\bar{\iota}l\ al-khit\bar{\iota}ab)^{20}$ based on the Prophet's statement: "He is not one-eyed." These words, however, were meant only to deny that imperfection of any sort can be ascribed to God. Since it has been established that God is not a composite being, it is not to be supposed that a literal face [with two eyes] is [fol.12a] among the divine attributes.

[The Third Text]

41 Among the verses [used by anthropomorphists in support of their position] is the expression: "...to him whom I created with My two hands." In literary usage, however, the word "hand" is [frequently] taken to mean favor (ni^cma) or act of kindness $(i\dot{h}s\bar{a}n)$, as the poet has said:

extant writings, see GAS, I, 601 (cf., also GAL, I, 193; and Suppl. I, 345).

¹⁸ Although the wording is somewhat different, Ibn al-Jawzī may have in mind the following passage in Ibn Khuzayma's Kitāb at-Tawhīd (p. 50, line 1ff.): نحن نقــول: لربّنا الحالق عينان يبصر بهما ما تحت الثرى وتحت الأرض السابعة السفلى وما في السموات العلى وما . (We hold that our Lord, the Creator, has two eyes by which he sees what is under the ground and what is beneath the seventh and lowest earth as well as what is in the highest heaven and [everything] between the two whether small or great).

¹⁹ See notes to §14.

 $^{^{20}}$ Cf., KAS, §219, where *dalīl al-khiṭāb* is used in a similar context. For a discussion of the technical meaning of this expression and its use in medieval jurisprudence and theology, see the notes to §219.

²¹ See §§217-219 where this tradition is cited by Ibn al-Jawzī and discussed at some length. The tradition on the Antichrist as a one-eyed creature occurs frequently in the standard medieval collections of prophetic traditions and with numerous variations. Among the more commonly cited forms of this tradition are the following: Bukhārī, *fitan*, 26; and Muslim, *fitan*, 101. See also Bukhārī, *jihād*,178; *anbiyā*², 3; *adab*, 77; Muslim, *fitan*, 95; Abū Dāwūd, *malāḥim* 26; Tirmidhī, *fitan*, 56, 62; Ibn Māja, *fitan*, 33; *Musnad*, I, 228, 250, 333; II, 27, 149; and VI, 140. For a discussion of the theological significance of this saying, see Ibn Khuzayma, *Tawḥīd*, 43-44; Bayhaqī, *Asmā*², 312-313; and *Muctamad*, §84.

²² S. 38: 75. The full verse reads: "[God] said: 'O Iblīs, what prevents you from prostrating yourself before what (or 'before him whom') I have created with my two hands."

Whenever you quietly bring your petition to the gate of the Banū Hishām and in hope await their response,

You will surely meet with the hands of their bounty (fawāḍil).

42 The words "Surely God's hand is fettered," ²³ a Jewish adage cited in the Quran, refers to God's withholding of largesse (*nafaqa*). ²⁴ But the term "hand" may also sometimes convey the notion of power (*quwwa*), and so people will say: "We have no *hand* in this matter." It is in this sense that 'Urwa b. Ḥizām²⁵ used the word in one of his poems. ²⁶ In the Quranic verse "Nay, but His hands are outstretched," ²⁷ [said in response to the Jews], the expression "hands" connotes both favor (*ni*^c*ma*) and power (*qudra*); hence, in the verse "what I created with my hands," [the expression "with My hands"] means with My *power* and My *favor*. ²⁸ Commenting on the verse "the hand of God is above their hands," ²⁹ Ḥasan [al-Baṣrī] said: "The term 'hand' means the blessing (*minna*) or kindness (*iḥsān*) of God." These are the words of Ḥasan himself! ³⁰ The *Qādī* [Abū Yaʿlā] maintained, however, that the expression "two hands" [when applied to God] refers to two essential attributes (*ṣifatāni dhātīyatāni*); it is these latter that are designated by the expression "two hands." This is an arbitrary interpretation based on personal

opinion (ray); there is no The verse to him whom Myself created.' Thus also sent ahead 13 clearly mea rather imprudently once s on Adam over the anima hand-taken as a divine a mentioning [His hands in c "By My hands." Had God hands], no special rank w was manifest in the creamo [Ibn 'Aqil continued:] " that the power expressed God added the expression response is that when an means that he has no power advantage [conferred on A such [but in the fact that it is that when God said: 'W made with Our hands "30

²³ S. 5: 63

²⁴ Abū ʿUbayda, *Majāz al-Qurʾān*, I, 170, line 10, glosses the verse as follows: أي خير (cf., *Zād al-Masīr*, III, 392-393).

²⁵ 'Urwa b. Ḥizām b. Muhājir (who died in the Rāshidūn or early Umayyad periods) was one of the so-called '*Udhrī* poets. For sources on 'Urwa and his poetry, see *GAS*, II, 264-265 (cf. *GAL*, Suppl., I, 81-82; and Blachère, *Histoire de la littérature arabe*, II, 303 and index).

²⁶ Ibn al-Jawzī cites a line of 'Urwa's poetry in *DST* (12) in which the term "hands" is used metaphorically. The line reads: فقالا شُفَاك اللّهُ واللّه ما لَنا بما ضُمَّنَتْ منك الضُّلوعُ يدان (for variant readings, see *Shi'r 'Urwa b. Ḥizām* [Baghdad 1961], 15). This may well be the line alluded to in *KAS*.

²⁷ S. 5: 64.

 $^{^{28}}$ On the use of the term "hands" to express the double sense of power and favor, see Raḍī, $Talkh\bar{\imath}$, 276, 1ff.

²⁹ S. 48: 10.

 $^{^{30}}$ Cf., $Z\bar{a}d$ al-Mas $\bar{i}r$, VII, 427-428, where this interpretation is mentioned but without reference to Ḥasan.

وقد In the Mu^ctamad (p. 52, 13-18[§86]) Abū Ya^clā states his position as follows: وقد

ولا يعنى القدرة، بل هي صفة ذات البد وصاعة من الأشعرية أنهما لعمة (He has described Hims emities nor in the sense of favor to the majossima (corporealists) to the Multazila and certain Ashibit or and power).

⁻ S. 38: 75.

[&]quot; S. 22-10.

The al-Jawzi's conclusion se tances (most of which are metaph precise meaning of the term. To explicitly by Ibn al-Jawzi, but it approach to exceptical questions.

The version of this passage in the person referred to here is

S. 36: 71

opinion (*ra*³*y*); there is no [textual or rational] support for it. Ibn 'Aqīl said: "The verse 'to him whom I created [with My two hands]' means 'what I Myself created.' Thus also the verse 'This is that which your hands have sent ahead' clearly means that which *you* have sent ahead. Someone rather imprudently once said: Had no special distinction been conferred on Adam over the animals through his having been created by [God's] hand—taken as a divine attribute—[God] would not have set him apart by mentioning [His hands in connection with Adam's creation], and so he said: "By My hands." Had God meant power (*qudra*) [when he used the term hands], no special rank would have been conferred [on Adam, for power was manifest in the creation of all things]."

[Ibn 'Aqīl continued:] "If those [who advocate this view] should insist that the power expressed in creation does not itself confer praise, so that God added the expression 'by My hands' [to make the point clear], our response is that when an Arab says 'I have no *hands* in this matter,' he means that he has no *power* (*qudra*) over it. [When literalists] say: 'The advantage [conferred on Adam] does not reside in the act of creation as such [but in the fact that it was accomplished by God's hands],' our response is that when God said: 'We have created cattle for them of what We have made with Our hands,' ³⁶ He did not mean to imply that cattle enjoy a

وصف نفسه سبحانه باليدين...وليست بجارحتين ولا بمعنى النعمة ولا بمعنى القدرة، بل هي صفة ذاتية خلافًا للمعتزلة في قولهم وجماعة من الأشعرية أنّهما نعمة (He has described Himself as having two hands but not in the sense of corporeal entities nor in the sense of favor or power; rather they are an essential attribute in contrast to the *mujassima* (corporealists) who maintain that they are bodily members, and in contrast to the Mu^ctazila and certain Ash^carīs who insist that they are to be construed in the sense of favor and power).

³² S. 38: 75.

³³ S. 22: 10.

³⁴ Ibn al-Jawzī's conclusion seems to be that the term "hand" may have multiple connotations (most of which are metaphorical), and that it is the context that finally determines the precise meaning of the term. To be sure, the importance of context is nowhere stated explicitly by Ibn al-Jawzī, but it is clearly implied in his discussion, and is apparent in his approach to exegetical questions.

 $^{^{35}}$ The version of this passage as it appears in *DST* (12, line 12f.) indicates fairly clearly that the person referred to here is none other than Abū Yaʻlā himself.

³⁶ S. 36: 71.

special status over other animals.³⁷ Indeed, the mere fact of God's having ascribed a quality [to Adam] is sufficient by itself to confer superiority. The *'ulamā'* have said that the term 'hands' means power (*quwwa*) in the verse: 'We constructed the heavens with Our hands'."³⁸

43 [God] states [in the Quran] that He breathed into [Adam] His spirit $(r\bar{u}h)$;³⁹ however, this reference [to God's breathing into Adam His $r\bar{u}h$] simply means that He brought Adam into existence through [fol.12b] an act of origination $(takw\bar{i}n)$, and so the words ["I breathed into him My $r\bar{u}h$ "] mean "I breathed" [construed as a metaphor for the act of creation].⁴⁰ The [mere] attribution $(id\bar{a}fa)$ [of the term $r\bar{u}h$ to himself] is sufficient in and of itself to confer a special distinction [on Adam].⁴¹ More than that is inappropriate to the Creator, for His actions are not dependent on means [for their actualization], seeing that He possesses neither bodily members or organs through which to act. Indeed, He is self-sufficient in and of Himself (bi- $dh\bar{a}tihi$). It is not fitting that one should occupy himself in seeking to exalt

Adam" while at the sam broom which He deserve densiting that He is a count course of things / addry finite bodies faisant. Son magine that God actually with His hand-a hand t divine essence. What the timists of separate hodi through it as, for example or a duality. Do you sup hodies to influence Jother in the case of His own act who hold this view are of like Adam whom He crea SE 925." 44 |Cit the question of the you beware of His soul (i saying [to God]: "You kn what is in Your soul (f) as were means: "God warns You know what is within you (mi findala)."4 The FIS. 2:59 *5.5.28 F 5 F 116

يا أطهرانا لا أطهاما ة

QURANIC VERSE

³⁷ Cf., Talkhīṣ, 2275-275.

³⁸ S. 51: 47. See *Zād al-Masīr*, VIII, 40, where Ibn al-Jawzī specifically mentions the following authorities as having supported this interpretation: "Ibn 'Abbās, Mujāhid, Qatāda, and the other exegetes and philologists."

³⁹ An allusion to S. 15: 29 which reads: "When I formed [Adam] and breathed into him my spirit $(r\bar{u}h\bar{\iota})...$ " Cf., also 32: 9. On the various uses of the term $r\bar{u}h$ and its interpretation, see the interesting summary in Ibn Qutayba, $Ta^{\lambda}w\bar{\iota}l$ Mushkil al- $Qur^{\lambda}\bar{\iota}an$, 370-372. Cf., Ibn Fūrak, Mushkil al- $Had\bar{\iota}th$, 227-228, 145-149; and Bayhaq $\bar{\iota}$, $Asm\bar{\iota}a$, 361-368. For a summary discussion of Quranic uses of the term $r\bar{\iota}h$, see the article "Nafs," EI^{2} , VII, 880.

⁴⁰ The argument here is directed against the view that $r\bar{u}h$ is a separate hypostatic entity in God which he imparted to Adam at creation. Such a view is problematic, in Ibn al-Jawzī's view, for at least two reasons: 1) it undermines the notion of God's absolute unity $(tawh\bar{u}d)$, and 2) it implies that God is dependent on means other than His $dh\bar{u}$ or essential being for the actualization of His will.

 $^{^{41}}$ Since, in the words of the verse, it is His $r\bar{u}h$ that He imparts to Adam. For Ibn al-Jawzī it is critical that the term $r\bar{u}h$ be taken as a metaphor. In his commentary on 15: 29, Ibn al-Jawzī explains at greater length his understanding of the reference to "my $r\bar{u}h$ ": هذه الماء على الإنسان ولا تُعلَم ماهيّتُها وإنّما أضافها إليه تشريفًا لآدم، وهذه إضافة ملك. ([Although] the $r\bar{u}h$ is that by which human beings live, its quiddity or essence is unknown; [God] attributed it to Himself primarily for the purpose of conferring distinction on Adam, for it entails the attribution of a quality. The moving of the $r\bar{u}h$ in him [Adam] is referred to as a "blowing" [or breathing] only because it moves in his body like the moving of wind). ($Z\bar{u}d$ $al-Mas\bar{u}r$, IV, 400, 13-15).

Adam⁴² while at the same time neglecting to grant the Creator the high honor which He deserves, an honor which can (only) be rendered by denying that He is a composite being $(ab^c\bar{a}d)$ or that He follows the natural course of things $(\bar{a}d\bar{a}t)^{43}$ in His actions, for these are qualities peculiar to finite bodies (ajsām). Some simple-minded persons have gone so far as to imagine that God actually touched the clay out of which He formed Adam with His hand—a hand which they regard as one of the attributes of the divine essence. What they understand is that the totality of created things consists of separate bodies and that one [body] attracts another and acts through it as, for example, sorcerers who tie knots so as to alter a condition or a quality. Do you suppose that God causes the actions of persons and bodies to influence [other] bodies (ajsām) separated by a distance, but that, in the case of His own actions, He required the assistance of the clay? Those who hold this view are contradicted by the verse: "Jesus in God's eyes is like Adam whom He created from dust simply by saying to him: 'Be!' and he was."44

[The Fourth Text]

44 [On the question of the *nafs* (soul)] the Quran says: "God warns you that you beware of His soul (*nafsahu*)." In another verse Jesus is reported as saying [to God]: "You know what is in my soul ($f\bar{\imath}$ *nafsi*) but I know not what is in Your soul ($f\bar{\imath}$ *nafsika*)." According to [some] exegetes, the first verse means: "God warns you that you beware of Him," and the second: "You know what is within me ($m\bar{a}$ 'ind $\bar{\imath}$) but I do not know what is within you ($m\bar{a}$ 'indaka)." The most reliable experts have said that *nafs* in these

⁴² By implying that he shares in the divine substance as the recepient of God's spirit.

⁴³ The reference here seems to be to acting through the instrumentality of means, the established pattern or "custom" (\bar{cada}) for all actions carried out by finite creatures.

⁴⁴ S. 3: 59.

⁴⁵ S. 3: 28.

⁴⁶ S. 5: 116.

⁴⁷ Cf., Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil al-Ḥadīth*, 320, line 7, where this is given as one of two possible interpretations.

⁴⁸ In Zād al-Masīr (II, 464) Ibn al-Jawzī, following the Muʿtazilī grammarian Abū Isḥāq az-Zajjāj, glosses this expression as follows: علم ما أضمره ولا أعلم ما عندك علمُه، (You know what I conceal, but I do not know what

(or being) itself.⁵⁵ Thus it you. ⁵⁸ The only possible [God].

46 Among the texts [th attributes] is the following Ibn 'Abbās, Mujāhid, It 'ulamā' interpret this were matter (shidda) is brought term sāq], they cite the following to us." 59 and "the (sāq)" [meaning that the l

texts mean "essence," the *nafs* of something being its essence $(dh\bar{a}t)$. ⁴⁹—The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{t}$ [Abū Yaʿlā], on the other hand, held that God's *nafs* is an attribute over and above His essence $(z\bar{a}$ 'ida ʿalā dhātihi). ⁵⁰ But this view is derivative of an anthropomorphist perspective, for it assumes that [God's] essence is a "thing" (shay) and that [His] *nafs* is something distinct from it. The view advanced by Ibn Ḥāmid is even more objectionable! He stated: "Regarding the verse: 'I breathed into him My spirit $(r\bar{u}h\bar{t})$,' ⁵¹ some [Ḥanbalīs] ⁵² hold that spirit $(r\bar{u}h)$ is an attribute of essence (sifa min dhātihi) and that when it leaves [a person at the time of death] it returns to God." Such a view is even more repugnant than what [fol.13a] Christians teach. This man spared nothing in his advocacy of an anthropomorphist point of view $(tashb\bar{t}h)$! ⁵³

[The Fifth Text]

45 Another text [that has been the subject of debate] is the verse: "Nothing resembles His 'likeness' (*ka-mithlihi*)." These words, taken in their literal sense (*zāhir*), would indicate that [God] has a likeness (*mithl*): nothing is like His "likeness" and [His "likeness"] is like nothing else. According to the lexicographers, however, a *mithl* designates nothing other than the thing

⁶¹ Ci., Zād al-Masir, VII. 176

Literally, "the likeness of m For parallel passages, see Ibn (main des divergences du Hadigurgument developed by Ibn al-land al-Bayhaqi. The point manone other than the person of God himself. What Ibn al-Jawa is distinct from his essence. Prosisted on such a distinction, o is interesting, however, that Ibn illn Zighüni—the usual tares

S. 68: 42. The full verse at the prostrate themselves b

Zamakhshari, who takes i final judgment, reflects the stall fundadif. IV, 147; cf., al-Fi d-dinhad (Cairo 1950), 159; at the whole of Ibn al-Jawzi's en discussion above (§§46-48).

A hemistich that is cited it not been able so far to identify

This bemistich is from on Muhammad Ismiril 25-Sawi. S Junit, ed. Naturin Amin (Cairo

you know, which is to say, you know what I know, but I do not know what you know). See Raḍī, *Talkhīṣ* (135, 14ff.) where the same interpretation is offered and in much the same language. Raḍī, however, does not hesitate to call the term *nafs*, as used in the verse, an instance of *isti^cāra* (tropical language).

⁴⁹ Cf., Ibn Fūrak, *Muskhil al-Ḥadīth*, 319, 13-15; and al-Bayhaqī, *Asmā*, 286, 6ff., where *nafs* is construed as the equivalent of *dhāt*.

 $^{^{50}}$ I have found nothing in the Mu^c tamad that corresponds to the position here attributed to $Ab\bar{u}$ Yaclā. Indeed, in the chapter of the Mu^c tamad (44-72) devoted to a discussion of the divine attributes, no mention is made of the nafs. Most likely Ibn al-Jawzī is referring here to a statement from $Ab\bar{u}$ Yaclā's work on the divine attributes which is presumed lost.

⁵¹ S. 15: 29.

 $^{^{52}}$ Cf., a parallel text in DST, 19, line 1, where the Arabic reads: طائفة من أصحابنا (a group of our associates). An examination of the context of the expression أصحابنا (our associates) in both DST and KAS indicates that it is used invariably by Ibn al-Jawzī as a reference to Ḥanbalīs.

 $^{^{53}}$ Cf., last sentence of §56 where, apart from the use of $tajs\bar{\imath}m$, an identical construction occurs and where again the subject is Ibn $\Brack{H\bar{a}}$ mid.

⁵⁴ S. 43: 11.

(or being) itself.⁵⁵ Thus it is said: "One like me should not speak to one like you." The only possible meaning of the text is that there is nothing like [God].

[The Sixth Text]

46 Among the texts [that have figured in the discussion of the divine attributes] is the following verse: "On the day when a leg is laid bare." Ibn 'Abbās, Mujāhid, Ibrāhīm an-Nakha'ī, Qatāda, and the majority of 'ulamā' interpret this verse to mean: [On a day when] a grave or serious matter (*shidda*) is brought to light. In support of this interpretation [of the term $s\bar{a}q$], they cite the following lines of poetry: "The battle bared its leg ($s\bar{a}q$) to us," and "the battle tucked up its garment, laying bare its leg ($s\bar{a}q$)" [meaning that the battle became intense or vehement]. Ibn Qutayba

⁵⁵ Cf., Zād al-Masīr, VII, 276, where Ibn Qutayba is quoted in support of this interpretation.

The likeness of me (mithlī) should not speak to the likeness of you (mithlaka)." For parallel passages, see Ibn Qutayba's Ta'wīl Mukhtalif al-Ḥadīth, 275 (cf., Lecomte, Le traité des divergences du Ḥadīt [Damascus 1962], 243); and al-Bayhaqī's Asmā', 277. The argument developed by Ibn al-Jawzī above follows closely the views found in Ibn Qutayba and al-Bayhaqī. The point made by both authors is that the mithl of a person or thing is none other than the person or thing itself. In like fashion God's mithl is none other than God himself. What Ibn al-Jawzī wishes to avoid is any suggestion that God has a mithl that is distinct from his essence. Presumably there were Ḥanbalīs or other traditionalists who insisted on such a distinction, otherwise his comments would have been purely academic. It is interesting, however, that Ibn al-Jawzī makes no mention here of Ibn Ḥāmid, Abū Ya'lā or Ibn Zāghūnī—the usual targets of his criticism in KAS.

⁵⁷ S. 68: 42. The full verse reads: "On the day when a leg is laid bare, and they will be called to prostrate themselves but will not be able."

⁵⁸ Zamakhsharī, who takes the unveiling mentioned in this verse as a reference to the final judgment, reflects the standard interpretation found in the medieval commentaries (*Kashshāf*, IV, 147; cf., al-Farrā², *Maʿānī'l-Qurʿān*, III [Cairo 1972], 17; al-Juwaynī, *al-Irshād* (Cairo 1950), 159; and *Zād al-Masīr*, VII, 341). This assumption runs through the whole of Ibn al-Jawzī's exegesis of the verse and is the background of much of the discussion above (§§46-48).

⁵⁹ A hemistich that is cited frequently in medieval lexical and exegetical works. I have not been able so far to identify the original source of this fragment.

⁶⁰ This hemistich is from one of the poems of Jarīr; for the full text of the poem, see Muḥammad Ismā'īl aṣ-Ṣawī, *Sharḥ Dīwān Jarīr* (Cairo 1353/1934), 241; and the *Dīwān Jarīr*, ed. Nu'mān Amīn (Cairo 1969-1971), I, 470.

writes: "The underlying idea behind [the expression 'baring the leg'] derives from its application to a person who, faced with a grave situation (amr 'azīm), 61 has to exert himself to the utmost. Thus, [in a manner of speaking] he tucked up his garment, baring his leg. In effect, the word sāq [used in this way] was borrowed from idiomatic usage common among Arabs (fa'stu'\(\bar{i}rat\)) and employed [as a metaphor] in place of the word shidda." 62 This was also the view of al-Farrā, 63 Abū 'Ubayda, 64 Tha'lab, 65 and the lexicographers generally.

47 Bukhārī and Muslim report in their respective $Sah\bar{\imath}hs$ that the Prophet said: "God the most high will bare (*yakshifu*) His leg ($s\bar{a}q$)." ⁶⁶ Here the

term [sāq] is explicitly a manifest (vakshifu) His po are His actions. The expr [what conceals it]. Asim become angry, and [peop contrast to the tradition ! grave or difficult situation however, noted that the terr be used to refer to the per God show him honor-u When the latter said: " responded: "I have no cho is destroyed." Acco Muslim may be taken to mem. In a tradition report remove the veil [surround themselves before Him. S mough [fol.13b] cattle's h wish to prostrate themselve

⁶¹ Cf., §37 where the expression *amr 'azīm* is used. Cf., the expression *amr shadīd* used in §47, which appears to be a synonym.

⁶² For the full Arabic text of Ibn Qutayba's commentary on this verse, see Ta'wil Mushkil al-Qur'ān, p. 103, line 11 ff. It is interesting that Ibn Qutayba takes up a discussion of the term sāq (in relation to the above verse) in a chapter devoted to a discussion of the "metaphor" or istiʿāra. Indeed, this verse is the very first example of istiʿāra cited by Ibn Qutayba. At the beginning of the chapter (p. 102, lines 2-3) he defines istiʿāra as follows: فالعرب تستعير الكلمة فتضعها مكان الكلمة إذا كان المسمّى بها بسبب من الأخرى أو مجاوراً لها أو (the Arabs borrow one word and put it in the place of another provided that the thing named [i.e., the word borrowed] is instrumental, or adjacent or similar to the other one [cf., Heinrichs, The Hand of the Northwind [Wiesbaden 1977], 30]). For a fuller analysis of Ibn Qutayba's definition and its significance for medieval Arabic literary theory, see the above study by Heinrichs. An explanation similar to the one offered by Ibn Qutayba is found in Raḍī's, Talkhīṣ, 341-342. In general the latter represented a Muʿtazilī point of view.

⁶³ Cf., his *Maʿānī'l-Qurʾān* (Cairo 1972), vol. III, 177, 11, where after noting a variant reading of كشف , al-Farrāʾ adds the following comment: عربيد القيامة والساعة لشدّتها . Yaḥyā b. Ziyād Abū Zakarīyāʾ al-Farrāʾ (d. 207/822) was a prominent grammarian of the Kufan "school" whose writings reflect Muʿtazilī influences. For more on al-Farrāʾ, see the article by R. Blachère in *EI*², II, 806-08; *GAS*, VIII, 123-125; and IX, 131-134, for a list of his extant writings.

أذا اشتـدً 'In his *Majāz al-Qur³ān*, II, 266, Abū 'Ubayda glosses the term as follows: إذا اشتـدً (When the battle or an affair becomes intense, people say: "the affair has laid bare its leg"). For more on Abū 'Ubayda, see notes to \$38.

⁶⁵ Aḥmad b. Yaḥyā Abū'l-ʿAbbās Thaʿlab (d. 291/904), also a member of the Kufan "school" of grammar. For his comments on how the term $s\bar{a}q$ is to be construed in 68:42, see his $Maj\bar{a}lis$, II, 11.

⁶⁶ Bukhārī, Ṣaḥīḥ, tawḥīd, 2; tafsīr, 68, 2; and Muslim, Ṣaḥīḥ, īmām, 302 (cf., also *Musnad*, III, 17). In each case the tradition is traced back to Abū Sa^cīd al-Khudrī.

Aşim b. Kulayb b. Shihai declared to be a reliable transmi

The reading of the name 1111 Lf Abū 'Amr is the corre Ahmad b. Hamdān, the author died in 378,988 (cf., GAS, I, 204 at-Maxir, VII, 341; and al-Bayh whose full name is Muhammad au-Zāhid. He was the author of 345,956 (cf. Torribb Boghdad.)

Cf., Bayhaqi, Asmā (347 a different form; the point made i talgen as referring to God himsel

Some versions of this tradiused to mast flesh (cf., Zād al-A līm al-Jawzi adds; they will not mads) because "it is as if they ha

The last part of this tradition without versions of this tradition withe in which the text is traced it

term $[s\bar{a}q]$ is explicitly applied to God and the saying means: He will manifest (yakshifu) His power or might (shidda). What is predicated of God are His actions. The expression "He will bare it" means: He will remove [what conceals it]. 'Āṣim b. Kulayb⁶⁷ said: "I saw that Sa'īd b. Jubayr had become angry, and [people] were saying: 'He is baring His leg.' Here [in contrast to the tradition from the two Sahīhs] the expression refers to a grave or difficult situation (amr shadīd) [facing Sa'īd]." Abū 'Amr az-Zāhid, 68 however, noted that the term "leg" [construed metaphorically] may sometimes be used to refer to the person himself. It was in this sense that 'Alī—may God show him honor—used the term in connection with the Khārijites. When the latter said: "[We will accept] no judgment but God's," 'Alī responded: "I have no choice but to go to war against them even if my leg $(s\bar{a}q\bar{i})$ is destroyed." ⁶⁹According to this, [the tradition cited by Bukhārī and Muslim] may be taken to mean that [God] will manifest Himself (tajallī) to them. In a tradition reported by Abū Mūsā, the Prophet said: "[God] will remove the veil [surrounding Him], and they will see Him and prostrate themselves before Him. Some people, however, will remain [standing] as though [fol.13b] cattle's horns $(say\bar{a}s\bar{i})^{70}$ were put to their backs; they will wish to prostrate themselves [before Him] but will be unable to do so." 71

⁶⁷ ʿĀṣim b. Kulayb b. Shihāb al-Jarmī al-Kūfī (137/754), whom Ibn Maʿīn and Nasāʾī declared to be a reliable transmitter (Ibn Saʿd, *Ṭabaqāt*, VI, 341).

⁶⁸ The reading of the name is uncertain. It appears twice in *KAS* (here and again in §111). If Abū 'Amr is the correct reading, it is undoubtedly a question of Muḥammad b. Aḥmad b. Ḥamdān, the author of several works on the Quran and Arabic grammar, who died in 378/988 (cf., *GAS*, I, 204). However, in parallel passages in *DST*, 16; *BA*, 22a; *Zād al-Masīr*, VII, 341; and al-Bayhaqī, *Asmā*², 347, the name is given as Abū 'Umar az-Zāhid, whose full name is Muḥammad b. 'Abd al-Wāḥid b. Abī Hāshim Abū 'Umar al-Baghawī az-Zāhid. He was the author of a work on the *ḥadīth* (*Gharīb al-Ḥadīth*) and died in 345/956 (cf. *Ta²rīkh Baghdād*, II, 356-35; and *al-Kāmil*, VIII, 517).

 $^{^{69}}$ Cf., Bayhaqī, $Asm\bar{a}^2$ (347 and editor's note), where this tradition is cited in a slightly different form; the point made is the same, however. The reference to God's $s\bar{a}q$ is to be taken as referring to God himself.

⁷⁰ Some versions of this tradition use the term *safāfīd al-ḥadīd*, "curved prongs of iron" used to roast flesh (cf., *Zād al-Masīr*, VIII, 341). But these are not to be taken literally, for Ibn al-Jawzī adds: they will not be able to prostrate themselves (as the end of the tradition reads) because "it is *as if* they had iron meat-hooks in their backs."

⁷¹ The last part of this tradition is an allusion to the second half of S. 68:42. Although various versions of this tradition are to be found in the canonical collections, I have found none in which the text is traced back to Abū Mūsā.

48 The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{i}$ [Abū Ya'lā] maintained that "leg" ($s\bar{a}q$) is an essential attribute (sifa dhātīya). 72 He made comments of a similar nature in connection with [the prophetic saying]: "[God] will place His foot (qadam) in Hell," 73 and mentioned a tradition reported by Ibn Mas'ūd in which the Prophet is alleged to have said: "[God] will lay bare His right leg and the earth will glow from the light of His leg."—Referring to "foot" and "leg" [as divine attributes] is anthropomorphism (tashbīh) pure and simple, and it is impossible to suppose that the statement quoted from Ibn Mascūd is an authentic tradition. The divine attributes cannot be established on the basis of frivolous statements like these,74 nor can the divine essence be described as rays of light by which particular places are illuminated. There is no justification for speaking [of God] in these terms, for when [it is said that] He bares His leg, [it means that] He manifests His strength or power (shidda). Some people suppose that the expression "to lay [something] bare" (yakshifu) means "to make [that thing] manifest" (yuzhiru), whereas it has only [the negative] connotation of "removing" (yuzīlu, yarfa'u) [something?]. 75 Ibn Hāmid said:

"It is obligatory to believe attribute belonging to His view are infidels." If an use a serious offense; how claims to possess knowled [such expressions] metaph [for their approach] than I into consideration, wherea attributes belonging to the [anjsim] and a [finite] form

49 Among the texts [relatified] [God] seated himself (into h. Ahmad observed that which, when used by king that the term was well known in [early] Islam. Umayy

Bashdad 1397 1967 L 291, 7 M

وقد وصف نفسه The position set forth in the Mu^ctamad (53, 6-8) is somewhat different: وقد وصف نفسه ذلك سبحانه بالساق... وليس بجارحة ولا بمعنى الشدة ، بل صفة زائدة خلافًا للمعتزلة وللأشعريّة في نفي ذلكot in the sense of a corporeal entity or in the [metaphorical] sense of a grave matter (shidda); rather it is an additional attribute. This in contrast to the Mu^ctazila and the Ash'arīs who deny (that it is an attribute) and construe it as a trope for shidda). In the same paragraph he goes on to cite passages from the hadīth and the Quran to support his contention that sāq is a real attribute, though in what sense this is so is not explained other than that it is an attribute added to the divine essence. It is clear from §§37 and 38 that Ibn al-Jawzī's critique of Abū Yaʿlā in KAS is not concerned, for the most part, with the Mu^ctamad but rather with views set forth in his more popular works. What is not clear on the basis of the sources available to us is whether the "anthropomorphist" views ascribed to Abū Yaʿlā above belonged to a particular period of Abū Yaʿlā's life or whether he held two positions: one for public consumption and another for the benefit of his fellow Ḥanbalī theologians. The style and content of the Mu^ctamad suggest that it was meant for a fairly sophisticated circle of experts.

⁷³ These words or variations of them are found in a number of *ḥadīths* cited in the canonical collections: Muslim, *janna*, 37, 38; Bukhārī, *tafsīr al-qur³ān*, 50; *aymān*, 12; *tawḥīd*, 7; and Tirmidhi, *Janna*, 20.

⁷⁴ Literally, "khurāfian tales." The expression comes from a certain Khurāfa of the tribe of 'Udhra who, according to legend, was carried off by the Jinn and later, following his return, related his experiences. "Khurāfian statements" are claims based on fantasy—fictitious, far-fetched, outrageous claims.

⁷⁵ The point may appear to be a rather technical one, for to remove something (i.e., a

caver from something normall eye. What Ibn al-Jawzi apparent can be used in a metaphorical of a literal cover from a thing.

For other possible meaning Cf., S. 10:30: 13:2: 25:59:

Khalil b. Ahmad b. 'Ame amposer of the earliest lexico macqual teachers of Sibawayh as the founder of the Bassatt and his writings, see GAS. Visal bit, and Suppl. III. 1941. The committee of his life and pendic committees to the field DI-T. Selbeim makes the impatch sparked by his study of fine the source of this definite.

"It is obligatory to believe that God possesses a leg $(s\bar{a}q)$ and that it is an attribute belonging to His essence $(sifa\ li-dh\bar{a}tihi)$. Those who reject this view are infidels." If an uneducated person were to say such things it would be a serious offense; how much worse it is when the person in question claims to possess knowledge [of the sacred texts]! Indeed, those who interpret [such expressions] metaphorically $(muta^2awwil\bar{u}n)$ have greater justification [for their approach] than he since they at least take [current] Arabic usage into consideration, whereas the former who assert that "leg" and "foot" are attributes belonging to the divine essence end up by ascribing corporeality $(tajs\bar{u}m)$ and a [finite] form $(s\bar{u}ra)$ to God.

[The Seventh Text]

49 Among the texts [relating to the attributes] is the following verse: "Then [God] seated himself (*istawā*)⁷⁶ on the Throne (*'calā'l-'arsh*)" (7:54).⁷⁷ Khalīl b. Aḥmad⁷⁸ observed that a "throne" (*'arsh*) is an elevated seat (*sarīr*) which, when used by kings, is called an *'arsh*.⁷⁹ [He went on to point out] that the term was well known among the Arabs during the Jāhilīya as well as in [early] Islam. Umayya b. Abī'ṣ-Ṣalt said in one of his poems:

cover) from something normally implies rendering it visible, i.e., making it manifest to the eye. What Ibn al-Jawzī apparently wishes to insist on here is that the verb *kashafa*, *yakshifu* can be used in a metaphorical or figurative sense, in which case it does not mean removing a literal cover from a thing.

⁷⁶ For other possible meanings of the verb $istaw\bar{a}$, see the discussion that follows.

⁷⁷ Cf., S. 10:30; 13:2; 25:59; 32:4; and 57:4.

⁷⁸ Khalīl b. Aḥmad b. ʿAmr b. Tamīm Abū ʿAbd ar-Raḥmān al-Azdi (d. ca 175/791), composer of the earliest lexicon of the Arabic language (*Kitāb al-ʿAyn*), and one of the principal teachers of Sībawayhī, author of the celebrated *Kitāb*. Khalīl was regarded by many as the founder of the Basran "school" of Arabic grammar, and he remained a major influence in philological studies for most of the medieval period. For more on his life and a list of his writings, see *GAS*, VIII, 51-56; and IX, 44-48 (cf., *GAL*, I, 98-99; Suppl. I, 159-160; and Suppl. III, 194). Sellheim's article on him (*El²*, IV, 962-964) provides a useful overview of his life and place within linguistic studies in early Islam. For Khalīl's specific contributions to the field of lexicography, see Haywood, *Arabic Lexicography*, ch. 3 (20-27). Sellheim makes the important point that Khalīl's interest in linguistic studies was initially sparked by his study of the Quran and the *ḥadīth*.

⁷⁹ For the source of this definition, see Khalīl's *Kitāb al-ʿAyn*, ed., ʿAbd Allāh Darwīsh (Baghdad, 1397/1967), 291, 7 (cf., *Lisān al-ʿArab*, IV, 313/1, 22ff.).

Praise God, the One Who is deserving of our praise, Our Lord Who is great in the heavens.

By a supreme work which preceded mankind, He established a Throne (sarīr) above the heavens,

A Throne which no human eye can reach.

Beneath it angels will be seen prostrating themselves. 80

50 It should be noted that the term $istiw\bar{a}$? [the verbal noun of $istaw\bar{a}$] has a variety of meanings in current Arabic usage. In one of its uses it is a synonym for i^ctidāl (meaning "even" or "equal").⁸¹ This sense is expressed in a saying attributed to one of the Banū Tamīm: "The one who commits a wrong against a fellow tribesman and the person wronged are on a par with each other (istawā)," that is, the two of them are equal (istadalā). 82 The term istiwa? may also mean the perfection or completion of something (tamām ash-shay). Thus, the Quran says: "[Moses] achieved his full strength and reached maturity (istawā)," 83 meaning that he became an adult. [fol.14a] The term $istiw\bar{a}$ may also mean to form an intention to do $(qasd\ il\bar{a})$ something. When the Quran says: "thumma istawā ilā as-samā"," 84 it means, He formed an intention (qaşd) to create them (the heavens). Finally, the term istiwā' is sometimes used to mean "making oneself master over" $(ist\bar{\imath}l\bar{a}^{2}$ cal \bar{a}) something, 85 as one of the poets has said:

Then Bishr made his Without resorting to Or, as another poet has sa

> Whenever he raids an He takes their wome And by the time morn He has made himself

51 Ismā'il b. Abī Khālie is described as cons were in agreement that restould be left to stand as englamation (ta'wil). 'Abd ! MIN b. Anas when a m according to the Quran! How is the exp and began to perspire head and said: 'The ex Quran! It is not for us to Throne or His rising from herenic!" [Mālik then said to was ordered to leave. "

52 More recently, however God's "sitting on the Three

from the Arabic sent.

⁸⁰ Umajja ibn Abíṣ Ṣalt, ed. by F. Schulthess (Leipzig 1911), 42, 30ff. (trans. p. 100, 3-10). Also see Zād al-Masīr, III, 212, 17ff.

⁸¹ Cf., Lane, 1477/3-1478/1.

⁸² That is, equal in the sense that both fall within the jurisdiction of the same legal entity, the law of the tribe, to which both belong, in contrast to those situations in which the perpetrator and the victim belong to different tribes. This seems to be the sense in which Ibn al-Jawzī uses the term istawā/ictadala here.

⁸³ S. 28: 14.

⁸⁴ S. 2: 99. See Zād al-Masīr, I, 58, where Ibn al-Jawzī glosses this verse with the words: أي عمد إلى خلقها (he formed an intention, or resolved, to create them).

⁸⁵ Abū Ya^clā points out in the Mu^c tamad (54, 11ff.) that $istīl\bar{a}^o$ was characteristic of the Mu^ctazilī interpretation of *istiwā*². This is confirmed by both al-Ash^carī (*Maqālāt*, 211, 14) and al-Baghdādī ($Us\bar{u}l$, 112, 7-8). R. Frank remarks that most Ash arites "do not accept the equivalence of $ist\bar{\imath}l\bar{a}$ for $istiw\bar{a}$ " in connection with the Quranic expression $istaw\bar{a}$ ' $al\bar{a}$ 'l-'arsh(al-Ghazālī and the Ash arite School, 41 and ns. 22 and 24 [pp. 118-119]). In his Zād al-Masīr (III, 213), Ibn al-Jawzī sides with the Ash arites in rejecting the view that istiwā as used in the Quran is synonymous with $ist\bar{\imath}l\bar{a}^{2}$.

A line from the poetry of alline is frequently quoted in med a-Be bagi, ArmiF. 412; June yei.

Or, perhaps "violates their sa I have not identified the source

The name and identity of the 34 (8st. 22b) the name appears as II. 213, the final of the report of found the report in any other of) the report is to be taken as a proph

^{* 5. 305.}

[&]quot;Or perhaps: his elevation above

¹⁶ CE, Baybaqi, Asmar. 404, 6-10

Then Bishr made himself master over (istawā ʿalā) Iraq, Without resorting to the sword or the shedding of blood. 86 Or, as another poet has said:

Whenever he raids another tribe
He takes their women captive, 87
And by the time morning dawns
He has made himself master (*istawā ʿalā*) of what they possess. 88

51 Ismā'īl b. Abī Khālid aṭ-Ṭā'ī reported a tradition in which the Throne ('arsh) is desoribed as consisting of red sapphire. 89 All of the salaf, however, were in agreement that references to God's "sitting on the Throne ('arsh)" should be left to stand as they are without exegetical comment (tafsīr) or explanation (ta²wīl). 'Abd Allāh b. Wahb said: "We were in the company of Mālik b. Anas when a man came up to him and said: 'O 'Abd Allāh, [according to the Quran] "Raḥmān is seated on the Throne ('alā'l-'arsh istawā)." How is the expression istawā to be understood?' Mālik looked down and began to perspire [as though he had a fever]. After a bit he raised his head and said: 'The expression is to be taken as it is presented [in the Quran]. It is not for us to inquire into the modality [of His sitting on the Throne] or His rising from it ('anhu marfū'). You are an evil man and a heretic!' [Mālik then said to his associates:] 'Ask him to leave!' And so he was ordered to leave."

52 More recently, however, some people have interpreted the attribute [of God's "sitting on the Throne"] in accordance with the dictates of sense

al-Bayhaqī, Asmā², 412; Juwaynī, al-Luma^c [ed. Allard], 151; etc.).

translates

⁸⁶ A line from the poetry of al-Akhṭal (cf., Lane, 1478/1; and *Lisān*, XIV, 414/1). This line is frequently quoted in medieval discussions of *istiwā*² (cf., *Zād al-Masīr*, III, 21;

⁸⁷ Or, perhaps "violates their sanctuary."

⁸⁸ I have not identified the source of this line.

⁹⁰ S. 20:5.

⁹¹ Or perhaps: his elevation above it or his being exalted over it.

⁹² Cf., Bayhaqī, *Asmā*³, 404, 6-10.

experience, and so they say: "God Himself (bi-dhāti) actually sits on the Throne." This, however, is an amplification [of the Quranic text] which has not come down to us [from an accredited authority]. This understanding has no other source than sense experience, since the person who sits on something does so literally in person. Ibn Ḥāmid said: "Istiwā' implies contact (mumāssa) and is to be predicated as an attribute belonging to the divine essence; hence, [the term istiwā'] ought to be taken as meaning 'sitting' (qu'ūd). Some [of our fellow Ḥānbalīs] have insisted that while God is on the Throne ('arsh) He does not actually fill all of it and [so] He will invite the Prophet to occupy it with Him." [Ibn Ḥāmid] added: "God's descent (nuzūl) [from the Throne] involves movement from one location to another (intiqāl)." This line of thought, however, implies that God Himself (dhātuhu) is actually smaller than the Throne. How such persons can claim that they do not conceive God in corporeal terms (mujassima) is beyond comprehension.

53 Ibn Zāghūnī⁹⁵ was asked whether a new attribute came into being upon the creation of the Throne (*'arsh*) which had not existed previously, ⁹⁶ and he replied: "No, only the world was created with the attribute of being 'beneath' (*sifat at-taḥt*) and so, in relation to [the Throne which God occupies], the world [fol.14b] is lower (*asfal*). Now when the attribute 'beneath' is established for one of the two entities (*dhātayni*), the attribute 'above' (*ṣifat al-fawq*) is established for the other as a logical corollary.⁹⁷

Since it has been established divine essence (fi dhanh) separation (infisālulas) from space (madan) in relation the Quran] says: 'Then IG He meant to specify His have no alternative, theref described as having 'define 54 This man does not ui when he ascribes to God a the Creator and His creati effect, declares Him to be mit an atom (jawhar) sino infurraca)," but then he gi Died or the origination of an anti-h in municipal came to be established are creased and hen in a possible for Him to exist as God occupies a Flat where much the same kind of lan Him God, conceived as he the said to occupy space, as the last assume that something in al-law ri. For the lamer.

estedly in the following paragr

DOT 179), where the reading

The inference seems to be

God's relationship to space, but I a thinge to God or the origination

The expression ruband to

menuncation" or "boundaries" pu

" On the basis of the inform

lim Zigrain's works the al-laws

In Coming works preserved in

are the Turnin Hadish al-Att and

But worth are now lost. The in

with levisted to the question of

District, 1977). For more on the w

⁹³ In the sense in which it is understood in human experience.

⁹⁴ See, e.g., the *Ibāna* of Ibn Baṭṭa, ed. H. Laoust (Arabic text, 61) where this point of view is set forth in unequivocal terms. Cf., *KAS*, §§186-188, where the issue is revisited in connection with a saying ascribed to ${}^{c}\bar{A}^{2}$ isha.

⁹⁵ On Ibn Zāghūnī, see notes to §37.

⁹⁶ Since the 'arsh was created by God, and since God cannot be said to have been on the throne prior to its creation, can He be said to have possessed the attribute of <code>istiwā</code> prior to the Throne's creation? Most Ḥanbalīs, like traditionalist Muslims generally, held that God's attributes, as well as His essence, are eternal. For specifically Ḥanbalī statements on the 'arsh, see e.g., 'Aqīda, I, the longest creed attributed to Ibn Ḥanbal (<code>Tabaqāt al-Ḥanābila</code>, I, 28-29); the 'Aqīda of Abū Muḥammad at-Tamīmī (<code>Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila</code>, II, 297); and the <code>al-ʿAqīdat al-Wāsiṭīya</code> of Ibn Taymīya (<code>Majmū-ʿat ar-Rasā-ʾil al-Kubrā</code>, I, 391-411, espec., 397-400). For a translation of Ibn Taymīya's 'aqīda, see M. Swartz, "A Seventh-Century (A. H.) Sunnī Creed: The 'Aqīda Wāsiṭīya of Ibn Taymīya," <code>Humaniora Islamica</code>, I, 91-131, espec., 114-117).

⁹⁷ Ibn Zāghūnī's solution seems to be that the creation of the carsh was the occasion or point in time at which the right to be characterized as possessing the attributes of $istiw\bar{a}^a$ and $fawq\bar{\imath}ya$ were established for God. But for Ibn Zāghūnī that does not imply change in

Since it has been established that there are no 'places' $(am\bar{a}kin)^{98}$ within the divine essence $(f\bar{\imath}\ dh\bar{a}tihi)$ nor does He $(dh\bar{a}tuhu)$ exist within them—His separation $(infi\bar{\imath}\bar{a}luhu)$ from them being clear "—it is necessary to posit a space $(madan)^{100}$ in relation to which this separation occurred. Thus when [the Quran] says: 'Then [God] seated Himself on the Throne' we know that He_meant to specify His location within a particular space (jiha). We have no alternative, therefore, but to conclude that His essence [may be described as] having 'defined limits' $(nih\bar{a}ya\ wa-gh\bar{a}ya)^{102}$ which He knows."

54 This man does not understand the implications of what he says, for when he ascribes to God a $gh\bar{a}ya$ and a fasl, that is, a separation between the Creator and His creation, he imposes limits ($hud\bar{u}d$) on Him and, in effect, declares Him to be a body (jism). In his book he writes: ¹⁰³ "God is not an atom (jawhar) since an atom is an entity that occupies space ($m\bar{a}tahayyaza$)," but then he goes on to ascribe to God a place ($mak\bar{a}n$) which

God or the origination of an attribute in time. It only means that God's right to be characterized as $mustaw\bar{\imath}$ came to be established in time.

⁹⁸ Amākin are created and hence finite; no such entities can exist within God's being, nor is it possible for Him to exist within them. And yet, despite this, Ibn Zāghūnī goes on to claim that God occupies a *jiha* (space) by virtue of his being on the Throne. Cf., §55, where much the same kind of language is used.

⁹⁹ How God, conceived as being (in his essence) independent of space, can now (in time) be said to occupy space, as Ibn Zāghūnī clearly maintains, is difficult to comprehend, unless we assume that something is left out of Ibn Zāghūnī's argument as here presented by Ibn al-Jawzī. For the latter, quite clearly, the argument is flawed, a point he makes repeatedly in the following paragraphs.

 $^{^{100}}$ DST (19), where the reading is بدء, gives the sentence a temporal (rather than spatial) sense.

¹⁰¹ The inference seems to be that the creation of the Throne marks the beginning of God's relationship to space, but Ibn Zāghūnī also wants to insist that none of this involved a change in God or the origination of a new attribute.

The expression nihaya $wa-gh\bar{a}ya$ here seems to convey the notion of "lines of demarcation" or "boundaries" put somewhat crudely.

 $^{^{103}}$ On the basis of the information given in KAS, it is impossible to determine which of Ibn Zāghūnī's works Ibn al-Jawzī is here referring to. However, judging from the titles of Ibn Zāghūnī's works preserved in the biographical dictionaries, the two most likely candidates are his Taṣḥīḥ Ḥadīth al-Aṭīṭ and his $al-\bar{I}dāh fī Uṣūl ad-Dīn$, works on dogmatic theology. Both works are now lost. The title of the former, however, would suggest that it was a work devoted to the question of the carsh and the related issue of $istiw\bar{a}^a$ (cf., Ibn Rajab, Dhayl, I, 181). For more on the writings of Ibn Zāghūnī, see notes to §37.

He occupies (yatahayyaz). All of this reflects the ignorance of its author and is anthropomorphism (tashbīh) in its purest form. This shaykh does not comprehend what is necessarily entailed in God's status as Creator or what is incompatible with that status, for God's existence is not like the existence of atoms and bodies which occupy space necessarily. Spatial relations of "below" and "above" apply only to entities which stand over against each other or exist side by side. 104 It is a matter of logical necessity that one such entity be larger than another, or smaller than it or equal to it. Relationships of this sort, however, apply only to bodies (ajsām). Whenever bodies are juxtaposed they admit of contact. Whatever admits of contact with (mumāssa), or separation from (mubāyana), bodies must have a beginning in time (hādith), for it has been shown that the proof of the temporal origination (hudūth) of atoms lies in the fact that they admit of contact and separation. 105 If such persons allow the attribution of [contact and separation] to God they concede His contingency (hadath), but if they deny [contingency while at the same time allowing Him the possibility of contact and separation] they leave us no way by which to establish the contingency of atoms. It is absurd to suppose that two beings, one independent of spatial relations (mustaghniyan 'an al-maḥall wa'l-ḥayyiz) and the other dependent on location in space (muḥtājan fī'l-ḥayyiz), can be either contiguous to each other (mutajāwir)¹⁰⁶ or separate from each other (mutabāyin), for contiguity (tajāwur) and separation (tabāyun) are concomitant attributes (lawāzim) of things that occupy space. How can a being who is free of localization in space—indeed, one for whom such localization is impossible—be contiguous to something other than itself or separate from it since it has been established that conjunction ($ijtim\bar{a}^c$) and separation ($iftir\bar{a}q$) are attributes inseparable from things located in space? Localization in space (tahayyuz) cannot be attributed to God, for if He were localized in space (mutaḥayyiz) He would either have to be at rest in the space that He occupies or moving from it. It is not possible that He should be characterized by movement (haraka), or rest ($suk\bar{u}n$), or conjunction ($ijtim\bar{a}^c$), or separation ($iftir\bar{a}q$). What is contiguous with something or separate from it is [fol.15a] finite in its essence, and since a finite being is defined by limits it requires a cause to determine [that

condition].

55 For this reason one sh al-calam) or that He is ours are concomitant attributes these relations along with i accidents (a^crād) are constin "No 'places' (amākin) were c from them (infisāluhu canh The divine essence does not inhering in it. From the van would require of God what location in space is the m necessarily excludes the po space. The views of these pa this encouraged them to emb and led to confusion. so m referred to His sitting on th is the thing nearest to H notion of spatial proximity Another among them said: portion of the divine essen contiguous to all of the divi to corporeal terms (tajsimi essence]. It is difficult for externent can be a member the view that God is actual werses "Goodly speech asce = -aāhir fawqa) His creatu nerms of spatial elevation

¹⁰⁴ That is, entities whose relationship to each other is spatially defined.

¹⁰⁵ Cf., §§5 and 9, among others.

¹⁰⁶ Or, are in contact with each other.

A reference to Ibn Zāghūni

KAS, where words similar to the

I have not found these w

Cf_ §§192, 193 and 213.

^{\$ 35: 10.}

S. 6: 18 (also verse 61).

condition].

55 For this reason one should not say that God is inside the world $(d\bar{a}khil)$ al-'ālam') or that He is outside it (khārij minhu), for being inside or outside are concomitant attributes (lawāzim) of things located in space. Both of these relations along with movement (haraka), rest (sukūn), and the other accidents ($a^c r \bar{a} d$) are constitutive of bodies ($ajr \bar{a} m$). Regarding their ¹⁰⁷ words: "No 'places' (amākin) were created in the divine essence, and so His separation from them (infisāluhu 'anhā) was established," I would respond as follows: The divine essence does not admit of any created entity existing within it or inhering in it. From the vantage point of sense experience, separation (fasl) would require of God what it requires of atoms, for inherent in the idea of location in space is the notion that what exists within a defined space necessarily excludes the possibility of anything like it occupying that same space. The views of these people are based entirely on sense experience, and this encouraged them to embrace an anthropomorphist point of view (tashbīh) and led to confusion, so much so, that one of their number said: "God referred to His sitting on the Throne (istiwa) only because, of all existents, it is the thing nearest to Him." 108 This too is based on ignorance, for the notion of spatial proximity is conceivable only in relation to finite bodies. Another among them said: "The surface of the Throne is contiguous to that portion of the divine essence that is next to it, and so [the Throne] is not contiguous to all of the divine essence." 109 To speak thus is to reduce God to corporeal terms (tajsīm) and to introduce division (tab'īd) [into His essence]. It is difficult for me [to understand] how the author of such a statement can be a member of the Hanbali school. As evidence in support of the view that God is actually on the Throne, one of them appealed to the verses "Goodly speech ascends to Him" 110 and "He is all-powerful above (al-qāhir fawqa) His creatures." 111 They construe this [literally, that is,] in terms of spatial elevation (fawqīya hissīya) and they associate this spatial

 $^{^{107}}$ A reference to Ibn Zāghūnī and those who shared his views. See §53, of the Arabic of *KAS*, where words similar to those that follow are attributed to Ibn Zāghūnī.

 $^{^{108}}$ I have not found these words cited elsewhere, though the source is probably a Hanbalī.

¹⁰⁹ Cf., §§192, 193 and 213.

¹¹⁰ S. 35: 10.

¹¹¹ S. 6: 18 (also verse 61). Cf., §212, where this same verse is cited and briefly discussed.

elevation with finite bodies and atoms. They forget, however, that the notion of elevation (fawqīya) is sometimes used to connote the idea of elevation in rank or status ('ulūw ar-rutba) as, for example, when we say that so and so is above (fawqa) so and so. 112 Just as [the Quran] refers to God as being "above (fawqa) His creatures" 113 it also refers to Him as being "with you" (ma'akum). 114 Those who interpret [ma'akum] 115 to mean [God's being "with you" in] His knowledge ('ilm) provide their opponents with encouragement to interpret istiwā' as connoting His might or power (qahr). 116

56 I was informed by 'Alī b. Muḥammad b. Abī 'Umar ad-Dabbās, 117 on

the authority of Rizq Alläh Hanbal [fol.15b] used to sa reservation, but it does not or elevation above (istrili) at Tamīmī]. Aḥmad did no particular place (jiha), for f Hāmid, however, stated: "place to the exclusion of place—the locus of His wen Hanbalīs] maintains that C most acceptable view is that M-sarsh) and that the land myolves a relationship that spared nothing [in promotion 57 It should be understo

spatial terms (wujūdan ma space (jiha), are like those defined (wujūdan zamāniya time and His priority to groundless speculation (tab) are equal [in size] relative

لله...فوق See, e.g., Mushkil, 453, 15-17, where Ibn Fūrak sets forth an Ash arite view: لله...فوق خلقه وأنّ ذلك راجع إلى فوقية المنزلة والرتبة وفوقيّة القدرة العظمة. وأمّا الفوقيّة بالمسافة والمكان فمُحال (God is above His creation in the sense that he is above [it] in rank, degree, power and majesty. As for His being above [it] in the spatial sense—it is impossible to describe Him thus [cf., also 173-175]).

¹¹³ S. 6: 18 and 61.

with the words: أي بعلمه وقدرته (cf., VIII, 188, 3, where in connection with a similar expression, Ibn al-Jawzī adds: أي علمه معهم). See also Bayhaqī, $Asm\bar{a}^2$, 430-431, who attributes this interpretation to a number of early authorities, among them Sufyān ath-Thawrī, Daḥḥāk and Muqātil b. Ḥayyān. As Ibn al-Jawzī well knew, this interpretation of ma^cakum was accepted by Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal (cf., $Tabaq\bar{a}t$ $al-Ḥan\bar{a}bila$, I, 29, 1) and by most Ḥanbalīs after him, even literal-minded Ḥanbalīs notwithstanding the fact that this interpretation entailed a metaphorical or quasi metaphorical exegesis of the expression.

The pronoun object of α may actually have been intended to include both expressions, not just the ma^cakum .

¹¹⁶ It is not clear from the above whether Ibn al-Jawzī supports this interpretation of $istiw\bar{a}^2$ or is opposed to it or means to take a non-committal position. I am inclined to believe that despite Ibn al-Jawzī's seeming reticence in declaring himself openly on the question, he is actually sympathetic to the view that qahr is the meaning of $istiw\bar{a}$. Could this reticence here have something to do with the fact that $istiw\bar{a}^2 = qahr$ was an interpretation favored by the Mu^ctazila?

¹¹⁷ ^cAli. b. Muḥammad b. Abī ^cUmar al-Bazzāz, more commonly known as Abū'l-Ḥasan ad-Dabbās, who died in 549/1154. The only biographical notices I have found on him come from Ibn al-Jawzī's *Muntaṣam* (X, 160) and his *Mashyakha* (137-139, no. 47). In these two brief notices, Ibn al-Jawzī reports that he studied under Abū'l-Ḥasan ad-Dabbās for a time. Abū'l-Ḥasan was undoubtedly a Ḥanbalī judging from the fact that he counted among his own teachers two of the most important Ḥanbalī scholars of his time, viz., Abū Muḥammad at-Tamīmī (d. 488/1095) and Ibn ^cAqīl (d. 513/1119). We know from a number of his writings (including *KAS*) that Ibn al-Jawzī was deeply influenced by both

men, and it was undoubtedly from

Abū Muḥammad Rizq A līb imerpreter of Aḥmad's teaching, a al-Hanābila, II. 292-308). For mo

Ci.. Tabaqāt al-Hanāba 1

Cf. §193. where similar word

See §44 where, apart from identical to the one above. The use §44 where it is a question of major in Ibn al-Jawzi's use of the two boddly attributes to God and is Tankbih is clearly the broader of with what is not God. For Ibn al-

This view implies that God's of space and time.

the authority of Rizq Allāh b. 'Abd al-Wahhāb at-Tamīmī, ¹¹⁸ that Aḥmad b. Hanbal [fol.15b] used to say: "Istiwā' is an attribute to be accepted without reservation, but it does not entail the notion of movement toward (qaṣd ilā) or elevation above (isti'lā') [something]." According to [Abū Muḥammad at-Tamīmī], Aḥmad did not hold the view that the Creator exists within a particular place (jiha), for finite spaces exclude what is outside them. ¹¹⁹ Ibn Ḥāmid, however, stated: "God is defined by [His location] in a particular place to the exclusion of other places (bi-makān dūna makān); and His place—the locus of His very essence—is on the Throne. Indeed, a group [of Ḥanbalīs] maintains that God fills the Throne on which He [sits]. ¹²⁰ The most acceptable view is that He is in actual contact with the Throne (mumāssa) involves a relationship that can only exist between two bodies. This man spared nothing [in promoting] a corporealist point of view (tajsīm)! ¹²¹

57 It should be understood that those who conceive God's existence in spatial terms ($wuj\bar{u}dan\ mak\bar{a}n\bar{i}yan$), thus requiring His location in finite space (jiha), are like those who imagine that His existence is temporally defined ($wuj\bar{u}dan\ zam\bar{a}n\bar{i}yan$), thereby requiring His existence within finite time and His priority to the world as temporal in nature. Both are groundless speculation ($takhy\bar{i}l$), for it has been shown that all spaces ($jih\bar{a}t$) are equal [in size] relative to the thing (or being) that admits of [location

men, and it was undoubtedly from ad-Dabbās that he received at least some of his knowledge of their writings.

¹¹⁸ Abū Muḥammad Rizq Allāh b. 'Abd al-Wahhāb at-Tamīmī (d. 488/1095), an important interpreter of Aḥmad's teaching, and also the author of an important Ḥanbalī creed (*Ṭabaqāt al-Hanābila*, II, 292-308). For more on Abū Muḥmmad at-Tamīmī, see notes to §32.

¹¹⁹ Cf., *Ṭabaqāt al-Hanābila*, II, 296-297.

 $^{^{120}}$ Cf., §193, where similar words are ascribed to Abū Yaʻlā, though with some qualification.

 $^{^{121}}$ See §44 where, apart from reading $tashb\bar{t}h$ for $tajs\bar{t}m$, the concluding sentence is identical to the one above. The use of the term $tajs\bar{t}m$ above in §56 (in contrast to $tashb\bar{t}h$ in §44 where it is a question of nafs or $r\bar{u}h$ in relation to God) reflects an important distinction in Ibn al-Jawzī's use of the two terms. By $tajs\bar{t}m$ he specifically means the predication of bodily attributes to God and is quite close in meaning to the term $tab^c\bar{t}d$ (composite). $Tashb\bar{t}h$ is clearly the broader of the two terms and refers to any attempt to compare God with what is not God. For Ibn al-Jawzī, and undoubtedly for the $mutakallim\bar{u}m$ in general, $tajs\bar{t}m$ is a particular kind of $tashb\bar{t}h$.

¹²² This view implies that God's existence presupposes the logical priority of the categories of space and time.

in] space (jiha). 123 The thing's determination (ikhtiṣāṣ) by virtue of its being located in a particular space is not necessary to its essence (wājib li-dhātihi) but rather possible $(j\bar{a}^{2}iz)$. Thus it follows that it is dependent on a cause capable of determining [its spatial specification]. Its being qualified (ikhtiṣāṣ) in that respect is an addition to its essence (zā')id 'alā dhātihi). 124 What admits of possibility (jawāz) cannot be eternal, for an eternal being is that being whose existence is necessary to the totality of defined spaces ($iih\bar{a}t$). Every being that exists within such space (jiha) is, therefore, determined (muqaddar) and thus limited (maḥdūd). [God], however, is beyond that. Only atoms and bodies admit of spatial existence since they are entities which depend on localization in a particular space, for no defined space can exist within [another] space. When the impossibility of [God's existence] in space is established, so also is the impossibility of His existence in a particular place (makān). This makes it clear that a place, when it exists, circumscribes what is in it. Nothing, however, can circumscribe the Creator. nor do any of His attributes admit of origination in time.

58 If someone should point out that the two Ṣaḥīḥs contain a tradition concerning the Prophet's ascension reported by Sharīk b. Abī Namir in which Anas [b. Mālik] said: "Then [Gabriel] took [the Prophet] into the presence of the Almighty and, being in his place (fī makānihi), the Prophet said: 'O Lord, decrease [the obligations] which You placed upon us,'"125 we would respond by noting the following remarks of Abū Sulaymān [fol.16a] al-Khaṭṭābī: "The expression [fī makānihi] is found only in that version of the tradition reported by Sharīk." No other transmitter reported it.

Indeed, among the tradition objectionable expressions. It to be taken as referring to first rank or station (maquin Abū Sulaymān al-Khaṇābi have an audience with my I expression dār] was presume in His dār. [the Prophet] [God] has prepared for His in his Kitāb al-Mustamad al-makān)." [13]

59 If someone argues the existent] is, in effect, to read

Nest regarded him as an unreliable 269-270), the scholarly operation in regard to the tradition when transmitted from him to

¹²³ This may reflect the view, widely held in medieval *kalām*, that space like matter is discrete, i.e., it consists of "cells" of the same size as the bodies that occupy them. For more on this view of space as consisting of discrete units, see Dhanani, *Physical Theory*, 51ff.

¹²⁴ Since the power to determine its location in space is not intrinsic to its essence but is caused by something other than itself, that specification is said to be "added to" or "over and above" its essence.

¹²⁵ For citations of this *hadīth*, see Bukhārī, *tawhīd*, 37; Bayhaqī, $Asm\bar{a}^2$, 438-439; and Ibn Khuzayma, $Tawh\bar{\imath}d$, 210-213 (cf., also 139-140). I have not found the tradition (as cited above) in the $Sah\bar{\imath}h$ of Muslim, though a somewhat different version attributed to Sharīk (minus the expression $f\bar{\imath}$ $mak\bar{a}nih\bar{\imath}$) is found in $\bar{\imath}m\bar{a}n$, 262. In comments appended to this tradition, Muslim expresses grave doubts regarding Sharīk's reliability as a transmitter.

¹²⁶ For more on al-Khattābī, see notes to §27.

¹²⁷ In his *Kitāb aḍ-Ḍuʿafā*² (II, 40), Ibn al-Jawzī gives his full name as Sharīk b. ʿAbd Allāh b. Abī Namir Abū ʿAbd Allāh al-Madanī, and notes that both Yaḥyā b. Maʿīn and

For the details, see the full te

Part of a lengthy hadith consists versions of this tradition in what and Musnad, III, 244. Qualidate instances. The same tradition assent: Bukhārī, riqāq, 51; tamini land. III. 116.

Cf.. Lisān, IV, 298/1, 20-21, من دار السلام والله عز رجل هو السلام والله عز رجل هو السلام والله عز رجل هو السلام said, in His Paradise which i المسلمة sanalysis of this expression is cited. 429, where the tradition is cited.

This is a rough paraphrase of firm in the Mustamad (56-57); the and it is impossible to describe to say, however, that the area who say that He is in that he is in a particular parameters.

Indeed, among the traditions transmitted by him there are a number of objectionable expressions. The [pronoun] in the expression 'his place' is not to be taken as referring to God, but rather to the Prophet, and denotes the first rank or station ($maq\bar{a}m$) assigned to him [as the seal of the Prophet]." Abū Sulaymān al-Khaṭṭābī added: "In the prophetic saying 'I will ask to have an audience with my Lord while He is in His House ($f\bar{i}$ $d\bar{a}rihi$),' [the expression $d\bar{a}r$] was presumed to be the equivalent of $mak\bar{a}n$; by the expression 'in His $d\bar{a}r$,' [the Prophet] was referring only to the abode ($d\bar{a}r$) which [God] has prepared for His saints." As the $Q\bar{a}d\bar{i}$ Abū Yaʻlā [rightly] states in his $Kit\bar{a}b$ al-Muʻtamad: "God is not to be described as being in a place (al- $mak\bar{a}n$)." 131

59 If someone argues that the denial of spatial relations ($jih\bar{a}t$) [to an existent] is, in effect, to render its existence ($wuj\bar{u}d$) impossible, our response

Nasāʾī regarded him as an unreliable transmitter (ليس بالقوي). According to Dhahabī (Mīzān, II, 269-270), the scholarly opinion on Sharīk was divided. Abū Dāwūd regarded him as reliable, while Ibn Ḥazm regarded him as weak. Ibn ʿAdī, on the other hand, advised caution in regard to the traditions transmitted by Sharīk: his traditions are to be accepted only when transmitted from him by persons known to be trustworthy.

ınd

¹²⁸ For the details, see the full text of the tradition in Bukhārī (*tawḥīd*, 37).

¹²⁹ Part of a lengthy $had\bar{\imath}th$ concerning the Prophet's intercession on the day of judgment. For versions of this tradition in which the expression $f\bar{\imath}$ $d\bar{a}rihi$ occurs, see Bukhārī, $tawh\bar{\imath}d$, 24; and Musnad, III, 244. Qatāda is the transmitter of the tradition from Anas b. Mālik in both instances. The same tradition occurs in the following, but in all cases $f\bar{\imath}$ $d\bar{a}rihi$ is absent: Bukhārī, $riq\bar{a}q$, 51; $tawh\bar{\imath}d$, 19, 36; Muslim $\bar{\imath}m\bar{a}n$, 322; Ibn Māja, zuhd, 37; and Musnad, III, 116.

أي في حضرة قدسه 130 Cf., $Lis\bar{a}n$, IV, 298/1, 20-21, where fi $d\bar{a}rihi$ is glossed as follows: أي في حضرة قدسه (that is, in His Sanctuary or, as is said, in His Paradise which is also called $D\bar{a}r$ as- $Sal\bar{a}m$, for God is as- $Sal\bar{a}m$). For Bayhaqī's analysis of this expression, see $Asm\bar{a}$, 442, 15ff. (cf., Ibn Ḥajar, Fath, al- $B\bar{a}ri$, XIII, 429, where the tradition is cited and the various interpretations discussed).

¹³¹ This is a rough paraphrase of Abū Yaʻlā's position on the question of makān as set forth in the Muʻtamad (56-57); the first part of the passage reads: ولا يجوز وصفه بأنه في كلّ ويجوز أن يقال أنّه تعالى في السماء على العرش، خلافًا للمعتزلة في قولهم: هو في مكان، والأشعريّة في قولهم: لا يجوز إطلاق القول عليه بأنّه في مكان، والأشعريّة نقي قولهم: لا يجوز إطلاق القول عليه بأنّه في السماء مكان، والمجسّمة في قولهم: هو في مكان، والأشعريّة نقي قولهم: لا يجوز إطلاق القول عليه بأنّه في السماء مكان، والمجسّمة في قولهم: هو في مكان، والأشعريّة نقي قولهم: لا يجوز إطلاق القول عليه بأنّه في السماء مكان، والمجسّمة في قولهم: هو في مكان، والأشعريّة في قولهم: لا يجوز إطلاق القول عليه بأنّه في السماء مكان، والمحسّمة في قولهم: هو في مكان، والأشعريّة في المعارفة القول عليه بأنّه في السماء مكان، والمحسّمة في قولهم: هو في مكان، والأشعريّة في المعارفة القول عليه بأنّه في السماء مكان، والمحسّمة في قولهم: هو في مكان، والأشعريّة في المعارفة القول عليه بأنّه في السماء على المعرفة القول عليه بأنّه في المعرفة المعرفة القول عليه بأنّه في المعرفة ال

is that if the existent (mawjūd) in question admits of contact (ittiṣāl) and separation (infiṣāl) the objection stands. But if [the existent] does not admit of either, the objection carries no weight, as the following will show. If you were to maintain that every existent (mawjūd) must either be knowing or not-knowing, I would respond: only if that existent is one that admits of both possibilities. 132 If it does not admit of either, as in the case of a wall, for example, neither knowledge or its opposite can be ascribed to it. And so we refuse to predicate of the Creator anything that might entail origination in time (hadath). If someone should say: "Your position requires that we posit [the reality of] what lies beyond the reach of the cognitive faculty (fahm)," my response is that if by "cognitive faculty" you mean the power to form images and concepts (at-takhayyul wa't-tasawwur) drawn from sense experience [you are right], for the Creator cannot be known through such since He cannot be perceived by the senses. Only bodies that admit of color and size fall into that category, for the imagination (khayāl), having apprehended objects of perception (mubṣarāt), can only form images on the basis of what it perceives since images are derived from sense experience. But if you mean that [God] cannot be known by the intellect ('aql) [then you are in error], for we have shown on the basis of evidence that [His existence] can be established by reason since the intellect is compelled to acknowledge as true (taṣdīq) what is indicated by the evidence (dalīl). You should know that since your experience is limited to bodies, atoms and accidents, and since you know that God is beyond such things through rational proofs (dalīl al-caql) which dissuade you from supposing otherwise, [these same proofs] ought to dissuade you from supposing that He is a being who occupies space (mutaḥayyiz) or that movement (mutaḥarrik) or change of locality (muntaqil) can be predicated of Him. Since the layman ('āmmī) [fol.16b] does not understand such matters, our advice is that he not be exposed to what he cannot grasp. Do not disturb him, but rather let him remain secure in his beliefs. Make the way easy for him so that he need not inhabit the mountains. 133 All that one need say [on the question of istiwa?] is that God is on the Throne in a way that is consonant with His being.134

Another verse [that has it "Are you certain regarding established beyond question sense, for, although the preparation of the p

61 Among the verses [discus to be taken as a reference to be taken as a ref

They also constitute part of the part of the

See §§122-123, where lbn at speak of God's being in heaven. Throne above the heavens," however, any kind of limitation on mean able to determine, Ahmad not relation to the heavens. For Al.

S. 39: 56. and the only refer to a longer passage in whice source they are certain to suffer the the best of what has been so you suddenly before you to boughtlessly done in regard

That is, the obedience which

CL_DST. 23. 5, where in pla

¹³² Literally: only if that being admits of the two opposites.

¹³³ That is, rugged and dangerous terrain. Make matters easy for the lay person so that he need not face difficulties that might undermine his faith.

¹³⁴ As one of Baghdad's leading preachers, these sentences reflect his "pastoral" concerns.

[The Eighth Text]

60 Another verse [that has been the subject of controversy] is the following: "Are you certain regarding Him Who is in the heavens?" It has been established beyond question that this verse cannot be taken in its literal sense, for, although the preposition "in" $(f\bar{i})$ denotes the location of something within a spatial or temporal receptacle $(li'z-zarf\bar{i}ya)$, God is not a being contained within a receptacle $(mazr\bar{u}f)$. If sense perception is not allowed to exercise a controlling influence over the interpretation of such expressions, what remains is a simple statement designed to express [God's] greatness in terms that finite creatures can grasp.

[The Ninth Text]

61 Among the verses [discussed in connection with the sifat] is the following: "O how I regret my neglect of God's side (janb)." ¹³⁷ Here the term ["side"] is to be taken as a reference to God's obedience ($t\bar{a}^ca$) ¹³⁸ and to His command (amr), for one may speak of neglect ($tafr\bar{t}t$) only in relation to such matters. ¹³⁹

They also constitute part of the basis for his opposition to $kal\bar{a}m$ when discussed in a public setting.

¹³⁵ S. 67:16. Cf., *Zād al-Masīr*, VIII, 322; Zamakhsharī, *Kashshāf*, IV, 138; Bayhaqī, *Asmā*², 420-421; and Ibn Khuzayma, *Tawḥīd*, 110ff. where quite different interpretations of this verse are presented (cf., *DST*, 22, n. 2).

¹³⁶ See §§122-123, where Ibn al-Jawzī returns to the question of whether it is appropriate to speak of God's being in heaven. In 'Aqīda I, Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal does say that "God is on his Throne above the heavens," but he adds that such language should not be construed as implying any kind of limitation on God (Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila, I, 29), and, so far as I have been able to determine, Aḥmad nowhere uses the preposition "in" when he speaks of God in relation to the heavens. For Abū Yaʿlā's position on this question, see the last note to §58.

¹³⁷ S. 39: 56, and the only reference to God's "side" or *janh* in the Quran. Vs. 56 forms part of a longer passage in which scoffers are summoned to repent and warned of the remorse they are certain to suffer if they desist. Bell translates vss. 55-56 as follows: "But follow the best of what has been sent down to you from your Lord, before the punishment comes to you suddenly before you are aware. Lest a soul should say: 'O, alas, for what I have thoughtlessly done in regard to Allah, for I was one of the scoffers.'"

¹³⁸ That is, the obedience which God rightly requires of his creatures.

¹³⁹ Cf., DST, 23, 5, where in place of "fī dhālika" the text reads "fī dhātihi."

If the term "side" is construed in its commonly accepted anatomical sense, the use of the term "neglect" in this context has no meaning. Ibn Ḥāmid, however, said: "We believe that God has a side on the basis of this verse." How shocking is the absence of reason [in his statement]! If it makes no sense to speak of "neglect" in relation to a creature's "side," how is it possible to use the term in relation to something [alleged to be] a divine attribute? Tha lab recited the following line of poetry in which the term appears: "O my friends, restrain yourselves and be mindful of God in respect of 'my side,'" and he glossed it as meaning "my affair" (amrī). 141

[The Tenth Text]

62 Among the verses [that have been used by some to establish a divine attribute] is the following: "We breathed into her¹⁴² from Our $r\bar{u}h$ (spirit)." ¹⁴³

According to the exegetes, figure of speech] meaning closely linked to the idea of said:

I said to him: Lift [the c by your breath (rich)

63 When the Quran uses a effect "they hurt His saints in means "ask the people to found in the words of the lawes us and we love it."

I was informed that the i

"Ci... Zād al-Masir, II. 261, I

¹⁴⁰ See §177 where Ibn al-Jawzī returns to Ibn Ḥāmid's view on the matter of God's *janb* (cf., also §113). Abū Yaʻlā appears to be silent on the question of God's *janb* in the *Muʻtamad*, nor does *KAS* attribute a position to him on this question. I have not so far found any reference to Aḥmad's view on this question, nor does the question appear in the 'aqīda of Abū Muḥammad at-Tamīmī (Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila, II, 292-307) or in the summary of Barbahārī's views given in Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila, (II, 18ff.).

¹⁴¹ In Zād al-Masīr, Ibn al-Jawzī cites five possible interpretations of the term janb in the above verse: it may mean 1) the obedience (tā'a) owed to God (a position attributed to Ḥasan al-Baṣrī); 2) whatever is God's right or due (ḥaqq Allāh) (so Sa'īd b. Jubayr); 3) God's affair (amr) (Mujāhid and Zajjāj); 4) God's honor or reputation (dhikr) ('Ikrama and Þaḥḥāk; and 5) nearness (qurb) to God or what enjoys proximity to him (al-Farrā'). Although Ibn al-Jawzī does not explicitly endorse any of the above interpretations, his concluding comments seem to reflect some interest in (and perhaps sympathy for) the view advocated by al-Farrā', and he notes that if the latter is right, janb may actually refer to Paradise (janna) (VII, 192). In any case, Ibn al-Jawzī clearly opposes the notion that janb is one of the divine attributes. For other discussions of the term janb, see the lengthy discussion in Lane, 465/3-466/2 (cf., Lisān, I, 275/2). An Ash'arite perspective can be found in Juwaynī, Irshād, 158-159; and Bayhaqī, Asmā', 361. Cf., Zamakhsharī's Kashshāf, III, 404, for one Mu'tazilī's approach to the question.

 $^{^{142}}$ Strictly speaking, the antecedent of the pronoun in the expression $f\bar{i}hi$ is the term farj (womb) which occurs in the earlier part of the verse. I have chosen to follow Arberry's rendering of the prepositional phrase which, it seems to me, conveys the sense of the verse. For the full text, see the following note.

¹⁴³ S. 66: 12. The full verse reads: "And Mary, 'Imrān's daughter, who guarded virginity, so we breathed into her of our spirit, and she confirmed the words of her Lord and his books, and became one of the obedient" (Arberry). Also cf., S. 21: 91; and 19: 17, for

Macartney, The Division of G

^{45. 1-2.} God's *rūḥ* is to be unde a ung coals.

S. 33: 57. The full verse in God has cursed in the present we multing chastisement (Arberry

⁻ S. 12: 82

Ct.. Zād al-Masīt, IV. 268, الله القربة (ask the peop at this sort of phenomenon are cill the mudaf (for a discussion of theory, see W. Heinrichs, "Scriptus (hen Wissenschaften, 7 [1] Earad's Mu'tazilī jurist. Abū Balewampie of ellipsis).

This saying appears a num Buichāri, takār, 54; jihād, 71, 74 Fitalin, 16; Muslim, haji, 464, 50 240, 243, 443; and V, 425.

[&]quot;The fires of animosity."

According to the exegetes, the expression "Our $r\bar{u}h$ " [is to be taken as a figure of speech] meaning "our mercy (rahma)," for the term $r\bar{u}h$ is closely linked to the idea of breath (nafkh) as the poet (Dhū'r-Rumma) has said:

I said to him: Lift [the coals] to [your mouth] and give them life by your breath $(r\bar{u}h)$, nourishing [them] gently [until they blaze]. ¹⁴⁵

[The Eleventh Text]

63 When the Quran uses the expression "they hurt God" ¹⁴⁶ it means in effect "they hurt His saints (*awliyā*")." Thus when it says: "Ask the city" ¹⁴⁷ it means "ask the people [of the city]." ¹⁴⁸ [A similar recourse to ellipsis is found] in the words of the Prophet when he said: "Uḥud is a mountain that loves us and we love it." ¹⁴⁹ Thus the poet has said:

I was informed that the fires 150 were ignited after [your death], 151

similar passages in which the term $r\bar{u}h$ figures.

¹⁴⁴ Cf., Zād al-Masīr, II, 261, 1; V, 385, 17ff.; and VIII, 316.

¹⁴⁵ Macartney, *The Dīwān of Ghailān Ibn 'Uqbah* (Cambridge 1919), 176 (no. 33). For commentaries on this line, see $Z\bar{a}d$ al-Mas $\bar{i}r$, II, 261, 10 and n. 1; and $Lis\bar{a}n$ al-'Arab, II, 460, 1-2. God's $r\bar{u}h$ is to be understood as an act of generosity to Mary just as breath is to dying coals.

¹⁴⁶ S. 33: 57. The full verse reads: "Those who hurt God and His Messenger—them God has cursed in the present world and the world to come, and has prepared for them a humbling chastisement" (Arberry).

¹⁴⁷ S. 12: 82

¹⁴⁸ Cf., Zād al-Masīr, IV, 268, 17, where Ibn al-Jawzī glosses the expression with the words: سل أهل القرية (ask the people of the village); and I, 115, 15ff., where other examples of this sort of phenomenon are cited from the Quran and explained in terms of the ellipsis of the muḍāf (for a discussion of the significance of ellipsis [hadf] in medieval literary theory, see W. Heinrichs, "Scriptural Hermeneutics," Zeitschrift für Geschichte der Arabisch-Islamischen Wissenschaften, 7 [1991-92], 258, and 263ff. Heinrichs cites the case of the Ḥanafī/Muʿtazilī jurist, Abū Bakr al-Jaṣṣāṣ, who interpreted the above passage as an example of ellipsis).

¹⁴⁹ This saying appears a number of times in the canonical collections, among them: Bukhārī, *zakāt*, 54; *jihād*, 71, 74; *anbiyā* 10; *maghāzī*, 27, 81; *aṭima*, 28; *daʿawāt*, 35; *iʿtiṣām*, 16; Muslim, *ḥajj*. 464, 503, 504/2; and *Musnad*, II, 337, 387; III, 140, 149, 159, 240, 243, 443; and V, 425.

^{150 &}quot;The fires of animosity."

And after you, O Kulayb, the assembly engaged in mutual recrimination! 152

[The Twelfth Text]

64 Finally, there is the verse: "What can they expect but that God will come to them in the shadow of the clouds (fi zulal)." [The expression "in the shadow"] is to be taken in the sense [fol.17a] of "with the shadow" (bi-zulal); hence, the verse is to be construed as meaning that God will bring them "[the protection of] the shadow[s]." [God's "coming"] in the verse "Your Lord will come" is to be interpreted in a similar fashion. The Qāḍā Abū Yaʿlā reported Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal as having said that the verse "God will come to them" he come to them the command (amr), and in support of this interpretation he cited the verse "The command of your Lord (amru rabbika) will come." The expression "Your Lord will come," which is also found in the Torah, [was explained by Aḥmad as meaning that] it is His power (qudra) only [that will come]. However, Ibn Ḥāmid stated: "This interpretation is in

error, for God Himself (b) that entails change of location 65 This statement concern its point of reference as a spirit (ar-rūh)] say: "The syllon 'Aqil said: "[If God in questions about created thin questions about] the Creator

¹⁵¹ In both the *Ḥamāsa* of Abū Tamām (ed. G. Fretag, 420, 13) and the *Amālī* of al-Qālī (I, 95, 13), this line is ascribed to the legendary poet 'Adī b. Rabī'a, better known in the annals of Arabic literature as Muhalhil, who is alleged to have been the creator of the *qaṣīda*. The killing of the poet's brother, Kulayb b. Rabī'a (by Jassās b. Murra), precipitated the break-up of the alliance between the Bakr and the Taghlib, leading to the famous war of Basūs between the two branches of Wā'il (cf., *EI*², V, 362).

The above line is cited twice by Ibn al-Jawzī in his Zād al-Masīr (I, 116, 2; and V, 69, 6). In both instances, he glosses the term majlis with the words is of doubtful authenticity.

¹⁵³ S. 2: 210. The expression "in the shadow (*fī zulal*) of the clouds" appears in a tradition that is discussed in §§185-186.

¹⁵⁴ S. 89: 22.

¹⁵⁵ That is, it is to be taken as meaning that God will bring (or send) them His protection, power, or blessing, not that God Himself will come.

¹⁵⁶ S. 2: 210.

¹⁵⁷ See Zād, I, 225.

¹⁵⁸ S. 16: 33.

According to Ibn al-Jawzi finate entities which consist of o and 4 for a fuller discussion of the

^{5. 17: 86.}

I have adopted the reading supported by a number of manus

error, for God Himself (*bi-dhātihi*) will descend only through movement that entails change of location (*intiqāl*)."

65 This statement concerning the divine essence takes sense experience as its point of reference as though it were a question of material bodies $(ajs\bar{a}m)$. Commenting on the verse: "[When they ask you concerning the spirit $(ar-r\bar{u}h)$] say: 'The spirit [is a matter that] pertains to my Lord,'" 160 Ibn 'Aqīl said: "[If God implored] His creatures to refrain from asking questions about created things, how much better is it to refrain from [asking questions about] the Creator and His attributes!" 161

¹⁵⁹ According to Ibn al-Jawzī's definition, "bodies" (designated by the term $ajs\bar{a}m$) are finite entities which consist of conjoined atoms ($jaw\bar{a}hir$) and accidents ($a^cr\bar{a}d$). See §§5 and 9 for a fuller discussion of these terms.

¹⁶⁰ S. 17: 86.

 $^{^{161}}$ I have adopted the reading given in the printed edition of *DST* (26), which is also supported by a number of manuscripts of *DST* (see notes to the Arabic text).

[CHAPTER THREE]

TRADITIONS CONCERNING THE DIVINE ATTRIBUTES

66 It must be emphasized that there are in the traditions [ascribed to the Prophet] both obscure $(daf\bar{a}^c in)$ and defective elements $(\bar{a}f\bar{a}t)$ of which only the experts $({}^culam\bar{a}^{\mbox{\tiny $'$}}fuqah\bar{a}^{\mbox{\tiny $'$}})$ are fully aware. [What is problematic] sometimes has to do with the transmission (naql) of the text and sometimes with the interpretation of the content $(kashf\ ma^c n\bar{a}h\bar{a})$.\(^1\) In what follows, we shall attempt to clarify these matters, if God permits.\(^2\)

The First Tradition

67 In the $\bar{y}ah\bar{t}hs$ of Bukhārī and Muslim there is a tradition reported by Abū Hurayra in which the Prophet said: "God created Adam in his form $(\bar{y}\bar{u}ra)$." ³

68 The experts have ad tradition]. One group choos in a discussion of its mean reservation. Among those different views as to the anthis form"]. The first opinion them (ida bardi bani Adam in which the Prophet is reparameter in the face and say [bal.17b] of those whose father (ada paratiki)." [The transmitters of this tradition and the Prophets's response

III 1959-1960 L 38-49.

" A position which the Hanbal with admirable clarity in his Ali tradition in its variant forms, he a طے کیا قال من تفلہ من آئنڈ لسندر are traditions in which it is incur how or in what way lifter are to b asting questions] and offer them who came before you [315, 8-16] advocates as we have seen in the fi Excession of such maners is an multic are present. However, wh timiles, such are entirely appropria the last part of \$59 L Quite Among the canonical collec-Administration of Humbal, III, 252 and 434 he subject of frequent comment Marine Fat-Hadin (Caro 1326) ess. Toylot. 36, 14-17).

The abridged version of the is lim at law is at the beginning of it the bearing (including the curse) a given by The Fürak (Musikii atdirection was that since the lo transmitter thought it immecessary was under discussion here in A times it left out what, in their view.

¹ He might also have included the matn (text) among the sometimes problematic aspects of $had\bar{\imath}th$ since he does frequently deal with the matn in the analyses that follow.

² Ibn al-Jawzī wrote extensively on the problems posed by the *hadīth* literature. The two works that tackle these matters in a direct and sustained way are his *Kitāb al-Ilal al-Mutanāhiya fī'l-Ahādīth al-Wāhiya* (Beirut 1983); and his *Kitāb al-Mawdītāt* (Medina, 1966). As Ibn al-Jawzī explains in his introduction to the work (p. 17, 7-14), *Kitāb al-Ilal* is concerned with those traditions that are defective and therefore problematic, but the defects in this case are not such as to require their wholesale rejection (cf., also *Kitāb al-Mawdūtāt*, I, 35, 14-19). *Kitāb al-Mawdūtāt*, as the title itself makes clear, is devoted to a critical examination of apocryphal traditions which have no useful function and therefore must be rejected. In connection with this latter work, Ibn al-Jawzī composed a semibiographical work entitled *Kitāb aḍ-Ducafā wa'l-Matrūkīn* (Beirut 1986) in which disreputable traditionists are listed and their errors identified. Finally, in this connection, mention should be made of his *Gharīb al-Ḥadūth* (Beirut 1984), a specialized work which, as the title indicates, is devoted to a discussion of those traditions in which obscure and rare expressions are to be found (cf., *El*², III, 25b).

³ See, Bukhārī, Ṣaḥīḥ, isti'dhān, 1 (cf., Houdas, Les traditions, IV, 214); for Muslim's version of this tradition, see his Ṣaḥīḥ, birr, 115 (cf., janna, 28). This tradition or near approximations of it can be found in a number of other canonical collections, among them the Musnad of Ibn Ḥanbal, vol. II, 244, 251, 315, 323, 434, 463, 519, etc. For a critical review of medieval interpretations of this tradition, see W. M. Watt, "Created in His Image: A Study in Islamic Theology," Transactions of the Glasgow University Oriental Society.

68 The experts have adopted two quite different approaches [to this tradition]. One group chooses to remain silent rather than become involved in a discussion of its meaning;⁴ the other group, however, has no such reservation. Among those who make up the latter group, there are three different views as to the antecedent of the pronoun "his" [in the expression "his form"]. The first opinion maintains that the pronoun refers to a human being (ilā baʿqi banī Ādam). Those who advocate this view cite a tradition in which the Prophet is reported to have passed by a man who was striking another in the face and saying to him: "God curse your face and the face [fol.17b] of those whose face is like yours." The Prophet then said to him: "When you strike [someone] spare his face, for God created Adam in his form ('alā ṣūratihi)." [The proponents of this view] claim that one of the transmitters of this tradition abridged it [by omitting reference to the beating and the Prophets's response], 6 and so the shortened version ought to be

^{18 (1959-1960), 38-49.}

⁴ A position which the Ḥanbalī traditionist and jurist, al-Ājurrī (d. 360/970), sets forth with admirable clarity in his *Kitāb ash-Sharī'a* (Beirut 1983). After quoting the above tradition in its variant forms, he adds: هذه من السنن التي يجب على المسلمين الإيمان بها ولا يقال على المسلمين الإيمان بها ولا يقال من تقدّم من أئمة المسلمين (These are traditions in which it is incumbent upon Muslims to believe, and one should not ask how or in what way [they are to be understood]. On the contrary, submit to them [without asking questions] and offer them your assent. Shun rational reflection as did the *imāms* who came before you [315, 8-10]). This is a position which Ibn al-Jawzī himself sometimes advocates as we have seen in the first chapter of *KAS*. But he makes an important distinction: discussion of such matters is to be shunned on occasions when members of the general public are present. However, when it is a question of discussions confined to scholarly circles, such are entirely appropriate. This much is evident from §36 (last sentence) of *KAS* (cf., also the last part of §59). Quite obviously, *KAS* was intended for an academic readership.

⁵ Among the canonical collections, this tradition is found only in the *Musnad* of Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal, II, 252 and 434 (the two texts are virtually identical). The tradition was the subject of frequent comment by later scholars (cf., for example, Ibn Qutayba, *Ta'wīl Mukhtalif al-Ḥadīth* [Cairo 1326/1908], 277-278; Bayhaqī, *Asmā'*, 291, 3-5; and Ibn Khuzayma, *Tawḥīd*, 36, 14-17).

⁶ The abridged version of the tradition referred to here is apparently the one cited by Ibn al-Jawzī at the beginning of this section (§68). What was left out was the reference to the beating (including the curse) and the Prophet's response. According to the explanation given by Ibn Fūrak (*Mushkil al-Ḥadīth* [Beirut 1985], 49), the assumption behind the abridgment was that since the longer version of the tradition was so widely known the transmitter thought it unnecessary to repeat it in full. One senses that the proponents of the view under discussion here in *KAS* were not entirely happy with the abridged version, since it left out what, in their view, corroborated their interpretation of the tradition.

understood in accordance with the meaning of the fuller tradition [if ambiguity is to be avoided]. They further point out that the expression "the face of those whose face is like yours" includes prophets as well as believers. [In their view] Adam was singled out for special mention in this tradition only because he was the first whose face was created in accordance with this form—but a form also shared by those who came after. Thus, it is as though the Prophet warned the man that [in cursing another] he had also in effect cursed both Adam and his progeny. This tradition shows the length to which the Prophet was prepared to go in restraining the man. According to those who hold this view, then, the pronoun "his" is to be taken as referring to the man who was struck, and it is [according to them] a grievous error to suppose that it refers to God, given the tradition's use of the expression "the face of him whose face is like yours." If God is taken as the antecedent of the pronoun the result is anthropomorphism (tashbīh) pure and simple. In the Sahīh of Muslim there is another version of this tradition, reported by Abū Hurayra, in which the Prophet said: "If one of you does battle against his brother, spare his face, for God created Adam in his form." 9

69 The second view is that while, in principle, the pronoun may be taken as referring to either of two explicitly stated nouns, [that is, God or Adam], 10 it may not in this instance be taken as referring to God in view of the evidence (dalīl) indicating that he does not possess a form. It must, therefore, be taken as referring to Adam. The meaning of the tradition [according to this view] is that God created Adam "in his, that is, Adam's, form" by creating him in a fully developed, adult form, and not through the gradual process of natural procreation as in the case of [Adam's] descendents. This view, adopted by Abū Sulaymān al-Khaṭṭābī, 11 was mentioned [favorably]

before him by Tha lab in him 70 The third view is that two views as to how the term sura denotes somethed derives from his action and to God for two reasons: through their association [My house." or 2) to sign Adam was created] on the [cited in support of this with the Prophet [fol.18a] said: was created in the form of in three respects. In the firm hasis of conflicting is a follower.

⁷ Cf., Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 49, 5, where the wording is almost identical to that used in *KAS*, although Ibn Fūrak adds the words: حتّى يزول الإشكال.

 $^{^8}$ Cf., Ibn Qutayba, $Ta^2w\bar{\imath}l$ Mukhtalif $al-Had\bar{\imath}th$ (Cairo 1326/1908), 277-278; Ibn Fürak, Mushkil, 49; and Bayhaq $\bar{\imath}$, $Asm\bar{a}^2$, 290, 20-23.

⁹ Muslim, birr, 115.

¹⁰ It should be kept in mind that the argument in this paragraph concerns the basic tradition cited in §67.

¹¹ Cf., Bayhaqī, $Asm\bar{a}^{\flat}$ (290, 4-11) where al-Khaṭṭābī is quoted at some length on the meaning of the term $\varsigma\bar{u}ra$. The passage reads: وقد قال أبو سليمان الخطّابيّ قوله «خلق الله آدم تصلح أن تصرف إلى الله عزّ وجلّ لقيام الدليل على على صورته» الهاء وقعت كناية اسمين ظاهرين فلم تصلح أن تصرف إلى الله عزّ وجلّ لقيام الدليل على أنّه ليس بذي صورة سبحانه ليس كمثله شيء فكان مرجعها إلى آدم فالمعنى أنّ ذريّة آدم إلها خلقوا أطواراً كانوا في مبدأ الخلقة نطفة ثم علقة ثم مضغة، ثم صاروا صوراً أجنة إلى أن تتمّ مدة الحمل فيولدون أطفالاً

To this it is also also be also be also be also be also be also conform. Abu Sulayman al-Khamai referring to either of the two station is be taken as referring to Gales not possess a form, for the purposen here must refer to Adam treated only in stages; in the beginning until pregnancy reached as children and became adults. A meaned in a fully completed from

See Tha lab. Mujalis 1=4st preferred this interpretation (cf., and lim Fürak, Mushkil, 52).

S. 22: 26. The argument he nouse by associating it with God tand of association or "annexat Taybid. 39, 5-17. The argumen Adam was a way of conferring a

[&]quot;Cf., Bayhaqi, AsmaP., 291., 5-

I have not found this tradition above text with brief commentari id. Lecounte, Le trans, 244): But 6.4.

That is, a second generation

before him by Tha lab in his Amālī. 12

70 The third view is that [the pronoun] refers to God, though there are two views as to how [the term $s\bar{u}ra$] is to be construed. The first is that the term $s\bar{u}ra$ denotes something God possesses (mulk) in the sense that it derives from his action and creative effort. [Form ($s\bar{u}ra$)] is said to belong to God for two reasons: 1) to confer distinction [on things or persons] through their association [with God] as in the Quranic expression "purify My house," or 2) to signify that He did not fashion [the $s\bar{u}ra$ by which Adam was created] on the basis of a pre-existing model. The tradition [cited in support of this view] goes back to Ibn 'Umar, who reported that the Prophet [fol.18a] said: "Do not abuse the face of a person, for humankind was created in the form of $Rahm\bar{a}n$." This tradition, however, is defective in three respects. In the first place, Thawrī and A'mash reported it on the basis of conflicting $isn\bar{a}ds$. In Thawrī's $isn\bar{a}d$ the tradition is traced back to a Follower whereas in the case of A'mash it is traced back to a Companion.

وينشأون صغاراً، إلى أن يكبروا فتطول أجسامهم، يقول إنّ آدم لم يكن خلقه على هذه الصفة لكنّه أول ما (Concerning the prophetic tradition, "God created Adam in his form," Abū Sulaymān al-Khaṭṭābī said: "The pronoun hā? [in this saying] may be taken as referring to either of the two stated nouns [i.e., God or Adam]. It is not fitting, however, that it be taken as referring to God because of the [scriptural] evidence indicating that He does not possess a form, for [the Quran says:] 'There is nothing like unto Him'. Hence, the pronoun here must refer to Adam, and the meaning is that the descendents of Adam were created only in stages: in the beginning they were drop(s), then clot(s), etc., and finally fetal forms until pregnancy reached completion, and so they were born as infants and grew up as children and became adults. Adam was not created in this fashion, but was the first to be created in a fully completed [form].").

¹² See Thaʻlab, $Maj\bar{a}lis$ (= $Am\bar{a}l\bar{\imath}$), I, 115. A number of Ashʻarite theologians also preferred this interpretation (cf., al-Baghdād $\bar{\imath}$, $U\bar{\imath}ul$, 75-76; al-Juwayn $\bar{\imath}$, $Irsh\bar{a}d$, 163-164; and Ibn Fūrak, Mushkil, 52).

 $^{^{13}}$ S. 22: 26. The argument here is that special distinction is conferred on a particular house by associating it with God. For other Quranic expressions supposedly reflecting this kind of association or "annexation," see Bayhaq $\bar{\imath}$, $Asm\bar{a}^2$, 291, 7; and Ibn Khuzayma, $Tawh\bar{\imath}d$, 39, 5-17. The argument here seems to be that the attribution of God's form to Adam was a way of conferring a special disctinction on him.

¹⁴ Cf., Bayhaqī, Asmā², 291, 5-8.

¹⁵ I have not found this tradition in any of the canonical collections. For citations of the above text with brief commentaries, see Ibn Qutayba, *Ta'wīl Mukhtalif al-Ḥadīth*, 278, 4-5 (cf., Lecomte, *Le traité*, 244); Bayhaqī, *Asmā*², 291, 9-12; and Ibn Khuzayma, *Tawḥīd*, 38, 4-8.

¹⁶ That is, a second generation Muslim, literally, those who came after the Companions

Secondly, A'mash was in the habit of concealing defects in his $isn\bar{a}ds$ ($k\bar{a}na$ yudallis). Thus, for example, he made no mention of the fact that he received [this tradition] from Ḥabīb b. Abī Thābit. Thirdly, Ḥabīb too was known to have concealed defects in his $isn\bar{a}ds$, for he does not report that he had received this tradition from 'Aṭā' [b. Abī Ribāḥ].\text{17} If these considerations, taken together, require that this tradition be considered weak (wahn), the same judgment ought to be applied to the view that construes the term $s\bar{u}ra$ as something belonging to God.

71 [Among those who take the pronoun as referring to God,] the second view holds that the term form $(s\bar{u}ra)$ denotes an attribute (sifa). It is sometimes said "this is the form of the matter" (sūrat al-amr), that is, this is its nature or attribute. The meaning of God's creation of Adam according to His sifa is that he endowed [Adam] with His own attributes, viz., life, knowledge, power, hearing, sight, speech and will, by virtue of which [Adam] was set apart from all of the animals. Moreover, God also granted him a rank superior to that of the angels when he ordered them to prostrate before [Adam]. Ibn 'Aqīl said: "[God] set Adam apart by endowing him with His own 'form' (sūra) for no other reason than to confer distinction on him, viz., [by granting him] power (sultana) and sovereign authority (rubbūbīya) to govern, receive homage, maintain law and order, and to regulate public affairs, [the exercise of which] brings prosperity and well-being to the [various] lands and their inhabitants. Among the angels and the jinn there is no race (naw') or tribe (qabīl), apart from humans, that agrees to render Him obedience. This is the meaning of the tradition ['God created Adam in his form']. It follows, therefore, that form (sūra) here refers to spiritual essence (ma^cnawīya), not to a form (or shape) possessing external features," 18

Abū Muḥammad b. Qutayba's view of this tradition is seriously flawed $(qab\bar{l}h)$, for he writes: "God possesses an actual form, though it is not like

other forms, and he fashio (authlit) and incoherent (authlit) and incoherent (authlite God's. The Qud' [Ab God although it is not a foterm essence (dhār) [when a for the term essence refers to whereas [the word] form (authors who use the expression)

of the Prophet. These *mursal* traditions, as they were called, were characterized by the fact that there was a gap in the first part of the *isnād*, that is, between the Prophet and the second generation authority who reported it. *Ḥadīth* critics such as Ibn al-Jawzī regarded such *isnāds* as problematic and therefore open to question as regards their authenticity.

 $^{^{17}}$ Cf., Ibn Khuzayma, $Tawh\bar{\imath}d$, 38-39, where a similar analysis of the $isn\bar{\alpha}d$ of this tradition is given. It is interesting that Ḥabīb b. Abī Thābit is not listed in Ibn al-Jawzī's $Kit\bar{a}b~ad$ - $Du^caf\bar{a}^2$. For a somewhat more favorable assessement of Ḥabīb, see Dhahabī's $M\bar{\imath}z\bar{a}n$, I, 451 (1690). On 'Aṭā', see $M\bar{\imath}z\bar{a}n$, III, 70. Cf., $Asm\bar{a}^2$, 291, 12-14, where al-Bayhaqī focuses his critical comments on the matn of the tradition rather than its $isn\bar{a}d$.

¹⁸ Cf., Maimonides, Guide, I, 1-2.

Although these words do t far as I have been able to determ Quantum was identified with bot here in £45. Without identifyin ، لا کلانیا، ۱۳۵۶ نه آه س not like other forms, just as he Complete a position. Ibn Fürzk h بالله، وتوقّل في تشبيه الله تعالم ورِه أنَّهُ قال: إنَّ أَنَّهُ مِخْدِقَ عَلَى تَنْكُ تاقف منهاقت بله الله حرا and invisted that it is not like Adm [and patterned] him after guilty of companing God with meaning the term metaphorica and that Adam was pamerned aff a war the last part controllers section of Manhal (68) where Ib 27 CE, Mr tamad, 58, 13-16, 6 تاكسى God though, he adds: كالصور arms the use of the terms ou لا كالقرات والتقسوس عققه علا energy Stime Burkship espe Nation qualification unnecessor his finite led by H. Lacust), 5 literally in his longest 'Apide, A التر سرية (God cressed Adam) 39 E. of. I. 303, 2-39. Perhap Almi'l-Rosen of-Warring (d. 1645) أدم على صورة الرحمل فهو حيا tic form of Rabonia is a Julioni II

other forms, and he fashioned Adam after it." ¹⁹ This statement is confused $(takhl\bar{\imath}t)$ and incoherent $(tah\bar{a}fut)$, for it clearly implies that Adam's form is like God's. The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{\imath}$ [Abū Yaʻlā] said: "The term form may be applied to God although it is not a form like other forms; the same is also true of the term essence $(dh\bar{a}t)$ [when applied to God]." ²⁰ This reflects serious confusion, for the term essence refers to the quintessential character $(ma^c n\bar{a})$ of something whereas [the word] form $(s\bar{u}ra)$ implies a shape (hay^2a) with limits $(takh\bar{a}t\bar{\imath}t)$ [fol.18b] and composition $(ta'l\bar{\imath}t)$, and it presupposes a fashioner or composer. Those who use the expression "a form not like other forms" face the same

¹⁹ Although these words do not appear in Ibn Qutayba's Ta'wīl Mukhtalif al-Ḥadīth, so far as I have been able to determine, it is clear from Ibn Fūrak's Mushkil (67-69) that Ibn Qutayba was identified with both the wording and position ascribed to him by Ibn al-Jawzī here in KAS. Without identifying his source, Ibn Fürak quotes Ibn Qutayba in the Mushkil (p. 67) as follows: إنّ للّه عزّ وجلّ صورة لا كالصور كما أنّه شيء لا كالأشياء (God is a form but not like other forms, just as he is a being unlike other beings). In his comments on Ibn فأثبت لله تعالى صورة قديمة، زعم أنَّها :Qutayba's position, Ibn Fūrak has the following to say لا كالصور وأنَّ الله خلق آدم على تلك الصورة، وهذا جهل من قائله، وتوغَّل في تشبيه الله تعالى بخلقه. والعجب منه أنَّه تأوَّل الخبر ثمَّ زعم أنَّ الله صورة لا كالصور، ثمَّ قال: إنَّ آدم مخلوق على تلك He predicated of God an eternal form) الصورة وهذا كلام متناقمض متهافت يدفع أوّله آخره [and] insisted that it is not like other forms, but then he went on to say that God created Adam [and patterned] him after that form. Those who speak thus are misguided and are guilty of comparing God with His creatures. It is astonishing that he should begin by construing the term metaphorically and claim that it is not a form like other forms but then add that Adam was patterned after that form. This is a contradictory, incoherent statement in which the last part contradicts the first [Mushkil, 67, 6-68, 3]). See the remainder of this section of Mushkil (68) where Ibn Fūrak expands on the comments cited above.

²⁰ Cf., Mu'tamad, 58, 13-16, where Abū Ya'lā insists that the term ṣūra may be applied to God though, he adds: صورة لا كالصور (a form unlike other forms). In the same passage he approves the use of the terms nafs and dhāt as designations that may be applied to God, but he adds: نفس وذات لا كالذوات والنفوس (a soul and an essence unlike other souls and essences). Some Ḥanbalīs, especially those of a more literalist bent of mind, thought Abū Ya'lā's qualification unnecessary. See, for example, the position set forth by Ibn Baṭṭa in his Ibāna (ed. by H. Laoust), 57, 9-13 (trans. 104), where he takes the term ṣūra quite literally. In his longest 'Aqīda, Aḥmad states his position as follows: وخلق [الله] آدم بيده (God created Adam by His hand after His own form [Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila, I, 29, 1; cf., I, 313, 2-3]). Perhaps the most uncompromising position is that attributed to Abū'l-Ḥasan al-Warrāq (d. 864/5 Ah.) who is quoted as having said: من لم يقل: إنّ الله خلق (He who refuses to say that God created Adam according to the form of Raḥmān is a Jahmī [Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila, I, 212, 8-9]).

TRADITIONS OF

Anas [b. Mälik]-though

th³—and Yissif h. ⁴Afry reservations regarding him chain that went back from

 al-Laplip[®] and finally about whether indeed it we

Challed died not receive it 16

2. "A bit" who, in term, g

74 I have already indica

al-Baybaqi pointed out the

which are weak." [According the five] which suggested

experience. In one of thes

mi E IV TO where the main

"CL Wook, III, 385, 2-4, wh "Yand" b. "Adva Abb Sah

main be was required as a w

ne at the TV 488-4790, where t

Fishin R. ASI IASI AZI

* And Dishe "And at-Ratura

Barry who later settled in Swig

tion, we the substantial notice of

"Totalistic or Totalistic III, 135

" I'm Said gives his min'u as

administration IL 57t; etc. also 7s

country and approach was unle

" Also read Yakhimir in so

printing of their printing of Salvania

ballions free MrSift and dies

INS-765. De los religibility as a s

The of the of Managine I

"Cl. Kell (SI where I'm al-la

Sertani, tonat, a 2005, to

tradicioni from the Prophet—a cla 12. a Tai Dhattelf, who devotes

malife from Quilder for assessm

and Million, NY, 700

problem as those who say "a body not like other bodies" for [in both cases] they contradict themselves.

The Second Tradition

72 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. 'Ā'ish reported that the Prophet once said: "I saw my Lord in the most beautiful form ($f\bar{\imath}$ aḥsani ṣūratin) and He said to me: 'About what is the High Council ($mala^{\flat}$ $a^{\flat}l\bar{a}$)²¹ disputing, O Muḥammad?' I said: 'O Lord, only You know'. Then He placed His hand between my shoulders and I felt its coolness against my breast, whereupon I understood both what is in heaven and on earth." ²²

73 Aḥmad [b. Ḥanbal] said: "The source of this tradition as well as the various chains of authority on which it is based are disturbed (*mudṭariba*)."²³ Dāraquṭnī said: "[According to one version] Muʿādh [b. Jabal] ²⁴ is said to have received it from the Prophet, but all of its chains are disturbed and cannot be trusted. [According to another chain] Qatāda²⁵ received it from

²¹ A Quranic expression (S. 37: 8; and 38: 69) which occurs several times in versions of the tradition cited by Ibn al-Jawzī in this section. See *Zād al-Masīr*, VII, 48 and 154, where Ibn al-Jawzī explains the expression as referring to an angelic council (cf., Zamakhsharī, *Kashshāf*, III, 336, and 381-382).

²² Among the canonical collections, the tradition is found in the following: Dārimī, Sunan, ru³ya, 12 (from Ibn ʿĀʾish); Musnad, I, 368 (Ibn ʿAbbās); IV, 66 (Ibn ʿĀʾish from "from one of the aṣḥāb"); V, 243 (Mālik b. Yakhāmir from Muʿādh b. Jabal); and V, 378 (Ibn ʿĀʾish from "one of the aṣḥāb"). Cf., Bukhārī, tafsīr, surat 9, 15 (from Samura b. Jundub); and taʿbīr, 48 (Samura b. Jundub). For discussions of the tradition in its various forms, see Ibn Qutayba, Taʾwīl, 272; Bayhaqī, Asmāʾ, 298-301; Ibn Khuzayma, Tawḥīd, 215-216; Abū Yaʿlā, Muʿtamad, 85-86; Ibn Fūrak, Mushkil, 69-73; and Ibn al-Jawzī, al-ʿIlal al-Mutanāhiya, I, 29-37.

²³ When applied to the $isn\bar{a}d$, the term mudtariba refers to defects resulting from the erroneous addition or suppression of names, or to the attachment of $isn\bar{a}ds$ to texts to which they do not belong (cf., Dozy, II, 7/1).

²⁴ Abū ʿAbd ar-Raḥmān Muʿādh b. Jabal b. ʿAmr, a Companion who died in 18/639. For biographical details and his role in the transmission of *hadīth*, see Ibn Saʿd, *Tabaqāt*, VII, 387-389.

²⁵ Abū'l-Khaṭṭāb Qatāda b. Diʿāma (d. 117/735), a pupil of Ḥasan al-Baṣrī, Anas b. Mālik and others, and who is said to have embraced the doctrine of free-will, though he apparently renounced his Qadarī views later in life. Although highly respected in certain circles, opinions varied as to his reliability as a transmitter of Prophetic sayings (cf., Mīzān, III, 385). For more on him, see Ibn Saʿd, Ṭabaqāt, VII, 229-231; Shadharāt, I, 153-154;

Anas [b. Mālik]—though doubts have been expressed regarding Qatāda²⁶—and Yūsuf b. 'Aṭīya²⁷ passed it on from Qatāda, but he too had reservations regarding him. Hishām²⁸ also transmitted it from Qatāda in a chain that went back from Qatāda to Abū Qilāba²⁹ and from him to Khālid b. al-Lajlāj³⁰ and finally to Ibn 'Abbās, but [Hishām] expressed doubts about whether indeed it was received from Ibn 'Abbās. As a matter of fact, Khālid did not receive it [from Ibn 'Abbās] but rather from 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. 'Ā'ish³¹ who, in turn, got it, not from the Prophet, but from Mālik b. Yukhāmir³² who received it from Mu'ādh."³³

74 I have already indicated that this tradition is not sound.³⁴ Abū Bakr al-Bayhaqī pointed out that it circulated in a number of versions, all of which are weak.³⁵ [According to him,] the best of these different versions are the [two] which suggest that [the tradition] has to do with a dream experience. [In one of these] Abū Hurayra is reported to have related that

and EI^2 , IV, 748, where the main sources on him are listed.

²⁶ Cf., *Mīzān*, III, 385, 2-4, where the charge of *tadlīs* is mentioned.

 $^{^{27}}$ Yūsuf b. 'Aṭīya Abū Sahl aṣ-Ṣaffār al-Bāhilī (d. 187/802). Among traditionists generally he was regarded as a weak authority (cf., Ibn al-Jawzī, *Kitāb aḍ-Ḍuʿafā*², III, 22; and $M\bar{\imath}z\bar{a}n$, IV, 468-470, where much the same assessment is given).

²⁸ Hishām b. Abī 'Abd Allāh Abū Bakr ad-Dastūwā'ī (d. 153/770), a transmitter of $had\bar{\imath}th$ from Qatāda; for assessments of his merits as a transmitter, see *Shadharāt*, I, 235; and $M\bar{\imath}z\bar{a}n$, IV, 300.

 $^{^{29}}$ Abū Qilāba 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. Zayd al-Jarmī , a respected jurist and transmitter from Basra who later settled in Syria and died there in 104 or 105/722 or 723). For more on him, see the substantial notice in Ibn Sa'd *Tabaqāt*, VII, 183-185; also *Shadharāt*, I, 126.

³⁰ Tahdhīb at-Tahdhīb, III, 115. The date of his death is not mentioned.

³¹ Ibn Sa^cd gives his *nisba* as al-Ḥaḍramī and reports that he claimed to have received traditions from the Prophet—a claim which Ibn Sa^cd appears not to take seriously (*Tabaqāt*, VII, 438). Dhahabī, who devotes a notice to him, declares him to be unreliable in matters of *ḥadīth* (*Mīzān*, II, 571; cf., also *Tahdhīb at-Tahdhīb*, VI, 204-205). Somewhat surprisingly, Ibn al-Jawzī makes no mention of him in his *Kitāb aḍ-Dua^cfā*. The date of his death is not reported and apparently was unknown.

³² Also read Yakhāmir in some sources. Ibn Sa'd gives his full name as Mālik b. Yukhāmir al-Alhānī as-Saksakī (*Ṭabaqāt*, VII, 441). According to Ibn Sa'd, he received traditions from Mu'ādh and died sometime during the reign of 'Abd al-Malik b. Marwān (685-705). On his reliability as a transmitter, Ibn Sa'd is non-committal.

³³ Cf., al-'Ilal al-Mutanāhiya, I, 33-34.

³⁴ Cf., KAS. §32 where Ibn al-Jawzī explicitly declares the tradition to be unreliable.

³⁵ Bayhaqī, *Asmā*², p. 298ff., but especially 300-301.

same one should say that

our response is that the es

to be equated with the fo

Propher said: "He who ha

what he meant is that the

take and beneficial, not t

nimul. for that lies buried

though he were alive when

seen by the physical eye

Some people have seen G

with much a state was

enquesting His concern an

reference in [the tradition

Lamil, while I was in the b

regarding the rate of ablu-

the motion—arridesan

them to establish the divisi

" Almad It Biethal sen for

الے و نعت نتیہ ہے ۔

بالرزيا حبشة حق يرقد كالت الي

ا وزعم أنَّها البحث كربي م

وقال: وأنَّ الرؤيا من الله عز

broken to him by God." Be als

The second Distriction

" Burde old of transacion

command them. C.L. Ste Final

"York II'de lings tessi

Other tradition will not begrife.

although a filming the divise of

Wilt is surprising that s

the Messenger of God said: "Someone approached me in a most beautiful form and said to me: 'About what is the High Council debating?' I replied: 'I do not know'. Then he placed his hand on my shoulders and I felt its coolness against my breast, whereupon I knew everything about which he was asking." ³⁶ In the other version Thawbān ³⁷ reported as follows: "The Messenger of God came out to meet us one morning after the prayers and said: 'My Lord approached me during the night in the most beautiful form and said to me: "O Muḥammad, about what is the High Council in dispute?" I said: "O my Lord, I do not know." [fol.19a] Thereupon He placed His hand between my shoulders until I felt the coolness of His finger-tips on my breast, and suddenly everything between heaven and earth was revealed to me.'" In still another version going back to Abū 'Ubayda b. al-Jarrāḥ, the Prophet said: "During the night I was taken on a journey and I saw my Lord in the most beautiful form."

75 [The various versions of] this tradition differ from each other and are open to question. One version reads "someone came to me", which would [if established] remove the problem, "whereas in another the Prophet is quoted as saying "I saw my Lord." It has been reported, however, that the Prophet was in a dream state when the experience in question occurred. Now what is seen in dreams has to do with "mental" images (wahm) [prompted by God] in order to draw [the dreamer's] attention to something that either has occurred or will occur. The images (awhām) that occur while in that state are not to be confused with external reality, for [in a dream] one may suppose that he is a bird in flight or that he is an animal. "If

³⁶ Cf., *al-'Ilal al-Mutanāhiya*, I, 34, where a slightly different *matn* is traced back to Abū Hurayra.

³⁷ His *kunya* is given as Abū ʿAbd Allāh, a *mawlā* of the Prophet, who, following the Prophet's death, moved to Homs where he remained until his death in 54/673 (Ibn Saʿd, *Ṭabaqāt*, VII, 400). Ibn al-ʿImād credits him with having transmitted 172 traditions from the Prophet (*Shadharāt*, I, 63).

³⁸ Cf., Ibn Khuzayma, *Tawhīd*, 219, 8ff.

³⁹ Cf., *al-'Ilal al-Muntanāhiya*, I, 30, 9-15; and *Ta'rīkh Baghdād*, VII, 153, 1-7, where the first part of the *ḥadīth* is cited.

⁴⁰ Since the term $s\bar{u}ra$ is applied to the "someone" referred to in the expression $at\bar{a}n\bar{t}$ $\bar{a}tin$, it presumably refers to someone other than God.

⁴¹ "Or that he is in a different location." See, Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 72-73, where essentially the same interpretation of the dream experience is given though in somewhat more detail.

someone should say that dreams experienced by prophets are true (haqq), our response is that the essential meaning conveyed [in such dreams] is not to be equated with the forms or images apprehended. It is true that the Prophet said: "He who has seen me in a dream has seen me indeed," but what he meant is that the content of the dream experience was of positive value and beneficial, not that what was seen was the Prophet's actual form ($s\bar{u}ra$), for that lies buried in Medina. One may see a person in a dream as though he were alive when in fact he is deceased. The point is that the body seen by the physical eye is not what is apprehended in the dream state. Some people have seen God in their dreams, but the essence of what was seen in such a state was the best of His qualities (sifat), especially those expressing His concern and His acceptance. If it should be said that the reference in [the tradition] is to the Prophet, then it means: "I saw [my Lord], while I was in the best of form."

76 It is surprising that someone does not seek to establish a legal ruling regarding the rite of ablutions ($wud\bar{u}^2$) on the basis of certain versions of this tradition—notwithstanding their confused state—for Ibn Ḥāmid used them to establish the divine attributes.⁴⁴ [In connection with his discussion

⁴² Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal sets forth his position on the vision of God in dreams as follows: ما لله عز وجل وهي حق إذا رأى صاحبها شيئًا في منامه ما ليس هو ضغْتُ فقصها على عالم والرؤيا من الله عز وجل وهي حق إذا رأى صاحبها الصحيح ولم يحرّف. فالرؤيا ويزعم أنّها ليست بشئ. وبلغني من الأنبياء عليهم السلام وَحْيُ. فأي جاهل أجهل مُن يطعن في الرؤيا ويزعم أنّها ليست بشئ. وبلغني أنّ من قال هذا القول لا يرى الاغتسال من الاحتلام. وقد رُوي عن النبيّ صلّى الله عليه وسلّم «إنّ رؤيا أنّ من قال هذا القول لا يرى الاغتسال من الاحتلام. وقد رُوي عن النبيّ صلّى الله عليه وسلّم «إنّ رؤيا هن الله عز وجلّ» (The vision of God is true when the one who has this experience sees it in a dream that is not muddled and reports it to a learned man, and tells the truth, and the learned man interprets it in a manner that is sound and does not distort. In that case the vision is to be taken seriously. The vision experienced by prophets is divinely inspired [waḥy]. Who is more ignorant than the one who scoffs at visions and claims they are nothing? It has been reported to me that the one who makes such a claim does not approve the performance of ablutions following a nocturnal emission. It has been related that the Prophet said: "The vision experienced by a believer is a word spoken to him by God." He also said: "Visions are from God" [Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila, I, 29-30; cf., Ṣayd al-Khāṭir, 618]).

⁴³ For the sake of translation I have chosen to recast the first person of the Arabic in the impersonal form. Cf., Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 71, 3-4, where a similar point is made.

⁴⁴ Some of the longer versions of this tradition contain a reference to the rite of ablution. If the tradition will not bear the weight of a ruling on $wud\bar{u}^2$, how much less can it serve as a basis for affirming the divine attributes? That some members of his own school had used

of the divine attributes] Ibn Ḥāmid cited a version of this tradition whose isnād went back to Ibn 'Abbās. In it the Prophet said: "When I was taken on a night journey I saw the All-Merciful in the most beautiful form of a beardless young man [whose face] glistened—indeed, I was instructed not to describe him to you—and I asked my Lord [fol.19b] that He allow me a vision $(ru^2y\bar{a})$ of Him, and behold He was like a groom at the time of his unveiling, sitting on His Throne ('arsh)." This tradition is a grotesque fabrication; it was never transmitted among sound traditions, and not even among the false traditions was it well known. May God be protected from such things! 46 We have already shown that such things belong to the realm of the dream experience—hence, the reference to the "night journey." May God reward [the Prophet], but may He punish those with Hell who liken God to a groom! [Of such people] he will not say [on the day of judgment]: "These are Muslims." As for the reference to the coolness [of His hand] in the tradition mentioned above, it should be observed that coolness is an accident ('arad) which may not be ascribed to God. In his Kitāb al-Kifāya. the $Q\bar{a}d\bar{t}$ [Abū Yaʻlā] mentions that Aḥmad held that the tradition "I saw my Lord in the most beautiful form" meant "in the most beautiful place (mawdi^c)." 47

The Third Tradition

77 According to Umm Ţufayl, wife of Ubayy [b. Ka c b], the Prophet reported that he saw his Lord in a dream in the form ($s\bar{u}ra$) of a most handsome, dignified young man ($sh\bar{a}bb$ muwaqqar); His legs were covered by a green garment, He had gold sandals on His feet and His head was surrounded by moths of gold.⁴⁸

the tradition for precisely that purpose was a matter of embarrassment to Ibn al-Jawzī; he does not hide his anger at the absurdity of such a procedure. Cf., KAS, §33 where he identifies those conditions that must be met if attributes are to be applied to God properly.

⁴⁵ See *al-ʿIlal al-Mutanāhiya*, I, 35-36, where several versions of the tradition, all ascribed to Ibn ʿAbbās, are cited; cf., also *Taʾrīkh Baghdād*, XI, 214, 13-19.

⁴⁶ That is, from such things as are ascribed to Him in the tradition attributed to Ibn ^cAbbās.

⁴⁷ The term *mawdi^c* can also mean position, rank or occasion.

 ⁴⁸ Ibn Qutayba, *Ta²wīl*, 273-274 (cf., Lecomte, *Le traité*, 242); Bayhaqī. *Asmā²*, 446-447;
 Abū Ya'lā, *Mu'tamad*, 85, 11-13; *Ta²rīkh Baghdād*, XIII, 311, 12-18; *Mīzān*, IV, 269.

78 This tradition was transmitted by Nu^caym b. Ḥammād, whom Ibn ʿAdī described as a fabricator of traditions. ⁴⁹ Yaḥyā b. Maʿīn said that Nuʿaym was not to be trusted in matters of tradition. Among his *isnāds* one finds the names of Marwān b. ʿUthmān and ʿUmāra b. ʿĀmir. Of the former, Abū ʿAbd ar-Raḥmān an-Nasāʾī said: "Who is this Marwān that he can be counted on to relate the truth about God?" Muhannaʾ b. Yaḥyā ⁵⁰ said: "When I asked Aḥmad about this tradition, he turned his head away from me and said: 'This is a *munkar* ⁵¹ tradition and this man, that is, Marwān b. 'Uthmān, is unknown (*majhūl*).' ⁵² [Aḥmad] added: 'ʿUmāra is also unknown.'"

79 'Ubayd Allāh b. Abī Salama⁵³ reported that Ibn 'Umar once sent a

3-6; *DST*, 31, 11-14; *Kitāb al-Mawḍūʿāt*, I, 125, 11-18; and *al-ʿIlal al-Mutanāhiya*, I, 29-30.—If the expression *farāsh min dhahab* ("moths of gold") is to be taken literally, it may mean moths made of gold and worn as ornaments. If they are real moths, i.e., live, gold-colored moths, one must picture them as having been drawn by the light of His face, circling it as if it were a lamp.

⁴⁹ Nu^caym b. Ḥammād b. Mu^cāwiya Abū ^cAbd Allāh al-Khuzā^cī al-Marwazī was a Ḥanafite jurist (d. 228/842). For notices on him, see Ibn Sa^cd, *Ṭabaqāt*, VII, 519; *Ta²rīkh Baghdād*, XIII, 306-314; and *Shadharāt*, II, 67. For a full list of biographical sources, see *GAS*, I, 104-105; and *EI*², VIII, 87-88. Ibn Sa^cd and al-Khaṭīb both report that he was imprisoned during the reign of al-Mu^ctaṣim because of his refusal to endorse the Mu^ctazilī view of the Quran. Despite his orthodox views on the Quran, however, he was widely regarded as suspect in matters of *ḥadīth* and was accused by Nasā^cī and Dāraquṭnī of having fabricated traditions in support of Sunnī orthodoxy, of which he was a vigorous defender. For a review of opinions on his reliability as a traditionist, see *Kitāb aḍ-Du^cafā^c*, III, 164 (3543); and *Mīzān*, IV, 267-270 (9102).

⁵⁰ Known also as Abū ʿAbd Allāh ash-Shāmī, he was a student and close associate of Aḥmad (cf., *Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila*, I, 345-381; and *Ta²rīkh Baghdād*, XIII, 266-268). The date of his death is not reported, but since he was a contemporary of Aḥmad, we can assume that he died soon after his visit to Mecca in 298/910.

⁵¹The definitions given by traditionists vary; Dozy (II, 722) defines a *munkar* tradition thus: "A tradition coming from a reporter of weak authority." Other definitions given by Dozy: "blameworthy," "prohibited," or "absurd" (cf., Burton, *Introduction to the Ḥadīth*, 200). Some *ḥadīth*-critics were ready to reject traditions regarded as *munkar* more or less outright, while others were at least prepared to give them a hearing.

 52 A name identified as $majh\bar{u}l$ (unknown) raises the suspicion that the name may have been a fabrication inserted into an $isn\bar{u}d$ by a forger in a form which could not be traced or identified.

⁵³ Ibn Khuzayma ($Tawh\bar{\imath}d$, 198), al-Bayhaq $\bar{\imath}$ ($Asm\bar{a}^2$, 443), and Dhahabi ($M\bar{\imath}z\bar{a}n$, III, 473) give his name as 'Abd All $\bar{a}h$ b. Ab $\bar{\imath}$ Salama. Tabar $\bar{\imath}$ also mentions him as a $r\bar{a}w\bar{\imath}$ in his $Ta^2r\bar{\imath}kh$, II, 13, 16; III, 68. I have not so far found a biography devoted to him in any of the *tabaqāt* works.

TRADITIONS CO

were among its transmit

traditions of this sort into

sach traditions deserve am

experiences, and since drea

traditions cannot serve as a

or helief]. Thus it is not pro

evidence in support of rulis

mentione attributes to God

Seattless (usurar), 'short,

her lim, and 'crows' (sp)

m God, although we do n

used for this purpose). Who

more than an approximati

at modulate mit al-gadine).

that is. He will being him

distribution ." Those who esta

in Edmicaed traditions-(4

such as 'youth' (shifts) 'bea

solf mean what they do in o

who say: "So and so stood

In 'Agi said 'This

more raditions of this kin

imposed of reliable such

mannings is postless if the

the Michael \$4.85, who

THE STREET STREET

of the last

The Quit [Abb Ya'lal.

message to 'Abd Allāh b. 'Abbās asking him whether Muḥammad had seen his Lord. He replied in the affirmative, whereupon [Ibn 'Umar] sent inquiring of the details. [Ibn 'Abbās] replied: "He saw Him in the form of a young man sitting on a Throne of gold born by four angels." ⁵⁴ This tradition [fol.20a] was transmitted [in the generation after 'Ubayd Allāh] by a sole reporter, namely, [Ibn] Isḥāq, ⁵⁵ whom a number of 'ulamā' [also] accused of having fabricated the following tradition in the name of Ibn 'Abbās: "[The Prophet] saw [his Lord], and it appeared that His legs were covered with a green garment and that He was shielded by a screen made of pearls." ⁵⁶ Among the transmitters of this tradition was Ibrāhīm b. al-Ḥakam b. Abān, ⁵⁷ whom Yaḥyā b. Maʿīn and others declared to be weak as a traditionist. In still another tradition traced back to Ibn 'Abbās, the Prophet is reported as having said: "I saw my Lord, and He had short, curly hair, was beardless and wore a green-colored garment." ⁵⁸ Both Ḥammād b. Salama and Ibn Abī'l-Awjā', ⁵⁹ Ḥammād's step-son, who was also a zindīq,

 $^{^{54}}$ Ibn Khuzayma, $Tawh\bar{\imath}d$, 198, 15-22; cf., also Bayhaqī, $Asm\bar{a}^{\flat}$, 443-444; and $M\bar{\imath}z\bar{a}n$, III, 473, 18-22.

⁵⁵ The authorities cited in the preceding note all identify this person as Muḥammad b. Isḥāq b. Yasār Abū Bakr al-Makhramī, author of the well known biography of the Prophet (for an English translation, see A. Guillaume, *The Life of Muhammad* [Oxford 1955]). For an assessment of his work as a traditionist as well as numerous biographical details, see *Mīzān*, III, 468-475.

⁵⁶ Bayhaqī, *Asmā*⁵, 445, 5-7.

⁵⁷ *Asmā*³, 444; cf., Ibn Sa^cd, *Ṭabaqāt*, V, 548; and *Mīzān*, I, 27.

⁵⁸ *Mīzān*, I, 593, 18-19.

 $^{^{59}}$ cAbd al-Karīm b. Abī'l-cAwjā' (d. 155 A.H.), alleged to have been a crypto-Manichean, was expelled from Basra on account of his heretical views and subsequently made his home in Kufa. He is said to have been a part of the circle around Ja'far aṣ-Ṣādiq and to have raised particularly difficult questions regarding the justice of God; e.g., if God is good, why are there catastrophes and epidemics and, especially, why do children suffer? He advocated a dualistic cosmology (perhaps as a way of dealing with the problem of evil) and held to the doctrine of metempsychosis. His views finally caught up with him, and he was executed in 155/772 on the orders of Muḥammad b. Sulaymān, the 'Abbāsid governor of Kufa. Ṭabarī reports that he was the uncle of the famous Ma'n b. Zā'ida (Ta'rīkh, VIII. 47-48). Near the end of his life he is reported to have confessed that he fabricated four thousand traditions. For more on this interesting figure, see the very useful article on him by G. Vajda in EI^2 , III, 682. In addition to the sources cited by Vajda, see also Ibn al-Jawzī, $Kitāb\ al-Mawdū'cāt$, I, 122; Ṭabarī, Ta'rīkh, VIII, 47-48; Dhahabī, Mīzān, II, 644: and Massignon, Passion, III, 112, n. 104. Cf., also KAS, §152.

were among its transmitters. The latter was in the habit of introducing traditions of this sort into the writings [of Ḥammād]. To the extent that such traditions deserve attention they are to be taken as referring to dream experiences, and since dreams have to do with the imaginary (*khayāl*), such traditions cannot serve as a basis for anything [pertaining either to practice or belief]. Thus it is not proper that such traditions be adduced as canonical evidence in support of rulings on the rite of ablutions.

The Qādī [Abū Ya'lā], however, used such traditions as a basis for ascribing attributes to God. He said: "Terms such as 'young man' (shābb), 'beardless' (amrad), 'short, curly' (ja'ad wa qatat), 'moths' (farāsh), 'sandals' $(na^{c}l\bar{a}n)$, and 'crown' $(t\bar{a}i)$ have been established as designations that apply to God, although we do not claim to know their precise meaning [when used for this purpose]. What is affirmed in the use of such terms is nothing more than an approximation of the temporal to the eternal (min tagrīb al-muhdath min al-qadīm). This is permissible since there is a tradition in which [the Prophet] said: '[God] will draw His servant near to Himself', that is, He will bring him into proximity with Himself (yuqarribuhu ilā dhātihi)."60 Those who establish the divine attributes on the basis of dreams or fabricated traditions-[and then add:] "we know of course that terms such as 'youth' (shābb) 'beardless' (amrad), etc., [when applied to God] do not mean what they do in ordinary speech or experience"—are like persons who say: "So and so stood or sat, but he is not to be described as standing or sitting."

80 Ibn 'Aqīl said: "This tradition is obviously a fabrication. Those who invent traditions of this kind make every effort to provide them with chains composed of reliable authorities, but [the addition of names of reliable] transmitters is pointless if the text of the tradition (*matn*) lacks credibility.

⁶⁰ See *Mu^ctamad*, 84-86, where Abū Ya^clā cites the tradition of Umm Ṭufayl within the context of a discussion of the *ru^cya Allāh* in the dream state. Whether such traditions can be used as a basis for establishing the divine attributes is not taken up either here or elsewhere in the *Mu^ctamad* so far as I have been able to determine. Ibn al-Jawzī's comments on Abū Ya^clā above are apparently based on one of Abū Ya^clā's lost works. The point of the quotation attributed to Abū Ya^clā above seems to be that the application of terms (having a clearly temporal significance) to God is an attempt to narrow the gulf between the temporal and the eternal and, in doing so, to make the reality of God's existence more tangible and thus more accessible to ordinary people. As Ibn al-Jawzī points out in the last sentence of this paragraph, this is an illegitimate use of language, for in such cases words cease to have any real meaning.

This would be like attributing to a group of reputable persons a report that the camel of a cloth merchant passed through the eye of a tailor's needle. There is no reason to regard such persons as credible transmitters given the absurdity of their report." ⁶¹

The Fourth Tradition

81 [fol.20b] It was reported [on the authority of Anas] that the Prophet once said: "When I was taken on the night journey I saw everything pertaining to my Lord, even a crown studded with pearls." ⁶²

82 Among the transmitters of this tradition was Abū'l-Qāsim b. Muḥammad b. al-Yasa⁶³ who received it from Qāsim b. Ibrāhīm. Al-Azharī⁶⁵ reported that he used to sit with Ibn al-Yasa⁶⁵ for periods of an hour, and he would say at the end of the hour: I have completed reciting the whole of the Quran since you took your seat. In man was not reliable in matters of tradition. Indeed, Dāraquṭnī claimed that he was a habitual liar. May God recompense to the full people who make up ḥadīths like this.

grant and Se will se

The second

⁶¹ See G. Makdisi, *Ibn 'Aqīl* (1997), 103-104, where a somewhat different interpretation of "the third tradition" and its variants is ascribed to Ibn al-Jawzī and Ibn 'Aqīl on the basis of Yūsuf b. 'Abd al-Hādī's *Tuḥfat al-Wuṣūl ilā 'Ilm al-Uṣūl*.

⁶² For other citations of this *ḥadīth*, see especially *Taʾrīkh Baghdād*, X, 135, 6-12; *Kitāb al-Mawdū*^cāt, I, 115, 5-11; and *DST*, 32. A slightly different version of the tradition is found in *Mīzān*, III, 367, 17-19.

⁶³ cAbd Allāh b. Muḥammad b. al-Yasac Abū'l-Qāsim al-Qāri' al-Anṭākī, who died in 385/995 or, according to some, 387/997. For a notice on him, see *Ta'rīkh Baghdād*, X. 134-135 (cf., *Mīzān*, II, 497, for his reputation as a traditionist).

⁶⁴ His name is given as Qāsim b. Ibrāhīm b. Aḥmad al-Malaṭī aṣ-Ṣūfī (no *kunya* is mentioned). Al-Khaṭīb calls him a "raving liar" and a prolific fabricator of traditions (cf.. $Ta^{\lambda}r\bar{t}kh$ $Baghd\bar{a}d$, XII, 446). For other assessments of him, see $M\bar{z}a\bar{n}$, III, 367-368. The date of his death is not given, but based on the list of his associates it would appear that he probably died sometime during the latter part of the 4th century.

⁶⁵ That is, 'Ubayd Allāh b. Abī'l-Fatḥ, known also as Abū'l-Qāsim aṣ-Ṣayrafī al-Azharī, originally from Iskāf (Iraq), who later settled in Baghdād and died there in 435/1043. For notices on him, see *Ta'rīkh Baghdād*, X, 385; and *Muntaṭam*, VIII, 117-118 (based largely on al-Khaṭīb). Ibn Athīr reports that he was the best known of al-Khaṭīb's teachers in the science of *ḥadīth* (cf., *Lubāb fī Tahdhīb al-Ansāb*, I, 48).

⁶⁶ Cf., *Ta*'*rīkh Baghdād*, X, 135, 16-17. Also see *Kitāb al-Mawḍū*'āt, I, 115, 14-16. where a slightly different reading is given.

The Fifth Tradition

83 In their respective Ṣaḥīḥs, Bukhārī and Muslim cite a tradition on the authority of Abū Hurayra according to which the Prophet said: "God will gather the people together [on the day of judgment] and will say to them: 'Let each of you follow what he used to worship'. ⁶⁷ And so they will follow what they used to worship, but [only] this Community, among which there are hypocrites, ⁶⁸ will remain. Then God will come to them in a *form* (ṣūra) which they will not recognize, and he will say to them: 'I am your Lord'. They will respond: 'We ask God's protection against the likes of you! We shall remain here until our Lord Himself comes, for we will recognize Him [when He comes]!' Then He will come to them in a *form* which they will recognize and He will say to them: 'I am your Lord.' They will answer: 'You are our Lord indeed.'" ⁶⁹

84 According to another tradition cited in the two $Sah\bar{\imath}hs$ on the authority of Abū Saʻīd [al-Khudrī], the Prophet said: "[On the day of judgement] the Almighty will approach [the believers] in a *form* ($s\bar{\imath}a$) different from the one in which they saw Him the first time, and He will say to them: 'I am your Lord'. Only the prophets will speak to Him directly, and they will ask [the people]: 'Is there a sign by which you will recognize Him?' They will answer: 'The leg ($s\bar{\imath}a$)!' When God uncovers His leg every believer will prostrate himself before Him.'"

85 It is essential for every Muslim to believe that God is beyond form

 $^{^{67}}$ The fuller version found in Bukhārī, $riq\bar{a}q$, 52 reads: "Let each of you follow what he used to worship. Let those who worshipped the sun follow the sun; and let those who worshipped the moon, follow it; and let those who worshipped idols, follow them."

⁶⁸ Cf., Muslim, *īmān*, 302; and Bukhārī, *tawḥīd*, 24.

⁶⁹ Muslim, *īmān*, 299; Bukhārī, *adhān*, 129 (cf., Houdas and Marçais, *Les traditions islamiques*, I, 268-270); *riqāq*, 52 (Houdas, IV, 313-315); *tawḥīd*, 24 (Houdas, IV, 600-605); and *DST*, 33. For references to this tradition and a discussion of the theological problems involved, see Ibn Qutayba, *Taʾwīl*, 257-260 (Lecomte, 228-230); Bayhaqī, *Asmāʾ*, 291-294; Ibn Khuzayma, *Tawḥīd*, 174, 5-11; Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 86-9; and Abū Yaʿlā, *Muʿtamad*, 82-86.

 $^{^{70}}$ In his translation of Bukhārī's Ṣaḥāḥ, tawḥād, 24 (*Les tradtions islamiques*, IV, 602, note 2), Houdas adds the following note on the term $s\bar{a}q$: "Il s'agit d'une expression métaphorique qui équivaut à la puissance éclatante."

⁷¹ Bukhārī, 97 (*tawḥīd*), 24 (Houdas, IV, 600-605); Muslim 1 (*īmān*), 302; and *DST*, 33, 7-11.

muleace that the term for

essential nature (sife), for

devoted understand that the

which they previously knew

56 Another authority ma

m' should be taken to m

to comerced with the

er such things as have

and conditions that they w

our Land comes we will rec

brough as what we will be

semp the firm which they

ing," that is, He will man

alluminies, whereanon pers

male Sail muther authori

the sending of Duijal. Whi is

rather in God from you."

E is a tradition reported

unit. Who he day of judge

Will you be able to recogn

They will then be as

laway was Him before? The

man Then the Lord wil

more themselves before

the caregory of things the

In the Taken

company of bodies. We

第四日 日本日本日 日日 日本日

 $(\underline{s}\overline{u}ra)$ in so far as it implies shape (hay^2a) and composition $(ta'l\overline{t}f)$. Abū Sulaymān al-Khattābī said: "The expression 'God will come to them' means in effect that He will remove the veil in such a way that they will see Him with their eyes ('iyān) just as [in this life] they had known Him [fol.21a] inferentially through reason (istidlalan).72 And so they will see Him with their eyes for the first time as if someone whom they had not seen before were coming to them. As for the term form $[\bar{sura}]$, it may be interpreted in two ways. In the first place, it may be taken metaphorically to mean the essential character (sifa) of something, as in the expression 'this is the form of the matter (sūrat al-amr).'73 Secondly, the objects of worship mentioned in the first part of the tradition, 74 viz., the sun, moon, idols, etc., are, in effect, forms (suwar) and bodies (ajsām). Now when God was associated with them⁷⁵ [through the application of the term *form* to Him in the tradition] the expression was meant to be taken as a kind of muṭābaqa (antithesis). 76 The words of the Prophet: '[God will come to them] in a form more fitting $(adn\bar{a} \ \bar{su}ratin)$ than that in which they had "seen" Him [before]'77 are

⁷² "Just as they had known Him in this life through knowledge (*film*) and through inferential reason (*istidlāl*)" (*DST*, 33).

⁷³ Meaning "this is the substance (or heart) of the matter."

⁷⁴ For the text of the tradition, see the first note to §83.

⁷⁵ Literally, "coupled with..."

 $^{^{76}}$ As al-Khaṭṭābī uses the term, mutabaqa denotes a word that contains two contrasting or opposed meanings. In the full text of al-Khaṭṭābī's discussion of this tradition (as preserved in Bayhaqī's $Asm\bar{a}^2$, 296-297), he gives a number of examples of $mut\bar{a}baqa$: thus, for example, the term aswad, he says, may be used to mean either serpent or scorpion (cf., Lane 1463/3), and 'asr may mean either night or day, morning or evening, etc. (Lane 2062/2). The point of al-Khaṭṭabī's argument is that the term $s\bar{u}ra$ in this tradition falls into the category of this kind of $mut\bar{a}baqa$ usage; when applied to the various objects of pagan worship (the $ma^cb\bar{u}d\bar{a}t$ mentioned in the tradition), the term is used in its literal sense of form, image or shape (i.e., something external) whereas when applied to God it is used metaphorically to mean attribute or nature (i.e., something internal). On the use of the term $mut\bar{a}baqa$ in literary theory, see the article " $Tib\bar{a}q$ " by W. Heinrichs in El^2 , X, 450-452. On the distinction between $mut\bar{a}baqa$ and $muq\bar{a}bala$, see the brief comments by W. Heinrichs in El^2 , VII, 491b (cf., also Glossary and Index of Technical Terms, a supplement to vols. I-VII of El^2 [Leiden 1995], 257; and Qudāma b. Ia^c far, Naqd ash- $Shi^c r$, ed. Bonebakker [Leiden 1956], 93, 13-16).

⁷⁷ These words form part of a much longer tradition cited by Bukhārī, Muslim, and others. See, for example, Bukhārī, *tafsīr sūra* 4, 8; Muslim, *īmān*, 302; and Bayhaqī. *Asmā*, 297, 6-7. For a somewhat different rendering of the expression *adnā ṣūratin* (cf..

evidence that the term *form* was meant to be taken here in the sense of essential nature (sifa), for they in fact had not seen Him previously.⁷⁸ You should understand that the term *form* means the essential character (sifa) which they previously knew Him to possess."⁷⁹

86 Another authority maintained that the expression "[God] will come to them" should be taken to mean that He will come to them in or through the terrors connected with the resurrection, the forms (suwar) of the angels and other such things as have not yet been experienced in this life. It is from such conditions that they will seek God's protection. The expression "when our Lord comes we will recognize Him" should be taken to mean "when He brings us what we will be able to recognize of His blessing"—this latter being the form which they will recognize—and then He will "uncover his leg," that is, He will manifest His might (shidda) so as to put an end to calamities, whereupon people will prostrate themselves before Him in gratitude. Still another authority maintained that [God] will manifest a form (sūra) in order to test the extent of their understanding as He will do also in the sending of Dajjāl. It is for these reasons that they will say: "We take refuge in God from you."

87 In a tradition reported by Abū Mūsā [al-Ashʿarī] the Messenger of God said: "[On the day of judgment] people will say: 'There was a Lord (*rabb*) whom we used to worship during our lifetime.' Then they will be asked: 'Will you be able to recognize Him when you see Him?' They will answer: 'Yes!' They will then be asked: 'But how will you recognize Him, never having seen Him before?' They will reply: 'He is utterly unique (*lā shabīha lahu*)!' Then [the Lord] will remove the veil and they will see Him and prostrate themselves before Him." ⁸²

88 Ibn 'Aqīl said: "Taken literally ('alā'l-ḥaqīqa) form (ṣūra) belongs to that category of things that possesses size and shape—the distinguishing characteristics of bodies. We refuse to conceive God in bodily terms (jisman),

Houdas, Les traditions, III, 297).

⁷⁸ Cf., Bayhaqī, *Asmā*², 297, 6-7.

⁷⁹ For the full text of al-Khaṭṭābī's discussion of the term $s\bar{u}ra$ as used in this tradition, see Bayhaqī, $Asm\bar{a}^2$, 296, 15ff. (cf., Ibn Fūrak, Mushkil, 94, 12-17).

⁸⁰ See notes to §217 for more on this figure.

⁸¹ Cf., Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 90, 1-5; and 94, 2-7, where a similar interpretation is given as a possibility.

⁸² DST, 34, 5-8; cf., KAS, §46 (the latter part) and notes to the translation.

THE RESIDENCE OF THE PERSON OF

warmed that to be the me

The series stated to the series the

man local The tru

for there is convincing scriptural proof [indicating the unacceptability of such language] in the verse 'There is nothing like unto Him.'83 and because reason too tells us that if God were a body His form would be an accident ('arad). If He were a substratum in which accidents inhere, [fol.21b] it would be possible to ascribe to Him what is predicated of bodies (ajsām), and He would then require a creator (sānic). If He were a body and at the same time eternal, we also would admit of being eternal. The evidence requires that we assign to the term form a meaning that may appropriately be applied to Him. That meaning is found precisely in the term 'condition' $(h\bar{a}l)$ which lexicographers use to explain the term form $(s\bar{u}ra)$. Thus people say: 'How is your form (sūra) with so and so?' or, 'so and so is in a form of poverty'. 84 The condition [or form] which they 85 reject [when speaking of God] is the one associated with injustice ('asf), and the one they recognize is that expressive of blessing (lutf); hence [the reference to] the unveiling has His power (shidda) as its object. Changes (taghayyurāt) [ascribed to God] are to be predicated of His action; as for His essence, it is beyond change. God forbid that we should interpret this tradition after the fashion of corporealists (mujassima) who construe the term form as referring to His essence, for that entails both the attribution of change to Him and His [materialization] in an outward form. 86 Whether [that form] be something concrete and particular-incredible as that might be-or whether it is an idea in the mind, that [form] is not He, and so what they apprehend is other than He."87

⁸³ S. 42: 11.

⁸⁴ Ibn 'Aqīl's point is that if the term $\bar{y}\bar{u}ra$ is stripped of connotations of corporeality (which he proposes to do by construing it tropically), it may appropriately be predicated of God. For an important and fuller discussion of the problems posed by the term $\bar{y}\bar{u}ra$, see Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 86-94, who approaches the issue from an Ash'arite perspective. There is nothing in Ibn Fūrak's treatment of the term, however, that Ibn 'Aqīl (or Ibn al-Jawzī) would have found problematic.

⁸⁵ That is, lexicographers.

⁸⁶ Or perhaps, his association with an external form.

⁸⁷ According to Ibn 'Aqīl there can be no thought of an exact correspondence between the *form* of God conjured up in the mind (whether that be conceived as something concrete or an abstraction of some sort) and God himself. The value of a metaphorical interpretation of *form*, for Ibn 'Aqīl, is that it assumes a certain disjunction between the mental construct and the reality of the divine essence.

The Sixth Tradition

89 The Ṣaḥīḥ of Muslim contains a tradition traced back to al-Mughīra [b. Shu'ba] in which the Messenger of God is reported to have said: "No 'person' (shakhṣ) ⁸⁸ is more jealous (aghyar) than God; no 'person' (shakhṣ) is more pleased to grant pardon than He; and no 'person' (shakhṣ) loves praiseworthy conduct more than He." ⁸⁹

90 Although some transmitters use the term $shakh\bar{s}$ in reporting this tradition, others follow the reading: "no being $(shay^2)$ is more jealous than God." ⁹⁰ In the case of traditions [containing the expression $l\bar{a}$ $shakh\bar{s}a$], transmitters simply added the term $shakh\bar{s}$ [in place of $shay^2$] because they supposed that to be the meaning of the text, but it should be noted that the use of this expression represents a change introduced by the transmitters. The term $shakh\bar{s}$ implies the existence of a body composed of parts, for one terms something a $shakh\bar{s}$ because it possesses corporeality $(shukh\bar{u}\bar{s})$ and height $(irtif\bar{a}^c)$. The truth of the matter is that the term $shakh\bar{s}$ is to be taken as referring to creatures; it is not appropriate that the term be applied to the

^{**}Berson" is not an entirely satisfactory rendering of the Arabic word <code>shakhs</code>, for as the best lexicons of the language point out repeatedly, the term <code>shakhs</code> connotes "the bodily or corporeal form or figure or substance (<code>suwād</code>) of a man," or something possessing height (<code>irtifa</code>) and visibility (<code>zuhūr</code>)—something, in short, that can be perceived from a distance (Lane, 1517/1; cf., also <code>Lisān</code>, VII, 45, 4-11). The term <code>shakhs</code> is entirely devoid of anything comparable to the Western notion of personhood. Because of the inadequacy of the English term "person" I have chosen for the most part to retain the Arabic in the translation of this section of <code>KAS</code>.

⁸⁹ For that version of the tradition in which the reading شخص المنافق (no person) occurs, see Muslim, liçān, 17; Musnad, IV, 248; and Nasāʾī, nikāḥ, 37, 3. In most occurrences of the tradition, however, اأحد (no one) is clearly the preferred reading (cf., Muslim, tawba, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36; Bukhārī, kusūf, 2; tawḥīd, 15, 20; and Musnad, I, 381, 426).—For references to the tradition, and discussions of the theological problem posed by the expression الاشخص Bayhaqī, Asmāʾ, 286-289, 482-483; Abū Yaʿlā, Muʿtamad, 58-59; and Ibn Fūrak, Mushkil, 95-97.

⁹⁰ See Bukhārī, nikāḥ, 107, 3; tafsīr surah 6, 7; Musnad, VI, 348, and 352. Cf., also Lane, 1517/1; and Lisān, VII, 45, 10 where the words لا شيءَ أغيرُ من الله are cited and the significance of لا شيء (no thing/being) is discussed. On the theological significance of the term shay², see Frank, "The Neoplatonism of Ğahm b. Safwān", Muséon, 78(1965), 399ff., and J. van Ess, "The Logical Structure of Islamic Theology," Logic in Classical Islamic Culture, 33.

Creator. Hence, the tradition should be taken to mean: there is no jealous "person" among you but that God is more jealous than he. [The tradition should not be construed in such a way that the term shakhs applies to God], for when the general class (al-kull) is assimilated to [a single] expression, any of the terms included in the general class may be designated [by the general term], and so [in the Quran] the punishment for an act of ridiculing (istihz \bar{a}) is also called "ridiculing" (istihz \bar{a}), 91 and the punishment for [fol.22a] an act of plotting (makr) is called "plotting" (makr). 92 Another example [of the same linguistic phenomenon] is to be found in a saying attributed to Ibn Mascūd: "God did not create a Paradise or a Hell more awesome than (a^czam min) the 'Throne verse' (āyatu'l-kursī)." ⁹³ Ahmad b. Hanbal said: "The act of creation referred to in this statement applies only to the created realm ($makhl\bar{u}q$), not to the Quran." ⁹⁴ A similar usage is to be found in the verse: "On that day the inhabitants of Paradise will occupy the best dwelling (mustagarr) and the most wonderful place of rest (maqīl)."95 It is well known, however, that the people of Hell will not occupy either a "dwelling" or "a place of rest." It is thus possible to maintain that [the term shakhs] pertains to that from which the exception was made (mustathnā

in within the category of a time except to follow the M Some authornies permanent in an an error for reasons rations (gluona), the expend something is so because I ambust (firmiliate) and threate arminated jealousy to him.

C 450 Mūsā [al-Ashfari] a thandful' (què of the earth."1 43 The meaning [of the amending you take in hand that suppose that the handful in the land such associations. Him only in the sense that the manes as, for example, in the case the act of blinding was Muhammad b. Sa'd reported thin to take (a handful of What life al-lawed has in mi that manager, the exception th med with a that is the trade filmed from the general class de

" 5 a 157. As the context indi

"See Albi Dillwidd, Suman, com

and the Table and Zamakinshari.

The Serie, Technical, L. Dr. and

To the Change Tay 61 63-62

54.57 For a more detailed

The last and also W. Tracks

Marcally (19)

⁹¹ An allusion to S. 2: 14-15 where both the misdeed and its punishment are designated by the same term. For Ibn al-Jawzī's discussion of this verse, see *Zād al-Masīr*, I, 35-36.

⁹² An allusion to S. 3: 54 and 27: 50. In both sets of Quranic references, the general term embraces two quite different categories, viz., an infringement and its punishment. For Ibn al-Jawzī's discussion of 3: 54 and 27: 50, see *Zād al-Masīr*, I, 395 and VI, 182 (cf., also *Lisān*, V, 183).

⁹³ S. 2: 255 is generally referred to as the Throne verse. Cf., Bayhaqī, *Asmā*², 288, 6-7, and 15-16, where several different versions of the saying are cited and their implications discussed.

⁹⁴ Aḥmad's point is that the saying (or its context) contains within itself an implied exception (istithnā'). In Bayhaqī's Asmā' (288, 8-9), the commentary of the well known traditionist Abū Bakr al-Ismā'slī (d. 371/981) is quoted as follows: الكرسي وليس فيه إلا أن لا خلق في العظم كآية الكرسي، لا أن آية الكرسي مخلوقة (there is nothing in his statement that can be taken as affirming the creation of the Throne verse; all that is said is that there is nothing comparable to the Throne verse in greatness, not that the Throne verse was created). The background of this discussion was of course the Mu'tazilī doctrine of the created Quran, one of the principal issues at stake in the Mihna.

⁹⁵ S. 25:24. This verse taken as it stands implies that there will be more than one *mustaqarr* and *maqīl*, and that the people of Hell will also occupy such places, though presumably places of a lesser quality.

min) within the category of genus, ⁹⁶ as in the verse: "They have no knowledge of him except to follow their own suppositions." ⁹⁷

91 Some authorities permit the application of the term *shakhṣ* to God, but that is an error for reasons we have already given. As for the question of jealousy (*ghayra*), the experts maintain that one who is jealous on account of something is so because he loathes it. It was because God forbad immoral acts (fawāhish) and threatened punishment for such that his Messenger attributed jealousy to him.

The Seventh Tradition

92 Abū Mūsā [al-Ash'arī] reported that the Prophet said: "God created Adam from a 'handful' (*qubda*) [of clay] which he gathered from every part of the earth." ⁹⁸

93 The meaning [of the term *qubḍa* or "handful"] is the measure of something you take in hand. [When the term is applied to God] one ought not suppose that the handful known to finite creatures is intended, for God is beyond such associations. The taking of a "handful" may be predicated of Him only in the sense that the actions of a servant may be ascribed to his master as, for example, in the verse "We blinded their eyes" [for in that case the act of blinding was carried out by Gabriel]. In his *Kitāb at-Ṭabaqāt* Muḥammad b. Sa^cd reported [on the authority of Ibn Mas^cūd] that God sent Iblīs to take [a handful of clay] from the surface of the earth, and He

⁹⁶ What Ibn al-Jawzī has in mind here is the "severed (or radical) exception," i.e., the *istithnā* $munqat^{i\zeta}$, the exception that is severed from, or wholly different in kind from, the general term ($mustathn\bar{a}$ minhu [cf., Wright, Arabic Grammar, II, 335D-336A]).—Ibn al-Jawzī's point is that in the tradition cited at the beginning of this section God is implicitly excluded from the general class designated by the term shakhs on the basis of an implied $istithn\bar{a}$?

 $^{^{97}}$ S. 4:157. As the context indicates, the reference in the verse is to Jesus (cf., $Z\bar{a}d$ al-Masīr, II, 24; and Zamakhsharī, *Khashshāf*, I, 580).

⁹⁸ See Abū Dāwūd, *Sunan*, *sunna*, 16; Tirmidhī, *Sunan*, *tafsīr sūra* 2, 1; *Musnad*, IV, 400; Ibn Saʿd, *Ṭabaqāt*, I, 26; and Ṭabarī, *Taʾrīkh*, I, 91-92. Cf., also, Bayhaqī, *Asmāʾ*, 327; Ibn Khuzayma, *Tawḥīd*, 63-64; Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 98-104; and *Kitāb al-Mawḍūʿāt*, I, 190.

 $^{^{99}}$ S. 54:37. For a more detailed gloss on this text, see $Z\bar{a}d$ al-Mas $\bar{i}r$, VIII, 98-99 (cf., IV, 135-140; and also W. Thackston, *The Tales of the Prophets of al-Kisa'*, 155-159, especially 158).

created Adam from it. It was for this reason that [Iblīs refused to prostrate himself before Adam] saying: "Should I bow before someone You made from clay?" 100

94 The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{i}$ [Abū Yaʻlā] said: "It is possible to attribute [the expression] 'the taking of a handful' (qabd) to God, but such an attribution is not to be taken as implying that he possesses a limb $(j\bar{a}riha)$, or in the sense of exerting himself $(mu^c\bar{a}laja)$ or making an effort $(mum\bar{a}rasa)$ [to achieve an end]." [Abū Yaʻlā] should be told: "You make statements [about God], but you do not understand [the full import of what you say]."

The Eighth Tradition

95 [fol.22b] Salmān¹⁰² is reported to have said: "God kneaded the clay of which Adam was formed and shaped it with His hands, whereupon all that is good (tayyib) appeared in His right [hand] and all that is evil (tayib) in the other hand. He then mixed the two of them together, and so He caused the living (tal-tayy) to come forth from the dead (tal-tayy) and the dead from the living." ¹⁰³

96 This tradition, it should be noted, goes back only to a Follower; 104

God cannot be described as neliable, it must be taken a operations of the divine dec 97 The Qūdi [Abū Ya'lā] of one part of it with anothwas created." This, how taken (tashbih mahd)!

Medinal Qatāda b. Normān conversation] he said: "Let have heard that he is ill." So mustalqiyan), with his right as seated, whereupon Qatād cried out: "O son of responded: "I did that intent God finished creation, he saying: "This is something to are right, I shall never

¹⁰⁰ S. 17:61. Cf., *Zād al-Masīr*, V, 56-57. For the reference in the *Ṭabaqāt* of Ibn Sa^cd, see vol. I, 26 (cf., Ṭabarī, *Ta²rīkh*, I, 90-91).—For other interpretations of the term *qubḍa*, some of which are explicitly metaphorical, see Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 97-104. It is interesting that Ibn al-Jawzī chooses not to offer a metaphorical interpretation of the term.

¹⁰¹ I have found no reference to the question of *qubda* in the *Mu^ctamad*.

¹⁰² Apparently Salmān al-Fārisī, an early convert to Islam and a Companion who is said to have died during the reign of 'Uthmān (644-656). For more on Salmān and a list of early sources on him, see *SEI* (500-501). Among Sunnī traditionists there was some uncertainty as to the source of the tradition here cited by Ibn al-Jawzī: Ṭabarī traces it back to Salmān al Fārisī (*Ta*'rīkh, I, 93); Ibn Sa'd, on the other hand, traces it back through Salmān to Ibn Mas'ūd (*Tabaqāt*, I 27). Al-Bayhaqī frankly acknowledges his uncertainty, merely noting that it was either from Salmān or Ibn Mas'ūd (*Asmā*', 327). Judging from his comments in the following paragraph, Ibn al-Jawzī regarded both attributions as problematic, for he declares the tradition to be *mursal*; that is, one that went back no further than a second generation source, that is, to a Follower (*tābi*').

¹⁰³ Cf., Ibn Sa^cd, *Ṭabaqāt*, I, 27, 6-10; Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 102-108; and *DST*, 36. The last part of the tradition comes directly from the Quran: S. 10: 31; 30: 19, etc. For Ibn al-Jawzī's gloss of the Quranic expression, see *Zād al-Masīr*, I, 369-370.

¹⁰⁴ Ibn al-Jawzī, unfortunately, gives no basis for this classification of the tradition. It is

their from the last semence of this

Cf., Ibo Fürak, Mashkii, 10

I have found no such statem

Sa'd b. Mālik b. Sinān Abū Ta 653. He is said to have been pro more than a young lad. For manaris, I. 81.

This prohibition is found in e.g. Massad, III, 299-300; and M im to do with the concern for more

Cf., DST, 36-37; Bayhaqi, 3 256, 11 notes that the tradition is discussion of the tradition, see the Winnummad (Mahomet) sur les 'j

moreover, as we have already shown, it has been established that the living God cannot be described as having contact with anything. If this tradition is reliable, it must be taken as a metaphorical reference (\dot{q} arb mathal) to the operations of the divine decrees ($aqd\bar{a}r$). ¹⁰⁵

97 The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{\iota}$ [Abū Yaʻlā] said: "The kneading of the clay and the mixing of one part of it with another may be ascribed to the hand by which Adam was created." ¹⁰⁶ This, however, is a thoroughly anthropomorphist interpretation ($tashb\bar{\iota}h \ ma\dot{\iota}d$)!

The Ninth Tradition

98 'Ubayd b. Ḥunayn reported that while he was sitting in the mosque [of Medina] Qatāda b. Nuʿmān came and spoke with him. [In the course of the conversation] he said: "Let us go and visit Abū Saʿīd [al-Khudrī], 107 for I have heard that he is ill." So we went to his house and found him reclining (mustalqiyan), with his right leg placed over his left. He greeted us and had us seated, whereupon Qatāda reached up and pinched his leg so that Abū Saʿd cried out: "O son of Adam, you have caused me pain!" [Qatāda] responded: "I did that intentionally, for the Messenger of God said: 'When God finished creation, he reclined and placed one leg over the other, saying: "This is something my creatures ought not do."" Abū Saʿīd said: "You are right, I shall never do this again!" 109

clear from the last sentence of this paragraph that he was not certain of the reliability of the tradition.

 $^{^{105}}$ Cf., Ibn Fūrak, $\it Mushkil, 102-108$, where a similar interpretation of the tradition is given.

¹⁰⁶ I have found no such statement in the Mu^c tamad.

¹⁰⁷ Sa'd b. Mālik b. Sinān Abū Sa'īd al-Khudrī, a prominent Companion, who died in 74/693. He is said to have been present at the Battle of the Trench, but he could hardly have been more than a young lad. For notices on him, see Ibn Sa'd, *Ṭabaqāt*, III, 624; and *Shadharāt*, I, 81.

¹⁰⁸ This prohibition is found in a number of traditions with quite different *matns* (cf., e.g., *Musnad*, III, 299-300; and Muslim, $lib\bar{a}s$, 72, 73, 74) in each of which the prohibition has to do with the concern for modesty.

¹⁰⁹ Cf., *DST*, 36-37; Bayhaqī, *Asmā*, 355; and *Mīzān*, III, 365-366. Bayhaqī (*Asmā*, 356, 1) notes that the tradition is not to be found in either Bukhārī or Muslim. For a discussion of the tradition, see Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 120-124; also Gimaret, "Deux dits de Muḥammad (Mahomet) sur les 'jambes' de Dieu," *Comptes Rendus de l'Academie des*

99 The preceding tradition was transmitted by the following authorities: 110 'Abd Allāh b. Aḥmad¹¹¹¹ from Abū Bakr Muḥammad b. Isḥāq aṣ-Ṣāghānī¹¹² from Ibrāhīm b. al-Mundhir¹¹³ from Muḥammad b. Fulayḥ¹¹⁴ [from his father, Fulayḥ b. Sulaymān]¹¹⁵ from Saʿīd b. al-Ḥārith¹¹⁶ from 'Ubayd b. Ḥunayn.¹¹¹ I have not seen this tradition cited in any [fol.23a] of the collections of ḥadīth worthy of trust.¹¹³ Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal was critical of Ibrāhīm b. al-Mundhir and censured him [publicly]. Zakarīyā² as-Sājī¹¹¹9

Inscriptions et Belles-Lettres (1996), 14ff.

reported that the traditions to makir). Speaking of Full traditions are not to be as occasion [Yaḥyā] referred to as not to be trusted as a moted that his traditions we Medina. Abū Bakr al-Baylopinion among the experts Fullayh serving as evidence he used as a basis for canonias the one under consideration

The above tradition is also who is alleged to have received caliphate of 'Umar b. al-K at the age of sever me isnad of the tradition matition as having said 'Let tare been 'Ubayd b. Hunaya a to him. If we refuse to acce a basis for legal rulines i of doctrine are at st tradition were reliable. and passed it on from one d mentions them but that Qutada 100 The problem of the more Zubayr [b. al-A) The a tradition which, h God. Zubayr listened until the

¹¹⁰ They are listed as they appear in the $isn\bar{a}d$, i.e., in reverse chronological order.

That is, 'Abd Allāh the son of Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal, who died in 290/902. For the more important biographical notices on him along with a list of his extant writings, see *GAS*, I, 511; cf., also *GAL*, Suppl. I, 311.

¹¹² Died 270/883. A respected traditionist who travelled widely and who (according to al-Khaṭīb) studied under some of the leading experts of his time. It is also from al-Khaṭīb that we learn of his close association with Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal's son ʿAbd Allāh (*Taʾrīkh Baghdād*, I, 240-241). Although Ibn al-Jawzī's notice on him is based on al-Khaṭīb, it is clear that he shared the latter's assessment of Ṣaghānī (*Muntaṣam*, V, 7; cf., *Shadharāt*, II, 160).

 $^{^{113}}$ Ibrāhīm b. al-Mundhir Abū Isḥāq al-Ḥizāmī al-Madanī, who died in 236/850 (cf., $Ta^{\lambda}r\bar{t}kh$ $Baghd\bar{a}d$, VI, 179-181).

¹¹⁴ The date of his death is generally given as 197/812. For notices on him, see *Shadharāt*, I, 349; and $Tadh\bar{\imath}b$, IX, 406-407 (see KDM, III, 92, for Ibn al-Jawzi's assessment of his work as a transmitter). As Dhahabī's notice on him makes clear, not all authorities shared Ibn al-Jawzī's critical appraisal ($M\bar{\imath}z\bar{a}n$, IV, 10).

b. Abī'l-Mughīra (d.168/784), a *mawlā* of Banū Khaṭṭāb. For a list of the more important notices on him see *GAS*, I, 93. Opinions as to his trustworthiness in matters of tradition varied. For Ibn al-Jawzī's views, see *KAS*, 98 (especially the later part) and *KDM*, III, 10. While noting a number of critical opinions regarding Fulayḥ, Dhahabī does point out that both Bukhārī and Muslim cite *ḥadīths* in which the name of Fulayḥ b. Sulaymān occurs (*Mīzān*, III, 365-366; cf., also *Shadharāt*, I, 266).

¹¹⁶ I have not been able so far to establish the identity of Sa^cid.

¹¹⁷ Abū 'Abd Allāh 'Ubayd b. Ḥunayn, a *mawlā* of the Banū Khaṭṭāb, who died in 105/723. According to Ibn Sa'd, he was a reliable transmitter though he actually transmitted very little. Ibn Sa'd also notes that he was the paternal uncle of Fulayḥ b. Sulaymān (*Ṭabaqāt*, V, 285-286).

¹¹⁸ Cf., Bayhaqī, 355-356, where a similar assessment of this *isnād* is to be found.

¹¹⁹ Zakarīyā² b. Yaḥyā b. Khallād Abū Yaʻlā as-Sājī, died 307/919 (cf., *Ta²rīkh Baghdād*, VIII, 459-460; and *Shadharāt*, II, 250-251). On as-Sājī's judgment, see *Mīzān*, I, 67, 7 (cf., *Ta²rīkh Baghdad*, 180-181).

Several sources report that Question of Lonar's reign (Ibn Said, Lonary) to the information provides seven years later.

⁻ A.D. 723

Traditions so termed are tho tended something from the Prophet follower received it. Such traditions a make ally important one in the chair

reported that the traditions transmitted by [Ibrāhīm] were lacking in credibility (munākīr). Speaking of Fulayḥ [b. Sulaymān], Yaḥyā b. Maʿīn said that his traditions are not to be admitted (bi'l-jāʾiz) [as evidence], and on one occasion [Yaḥyā] referred to him as a weak traditionist. Nasāʾī said that he was not to be trusted as a traditionist. As for ʿUbayd b. Ḥunayn, Bukhārī noted that his traditions were not regarded as sound by the experts of Medina. Abū Bakr al-Bayhaqī said: "Whenever there is a difference of opinion among the experts as to the permissibility of the traditions of Fulayḥ serving as evidence (fī jawāz al-iḥtijāj [bihi]), his texts should not be used as a basis for canonical decisions, especially in a matter as important as the one under consideration.

"The above tradition is also defective in another respect: Qatāda b. Nu^cmān, who is alleged to have received it from 'Ubayd b. Ḥunayn, died during the caliphate of 'Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb¹²⁰ whereas 'Ubayd b. Ḥunayn died in 105A.H.¹²¹ at the age of seventy according to al-Wāqidī. There is thus a gap in the *isnād* of the tradition as it stands. The person who is quoted in the tradition as having said 'Let us go and visit Abū Sa^cīd' cannot, therefore, have been 'Ubayd b. Ḥunayn but rather an unnamed individual who related it to him. If we refuse to accept traditions with incomplete *isnāds* (*marāsīl*)¹²² as a basis for legal rulings then how can we accept them when important matters [of doctrine] are at stake?" [Al-Bayhaqī] continued: "If the chain of this tradition were reliable, one might suppose that the Messenger of God had passed it on from one of the 'People of the Book' for the purpose of refuting them but that Qatāda had failed to understand his purpose."

100 The problem of the above tradition is illustrated by an incident involving Zubayr [b. al-cAwwām], who reported that he heard a man relating a tradition which, he claimed, had come from the Messenger of God. Zubayr listened until the man had finished and then said to him: "Did

¹²⁰ Several sources report that Qatāda died in the year 23 A.H. (A.D. 643-4), the very last year of 'Umar's reign (Ibn Sa'd, *Ṭabaqāt*, III, 452; Ibn Ḥajar, *Tahdhīb*, VIII, 357-8). According to the information provided above by Ibn al-Jawzī, 'Ubayd was born in the year 30 A.H., seven years later.

¹²¹ A.D. 723.

¹²² Traditions so termed are those whose *isnāds* are traced back to a Follower who reports something from the Prophet without indicating the Companion through whom the Follower received it. Such traditions are regarded as defective because they omit a link (and a critically important one) in the chain of authorities.

you receive this tradition from the Prophet?" He replied: "Yes." [Zubayr] then added: "People like this make us reluctant to report sayings attributed to the Prophet, for I myself heard [fol.23b] these words from him; however, he prefaced them with the qualification: 'I heard the following from one of the People of the Book.' If one had arrived after this introductory remark and the reference to the People of the Book, one would naturally have assumed that the Prophet himself had been the source of this tradition." It is most likely that Zubayr actually had in mind the tradition reported by Qatāda, for the People of the Book do indeed maintain that after God created the heavens and the earth, He rested. God, however, has said: "We were not affected by fatigue." It is entirely possible that the Prophet did pass the above tradition on from [the People of the Book], but that Qatāda did not hear the Prophet's initial qualifying statement.

101 [Abū] 'Abd Allāh b. Aḥmad reports in his *Kitāb as-Sunna*¹²⁵ that Abū Sufyān said: "I saw al-Ḥasan [sitting] with his right leg placed over his left, and so I said to him: 'O Abū Saʿīd, sitting in such a position is not proper'. Ḥasan replied: 'God combat the Jews, for [the Quran] states: "We created the heavens and the earth and what is between them in six days, and We were not affected by fatigue."" [Abū Sufyān later said:] "I knew what troubled him and so I did not respond." What Ḥasan was alluding to [in his outburst] was precisely the saying of the People of the Book which we mentioned above. According to another tradition which we have reported [elsewhere] al-'Awwām b. Ḥawshab asked Abū Mijliz about a man who sat with his legs crossed, and he replied: "There is nothing wrong with this practice; only Jews condemn it, for they claim that God created the heavens and the earth and what is between them in six days after which he rested. God, however, has said: 'We were not affected by fatigue.'" 128

102 One scholarly authority has interpreted the above tradition in a

metaphorical fashion / talan in fact reliable. He argued means in effect that He combuilds a house, we say "h meaning that nothing rema the words "He placed one placed some parts of creati I is however, maintained attribute (sifa) of God and though not in the sense in According to him, this tradi despite confess surributes may not be ascril the the one under considera an amphate may not be ascr from a single authority (al/h) were not understor for human beings I to sit or was not proscribed in the p between two "acts." It has God as well as Abū Bakr an other Such a practice was o wanting of drawers.

¹²³ This appears to be the end of the quotation from Zubayr. Clearly, the following sentence cannot be a part of the quotation since Zubayr is referred to in the third person.

 $^{^{124}}$ S. 50: 38. For exegetical commentary, see $Z\bar{a}d$ al- $Mas\bar{i}r$, VIII, 22 and note 2; Zamakhsharī, $Kashsh\bar{a}f$, IV, 12.

¹²⁵ On this work and its author, see GAS, I, 511 (no. 8); cf., also GAL, Suppl. I, 311.

¹²⁶ S. 50: 38.

 $^{^{127}}$ What precisely Ibn al-Jawzī is referring to here (if, indeed, these are the words of Ibn al-Jawzī) is not clear.

¹²⁸ S. 50: 38.

CE, Be Funk, Market, 13

Ot, a might be rendered: "He construct in this way, the interpolates. See the Firnk (Mushkil, 12 C), also Buyland, Asmar, 354-36.

CE, 8333.

God's recining with His legs are of reclining with crossed legs, and harman action, this reference of the fire point for al-layed wishes to

metaphorical fashion (ta'awwala), on the assumption that the tradition was in fact reliable. He argued that the expression "[God] reclined (istalqā)" means in effect that He completed the work of creation. Thus, when someone builds a house, we say "he reclined on his back (istalqā 'alā zahrihi)," meaning that nothing remained to be done. [According to this scholar] the words "He placed one leg [fol.24a] over the other" means that He placed some parts of creation over certain other parts. 130 The Qādī [Abū Ya'lāl, however, maintained that reclining (istilgā') is to be regarded as an attribute (sifa) of God and that He indeed placed one leg over the other, though not in the sense in which we ordinarily understand such things. According to him, this tradition, however, does establish that God has two legs (rijlān), despite confessing his ignorance as to what this might mean. Attributes may not be ascribed to God on the basis of a defective tradition like the one under consideration; even if [the tradition] were not defective, an attribute may not be ascribed to God on the basis of a tradition derived from a single authority ($akhb\bar{a}r\ \bar{a}h\bar{a}d$). And if the meaning of the expression [istilg \bar{a}] were not understood, how could he say that it is not permissible for human beings [to sit or recline with their legs crossed]? Such behavior was not proscribed in the past, for a prohibition presupposes a likeness between two "acts." 132 It has been reliably reported that the Messenger of God as well as Abū Bakr and 'Umar used to recline with one foot over the other. Such a practice was objected to only when it was done without the wearing of drawers.

¹²⁹ Cf., Ibn Furak, Mushkil, 121, 3-5.

¹³⁰ Or, it might be rendered: "He placed some creatures over certain other creatures." Construed in this way, the interpretation becomes a justification for a hierarchical social order. See Ibn Fūrak (*Mushkil*, 121, 15-18) where just such an interpretation is suggested (Cf., also Bayhaqī, *Asmā*², 359-360).

¹³¹ Cf., §33/3.

¹³² God's reclining with His legs crossed can have nothing in common with the human act of reclining with crossed legs. Since there can be no connection between God's action and human action, this reference cannot serve as the basis for a prohibition. This seems to be the point Ibn al-Jawzī wishes to make here.

The Tenth Tradition

103 The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{\iota}$ [Abū Yaʻlā] cited a report going back to Ḥassān b. 'Atīya¹³³ that one of the *mushrikīn* cursed the Messenger of God whereupon a Muslim attacked the man and killed him. [When the Prophet heard what had happened] he said [to the people]: "Why should you be surprised at the assistance of God, for His Messenger met God while He was reclining (*muttaki* an) and [the Messenger] was invited to sit down with him." ¹³⁴

104 There is, however, a gap $(maqt\bar{u}^c)$ in [the $isn\bar{a}d$ of] this tradition and [its matn] is far from credible. If [the text] had any merit at all, it would mean that God showed favor and bestowed blessing [on the Prophet].

The Eleventh Tradition

105 In the Ṣaḥīḥs of Bukhārī and Muslim there is a tradition in which Anas b. Mālik reports that the Prophet said: "[The damned] will continue to be flung into Hell (*jahannam*) until finally the latter says: 'Are there any more?' The Almighty will push His foot (*qadam*) into Hell so as to force them in, one upon the other. And so it will be filled." ¹³⁵

106 It is essential that we affirm that God's essence is not a composite entity, existing within the limits of a particular place, subject to change or characterized by movement. According to Abū 'Ubayd al-Harawī, Ḥasan [fol.24b] al-Baṣrī maintained that the term qadam [in the tradition reported by Anas] refers to those whom God causes to advance toward (qaddama) Hell because of their evil deeds and compels them to enter it. The imām Ibn

and said: The wo mundam . According to that the term godan in this Gnd's foreknowledge, wil al-Arthuri said: "The gadar ar ances on ahead to Hell may be taken in two ways advance or move forward (what you destroy (hadom is called a gab less of the tradition in which God will create people for agreement in that both Para required to meet the number Since Hell was promised the case into it does not fill it. number, for you promised send forth into it people upo 107 The second possible i plural of oddimic in the sa 5 me transmitters of the tra instead of gadam on the as

¹³³ According to Dhahabī, he belonged to the generation of the $t\bar{a}bi^c\bar{u}n$ and was considered by some $had\bar{u}th$ experts to have been a Qadarī, but Dhahabī makes it clear that this was a matter of suspicion, not an established fact $(M\bar{\imath}z\bar{a}n, I, 479)$.

 $^{^{134}}$ Cf., DST, 39; and BA (Beirut), 82-83. This report is not to be found in any of the standard collections of $had\bar{\imath}th$. Although Abū Yaʻlā is cited as a transmitter, neither the name Hassān nor the report appear in the $Mu^{\epsilon}tamad$.

¹³⁵ For citations of this tradition in more or less the form given above by Ibn al-Jawzi, see Muslim, *janna*, 37 and 38 (for versions of the tradition that go back to Abū Hurayra, see *janna*, 35 and 36); Bukhārī, *tawḥīd*, 76 (cf., Houdas, *Les traditions*, IV, 583); *Musnad*, III, 134, 141 and 234. For discussions of this tradition, see Bayhaqī, *Asmā*, 348ff.; Ibn Khuzayma, *Tawḥīd*, 88, and 95-99; *DST*, 39-41; and *BA* (Beirut), 83.

Muhammad b. Ziyad Abü Al emocographer and an authority or must on him see GAS, VIII, 12 Kniib ol-AsmiP, 352, 1-2.

An-Nadr b. Shumayi b. Kha school of lexicography and studer among them a work on hadibi em as GAS, VIII. 58-59. See Yaqir.

[&]quot;hat is sent ahead." The arnuticiple, maqoddom.

[&]quot;That is destroyed" = mahd

[&]quot;hat is seized" = maybad.

That is, one who arrives, advi-

Gulf its something absent, con

al-A^crābī¹³⁶ said: "The word *gadam* means those who advance ahead (*mu*tagaddim)." According to Abū Bakr al-Bayhaqī, 137 Nadr b. Shumayl 138 held that the term gadam in this tradition refers to unbelievers (kuffār), who, in God's foreknowledge, will be among those to enter Hell. Abū Manṣūr al-Azharī said: "The qadam are those concerning whose final destiny word advances on ahead to Hell." It would appear then that the term [qadam] may be taken in two ways. According to the first, anything you cause to advance or move forward (qaddamtahu) is a qadam¹³⁹ in the same way that what you destroy (hadamtahu) is called a hadam or what you seize (qabadtahu) is called a qabad. 141 This interpretation is supported by the full text of the tradition in which the following words appear: "As for Paradise, God will create people for it." Thus the two parts of the tradition are in agreement in that both Paradise and Hell will be augmented by the amount required to meet the number promised to each, and so they will be filled. Since Hell was promised that it would be filled, when the number of people cast into it does not fill it, it will cry out: "Are there more? Increase the number, for you promised me that I would be filled." And so [God] will send forth into it people upon people until it finally says: "It is enough!"

107 The second possible interpretation is that qadam is to be taken as the plural of $q\bar{a}dim^{142}$ in the same way that ghayab is the plural of $gh\bar{a}^{2}ib$. Some transmitters of the tradition, however, have adopted the reading rijl instead of qadam on the assumption that the two terms are synonymous.

 $^{^{136}}$ Muḥammad b. Ziyād Abū 'Abd Allāh b. al-A'rābī (d. 231/846), a celebrated grammarian, lexicographer and an authority on genealogy. For a brief biographical notice and a list of sources on him see *GAS*, VIII, 126-129; and El^2 , III, 706-707.

¹³⁷ Kitāb al-Asmā², 352, 1-2.

¹³⁸ An-Naḍr b. Shumayl b. Kharasha at-Tamīmī (d. 203/819), a member of the Basran school of lexicography and student of al-Khalīl. He was the author of a number of works, among them a work on *ḥadīth* entitled *Gharīb al-Ḥadīth*. For a brief biographical sketch, see *GAS*, VIII, 58-59. See Yāqūt, *Irshād*, VIII, 218-222, for an important notice.

¹³⁹ "What is sent ahead." The argument here is that *qadam* carries the force of the passive participle, *muqaddam*.

[&]quot;What is destroyed" = $mahd\bar{u}m$.

¹⁴¹ "What is seized" = $maqb\bar{u}d$. See Lane, 2483 for more on this phenomenon in Arabic grammar; cf., $Lis\bar{a}n\ al$ -'Arab, VII, 214, and XII, 604.

¹⁴² That is, one who arrives, advances forward, or precedes.

¹⁴³ *Ghā^cib*: something absent, concealed or invisible.

Thus in the various versions of the tradition cited by Dāraquṭnī the term qadam sometimes occurs while in others the term rijl is used. This indicates that [some of] the transmitters of this tradition took the term rijl to mean a group or multitude $(jam\bar{a}^ca)$, since in literary Arabic the expression rijl min $jar\bar{a}d^{144}$ is sometimes used. If the term rijl is used in this sense, the tradition might mean: "a throng $(jam\bar{a}^ca)$ whose number resembles an 'army' of locusts will enter Hell rushing headlong to their destruction."

108 The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{i}$ [Abū Yaʿlā] said: "The term $qadam^{145}$ is to be taken as an attribute of the divine essence ($sifa\ dh\bar{a}t\bar{i}ya$)." I myself heard Ibn Zāghūnī say: "[God] will place His qadam in Hell to demonstrate to the damned that they and their kind [fol.25a] will burn in Hell but that He Himself will not [be affected]." Such statements are tantamount to an admission of multiplicity in the being of God—a most repugnant doctrine! I have also seen a work written by Abū Bakr b. Khuzayma on the divine attributes, among whose chapter headings were the following: "Affirming the 'Hand' [as a Divine Attribute]," "[God's] Holding the Heaven and Earth on His Fingers," "Affirming the 'Foot' (rijl) [as a Divine Attribute] Contrary to the Muʿtazila." [At the beginning of this last chapter] he quotes the verse: "Do [idols] have feet (arjul) with which to walk or hands with which to grasp?" And then he adds: "Indeed, our Lord has informed us that those who have neither hands nor feet are like cattle." I am amazed that this man, notwithstanding his great learning in scripture (naql), should utter such words, for he

ascribes [attributes] to Go turing, vic., a hand that graaverified to God an earl 191 such things. It should be obse of lidnis was directed to the saying to them: "How can t neither hands capable of era 1999 I'm 'Aqii said: "Goo quez: Indeed, such a noti tuneriet. for God is not m members by which He carrie His creative power (askwist) sees the assistance of some His will on it " through or about to be consumed by fi and peace." How absurd in S. 7: 195. for example. "For the al-devel there are sewhat the clark do not possess is a in adult are inemal hands, feet, etc. to attribute an ear to God since if Auctibing to God what the idols la machine the Strine attributes since a bed a meeting broughout to The integrated in a sour The field were also ments the arrivate predicate the Following De Khanavers's St also have assigned to Gold an ear. "Ration Hell. "S 23 of The background of stemmed in him him alive because of the time God. According to the i half at exchang which was fill more that hirth flying over it w the amount operate construct to fire be constron and peace for unusually to the fire. He al-June to offer the Attractor remained in

lim or fifth days; during which h

¹⁴⁴ A swarm or "army" of locusts.

¹⁴⁵ Here construed as meaning "foot."

¹⁴⁶S. 7: 195. The full verse reads: "Do [idols] have feet with which to walk, or hands with which to grasp, or eyes with which to see, or ears with which to hear?"

¹⁴⁷There is no reference to cattle in the full text of the S. 7:195. There is such a reference, however, in verse 184 of this same surah, and it seems likely that this verse is the background of the reference to cattle. Verse 184 reads as follows: "We have created for Hell many of the jinn and of mankind; hearts have they but they understand not with them: eyes have they but they see not with them; ears have they but they hear not with them; they are like the cattle, nay, they are further astray." It is interesting that in this verse it is jinn and men, not idols or the gods, who are compared to cattle, whereas in Ibn Khuzayma's statement it is the idols/gods that are compared to cattle. The editor of the 1968 Cairo edition of Ibn Khuzayma's work argues in a footnote to this passage that in this sentence Ibn Khuzayma is in fact comparing the idolaters, not the idols, to cattle. Even when his statement is examined in context in *Kitāb at-Tawḥīd* there is nothing to indicate that Ibn Khuzayma had idolaters (as opposed to idols) in mind. One can only conclude that Ibn Khuzayma is here piecing parts of two separated verses together to make a point.

ascribes [attributes] to God which the idols were condemned ¹⁴⁸ for not having, *viz.*, a hand that grasps and a foot that walks. ¹⁴⁹ He should also have ascribed [to God] an ear! ¹⁵⁰ If he had understood he would not have uttered such things. It should be observed that [in the above verse] God's condemnation of idols was directed to those who worshipped them. He was, in effect, saying to them: "How can you who have hands and feet worship what has neither hands capable of grasping or feet capable of walking?"

109 Ibn 'Aqīl said: "God is beyond having the attribute of occupying space. Indeed, such a notion is the very essence of anthropomorphism (*tajsīm*), for God is not made up of parts nor does He possess bodily members by which He carries out his actions. Thus, His authority (*amr*) and His creative power (*takwīn*) do not act on Hell in such a way that He must seek the assistance of some part of Himself (*bi-shay*³ *min dhātihi*) or work His will on it ¹⁵¹ through one of His attributes, for [when Abraham was about to be consumed by fire God merely] said to it: 'O fire, be coolness and peace!' How absurd is the view [advocated by the *mujassima*] and

r hands

rm

tes

n a

min

tion of

s an

hūnī

that

l not

licity

work

rhose

ivine

"Afzila."

have

then

either

nding

or he

ference, is the ated for th them;

they it is jinn zayma's & Cairo

hen his that Ibn

that Ibn

¹⁴⁸ In S. 7: 195, for example.

¹⁴⁹ For Ibn al-Jawzī there are several problems with this procedure: 1) Ascribing to God what the idols do not possess is a thoroughly anthropomorphist act since what are denied to idols are literal hands, feet, etc. Ibn al-Jawzī wonders why Ibn Khuzayma did not go on to attribute an ear to God since this is among the things denied to idols in S. 7: 195. 2). Ascribing to God what the idols lack is a methodologically insufficient basis upon which to establish the divine attributes since it is to make negation the basis of predication. It is Ibn al-Jawzī's contention throughout *KAS* that the divine attributes be based on positive statements from scripture interpreted in a sound fashion.

¹⁵⁰ For the full verse also mentions that idols do not have ears. Ibn al-Jawzī has observed that among the attributes predicated of God in *Kitāb at-Tawḥīd* no mention is made of an ear. Following Ibn Khuzayma's logic of assigning to God what the idols lack, he should also have assigned to God an ear.

¹⁵¹ That is, on Hell.

¹⁵² S. 21: 69. The background of these words is the story of how Abraham's people had attempted to burn him alive because he had destroyed their idols and called for the worship of the true God. According to the details supplied by *Zād al-Masīr* (V, 366-367), they had built an enclosure which was filled with wood and set to fire (a fire which became so intense that birds flying over it were burned to a crisp). When Abraham reached the fire from a catapult specially constructed for the occasion, God issued His command to the fire "O fire, be coolness and peace for Abraham"—as a result of which Abraham was left untouched by the fire. Ibn al-Jawzī quotes Ka'b [al-Aḥbar] and Wahb [b. al-Munabbih] to the effect that Abraham remained in the enclosure for six days (according to some authorities forty or fifty days) during which he was visited by Gabriel, who brought him a garment

how foreign to One who is the Creator of angels and the celestial spheres! The Quran itself repudiates those who hold such views when it says: 'If these had been truly gods, they would not have gone down [to Hell]'. How then is it possible to suppose that the Creator Himself will descend to Hell? He is indeed beyond the fanciful notions of the *mujassima*."

The Twelfth Tradition

110 According to a report from Abū Hurayra, the Prophet said: "[In Hell] the tooth of the unbeliever will be like Mount Uḥud [in size], and his skin will be the measure of forty-two forearms ($dhir\bar{a}^c$) in thickness, each the length of the forearm of al- $Jabb\bar{a}r$ ($dhir\bar{a}^c$ al- $jabb\bar{a}r$)." ¹⁵⁴

111 [fol.25b] Abū 'Amr az-Zāhid¹⁵⁵ maintained that the term *jabbār* here is [not a reference to God but] to the long forearm as in the expression: *nakhla jabbāra*, "the tall palm-tree." ¹⁵⁶ According to Ibn Qutayba, the term *jabbār*, whose plural form is *jabābira*, means "king" (*malik*). ¹⁵⁷ The *Qāḍā* Abū Ya'lā, however, wrote: "We maintain that [the expression *dirā' al-jabbār*] is to be taken in its literal sense (*zāhir*), for *al-jabbār* is God. ¹⁵⁸ However, we do not attribute to God a forearm (*dhirā'*) understood as a bodily organ (*jāriḥa*)." How astonishing it is that reason can forsake a man to such a degree! [Abū Ya'lā] went on to say: "It is possible that the forearm will be increased forty fold until it reaches [the thickness] of the unbeliever's skin; [nonetheless] it is to be ascribed [to God] as an attribute of the divine

essence, though not in the

not have in mind a limb, ho

112 The Qāḍī [Abū Yaˈli] judgment David will acknow place in front of me amāmi will reply: 'Take a place bel Lord, my sin!' Thereupon (version of this saying tran "Then God will draw near to on [God's] thigh (fakhidh)."

and a carpet from Paradise. Ibn 'Aqīl quotes this verse to show that God does not need to be present in Hell literally in order to effect his will in or on it. For additional details on this verse, see Zād al-Masīr, V, 366-367; also Zamakhsharī, Kashshāf, II, 578.

¹⁵³ S. 21: 99. For Ibn al-Jawzī's exegesis of this verse, see Zād al-Masīr, V, 391.

¹⁵⁴ For references to this tradition along with commentary, see Ibn Qutayba, *Ta'wīl*, 270-271 (cf., Lecomte, 239); Bayhaqī, *Asmā'*, 341-343 (esp. 342); *DST*, 41-42; and *BA* (Beirut), 86-87. For variant forms of this tradition, see Muslim, *janna*, 44; Tirmidhi, *janna*, 3; and *Musnad*, II, 26, 328, 334, 537; and III, 29.

¹⁵⁵ On the identity of this person, see notes to §47.

¹⁵⁶ Cf., Lane 375, 1-2, where the expression is said to mean "the tall and young" palm tree, or one "tall and above the reach of the hand."

¹⁵⁷ A *dhirā*^c *jabbār* would be a "king-size" forearm (Ibn Qutayba, *Ta*³wīl, 270-271; cf., Lecomte, *Le traité*, 239; also Bayhaqī, *Asmā*², 342, 20ff.).

 $^{^{158}}$ Al-Jabbār is indeed one of the ninty-nine names of God.

been able to determine. Ibn al-Jan
Abū Yaslā.

Mujāhid b. Jabr Abū l-Ḥajā pespite Ṭabarī's frequent use of biographical works for having reliable tographical sources on him, see Chu'aym, III. 279-310; Yāqūt Irsi 1-42; Ibn al-Jawzī, Ṣafwa, II. 117-re raised regarding his reliability.

See DST. 42-43; and BA Beisee Ibn Fürak. Mushkil, 338, when discussed. The tradition is not care

reflect their views since some of sayings meet the formal requirem moral authority of the tabit in. This

essence, though not in the sense of an actual limb."¹⁵⁹ However, if he did not have in mind a limb, how could it be increased forty fold?

The Thirteenth Tradition

112 The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{i}$ [Abū Yaʻlā] reported that Mujāhid¹⁶⁰ said: "On the day of judgment David will acknowledge his sin, and God will say to him: 'Take a place in front of me $(am\bar{a}m\bar{i})$!' Then David will say: 'O Lord, my sin!' God will reply: 'Take a place behind me $(khalf\bar{i})$!' Then David will say again: 'O Lord, my sin!' Thereupon God will say: 'Take my foot $(qadam\bar{i})$!'" In the version of this saying transmitted by Ibn Sīrīn, the following is added: "Then God will draw near to David so that he will be able to place his hand on [God's] thigh (fakhidh)." ¹⁶¹

113 It is astonishing that anyone should attempt to base the divine attributes on statements derived from the Followers $(t\bar{a}bi^c\bar{\imath}n)$; [furthermore, this saying] may not actually reflect their views though it may meet the criteria of sound transmission, ¹⁶² for they may merely have been passing on what they had derived from the the *Ahl al-Kitāb*, as in the case of Wahb b. Munabbih. The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{\imath}$ [Abū Yaʻlā] said: "We take the [above] saying in its literal sense ('alā zāhir) although we do not construe the terms 'foot' and 'thigh' to mean actual bodily members, nor do we take 'in front of' in a spatial sense." It is

¹⁵⁹ The question of the $dir\bar{a}^c$ al-jabb $\bar{a}r$ is not taken up in the Mu^c tamad so far as I have been able to determine. Ibn al-Jawz $\bar{\imath}$ is undoubtedly quoting from one of the lost works of Ab $\bar{\imath}$ Ya'l \bar{a} .

¹⁶⁰ Mujāhid b. Jabr Abū'l-Ḥajjāj, the "leading" expert on *tafsīr* of his generation, who, despite Ṭabarī's frequent use of his glosses on the Quran, was often criticized in later biographical works for having relied unduly on Jewish and Christian sources. For a list of biographical sources on him, see *GAS*, I, 29; and *EI*², VII, 293. Cf., also the Ḥilya of Abū Nuʿaym, III, 279-310; Yāqūt, *Irshād*, VI, 242-243; Ibn al-Jazarī, *Ghayat an-Nihāya*, II, 41-42; Ibn al-Jawzī, Ṣafwa, II, 117-119; and Dhahabī, *Mīzān*, III, 439-440, where questions are raised regarding his reliability.

¹⁶¹ See DST, 42-43; and BA (Beirut), 87-88, where this saying is cited and glossed. Also see Ibn Fūrak, Mushkil, 338, where a slightly different version of this tradition is cited and discussed. The tradition is not cited in the Mu^ctamad .

 $^{^{162}}$ That is, this saying may well have been transmitted by the $t\bar{a}bi^c\bar{u}n$, but it may not reflect their views since some of what they passed on came from the *ahl al-Kitāb*. Such sayings meet the formal requirements for sound transmission, but they do not carry the moral authority of the $t\bar{a}bi^c\bar{u}n$. This seems to be Ibn al-Jawzī's point.

astonishing that [in enumerating the divine attributes] such persons produce a complete bodily form replete with a thigh (fakhidh), a leg ($s\bar{a}q$), a foot (qadam), a face (wajh), two hands (yadayn), fingers ($as\bar{a}bi^c$), even a little finger (khinsir) and a thumb ($ibh\bar{a}m$), a side (janb) and a waist (haqw), [along with such movements as] ascending ($su^c\bar{u}d$) and descending ($nuz\bar{u}l$). They say: "We take these attributes in their literal meaning ($salaaa^c\bar{u}n^c$), though not in the sense of bodily members (jawarih)." How is it possible for an intelligent person to attribute to God a back or a front or a thigh [literally though not in the sense of a bodily member]? We ought to avoid discussing [matters of this sort] with such persons, [fol.26a] for we already know $salaa^{163}$ that the thigh [ascribed to God in the $salaa^c\bar{u}n^c$) is not a thigh, nor the back a back. People like this should not discourse [on such matters], for they treat the principles of reason with disdain as though they were speaking to children.

The Fourteenth Tradition

114 According to a tradition reported by Abū Hurayra, which is cited by Bukhārī and Muslim in their respective Ṣaḥīḥs, the Messenger of God said: "God will laugh at two men [as they approach Paradise]; although one of them killed the other, both will enter Paradise." Among those traditions found only in Muslim's collection there is one reported by Ibn Mas'ūd in which the Prophet is said to have laughed when he spoke of the last person to enter Paradise. Someone then asked him why he was laughing and he replied: "Because the Lord of the worlds will laugh when [the last person to

enter Paradise | says: 'Are 'I 115 The term "laughing" of becoming evident or ma was previously concealed, earth laughes when vegetal Similarly, it is said that the

> Every time a new camo The earth laughs as he

The act of laughing [in the the teeth, is impossible for should be taken to mean a kindness (fadl). Thus, when Lord's laughing," he mere express God's kindness and glime reads]: "We will not fa [Abū Razīn] was, in effect, hereafter] between himself hope of receiving good from This [kind of] metaphori

¹⁶³ And hence we do not need to be told.

¹⁶⁴ For the full tradition, see Muslim, *imāra*, 128 and 129; Bukhārī, *jihād*, 28 (cf., Houdas and Marçais, *Les traditions*, II, 294); Nasāʾī, *jihād*, 38; Ibn Māja, *Muqaddima*, 13; and Mālik, *Muwaṭtaʾ*, *jihād*, 21. In the full tradition, the portion quoted by Ibn al-Jawzī is followed by these words: "[Those listening to the Prophet] said: 'O Messenger of God, how can this be?' He replied: 'One of them will fight in the way of God and will die a martyr's death. God will then turn to his killer and guide him aright so that he embraces Islam. Then when he is fighting in the way of God he too will die a martyr's death.' "For discussions of the question of God's laughing, see Bayhaqī, *Asmāʾ*, 467-469; Ibn Khuzayma, *Tawḥīd*, 230-241; Ibn Qutayba, *Taʾwīl*, 266-267 (cf., Lecomte, 235-236); and Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 474-477.

For the full text of this hadi 411: Bayhaqi. Asma?, 474: Ibn Ki

See Ibu Fürak, Machiel 47

Cf. Ibn Fürak, Mushkel, 477

See Bayhaqi, Asmar, 467-47

enter Paradise] says: 'Are You making sport of me?" 165

115 The term "laughing" [in Arabic usage] carries with it the connotation of becoming evident or manifest. Thus when someone brings to light what was previously concealed, it is said that he laughed. It is also said that the earth laughes when vegetation appears and flowers break forth in blossom. Similarly, it is said that the heavens weep, as the poet has said:

Every time a new camomile [appears], The earth laughs as heaven weeps. 166

The act of laughing [in the literal sense], which for humans involves baring the teeth, is impossible for God. [When applied to God] the expression should be taken to mean that He manifests His generosity (*karam*) and kindness (*fadl*). Thus, when the Prophet said: "I laughed on account of my Lord's laughing," he merely meant that he opened his mouth in order to express God's kindness and generosity. ¹⁶⁷ In another *ḥadīth* [whose concluding line reads]: "We will not fail to receive good from a Lord who laughs," ¹⁶⁸ [Abū Razīn] was, in effect, expressing his pain over the separation [in the hereafter] between himself and those "persons" (*ajsām*) who will have no hope of receiving good from God. ¹⁶⁹

This [kind of] metaphorical interpretation (ta'wīl) was employed by a

¹⁶⁵ For the full text of this *ḥadīth*, see Muslim, *īmān*, 310b; cf., also *Musnad*, I, 392 and 411; Bayhaqī, *Asmā*, 474; Ibn Khuzayma, *Tawḥīd*, 231; Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 476, 9-10.

¹⁶⁶ See Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 476, 5, where the last part of this line is cited with a brief commentary (cf., also Bayhaqī, 474, 11-12).

¹⁶⁷ Cf., Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 477, 7-12.

¹⁶⁸ This last line is actually Abū Razīn al-'Uqaylī's response to the words of the Prophet given in the first part of the tradition. The full text, as recorded in the Sunan of Ibn Māja (muqaddima 13/181) reads: عن وكيع بن حدس عن عمّه أبي رزين قال: قال رسول الله، أو يضحك الربُّ؟ قال: نعم. قلتُ: لن نعدم من ربُّ من وكيع بن حدس غيرِه. قال، قلتُ: يا رسول الله، أو يضحك الربُّ؟ قال: نعم. قلتُ: لن نعدم من ربُّ (The Messenger of God said: "Our Lord laughs at the despair of His servants and the imminence of the change He will shortly bring about." I (Abū Razīn) said: "O Messenger, will the Lord laugh?" He replied: "Yes." I said: "We will never lack good from a Lord who laughs" [cf., also Musnad, IV, 11-12; Bayhaqī, Asmā', 473, 2-6; and Ibn Khuzayma, Tawhīd, 235, and note 3]). In the prophetic saying "God laughs at the despair..." He laughs, not in the sense of making-fun or belittling, but out of relief knowing that the despair will soon be replaced by joy.

¹⁶⁹ See Bayhaqī, *Asmā*², 467-474, where a number of authorities are cited in support of this interpretation (cf., *Mushkil*, 474ff.).

number of 'ulama' [in dealing with this tradition]: al-Khattabī maintained that references to God's laughing are to be taken as expressing His satisfaction $(rid\bar{a})$ and the excellence of the reward. ¹⁷⁰ In another tradition whose words are those of a Companion (a hadith mawquf), it is reported that "[the Prophet] laughed so heartily that the inside of his mouth and molars were visible." Al-Khallāl¹⁷¹ quoted this tradition in his Kitāb as-Sunna, [and he observed that] al-Marwazī¹⁷² once asked [fol.26b] Abū 'Abd Allāh ¹⁷³ what he thought about this tradition and that he replied: "It is objectionable (bashi^c)." He continued: 174 "[If we assume the report to be true] the reference to laughing may be interpreted in two ways. In the first place, it may be construed as referring to the Prophet; that is, upon being informed that God laughed, [the Prophet himself] laughed so heartily that the inside of his mouth and molars were visible, just as it is reported in another tradition that [the Prophet] laughed until his teeth could be seen. This would be the correct interpretation were the tradition to be accepted as a reliable report. As a matter of fact, however, [its isnād] does not go back to the Prophet himself.¹⁷⁵ The second possibility is that 'laughing' is to be taken metaphorically (tajawwuzan) as a way of expressing God's abundant generosity (karam) and satisfaction $(rid\bar{a})$, in the same way he expressed himself in metaphor when he said: 'To him who approaches Me walking I will come running'."

116 The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{\iota}$ [Abū Ya'lā] said: "It is not impossible to take these traditions [which refer to God's laughing] in their literal sense ($z\bar{a}hir$), that is, by taking them as they are, without subjecting them to metaphorical

interpretation (tawil). We laughs in the sense of oper movement of other bodily have ascribed attributes to slender documentary base serious question. If he did with the principles of reas expression metaphorically so.176 How astonishing it is an expression referring to the term "molars" how is i were to be found [ascribed] to reject it. How much occurs] does not rest on a m the tradition "If only the pe rulers (umara). he later sa sound traditions]."177 Now much more rigorous should established [and] which run who affirm the molars understand Islam.

¹⁷⁰ Cf., Bayhaqī, *Asmā*, 469, 7-9; and 470, 2-5.

¹⁷¹ Aḥmad b. Muḥammad b. Hārūn Abū Bakr al-Khallāl (d. 311/923), a student of Abū Bakr al-Marwazī and a leading figure in the early history of the Ḥanbalī school. For valuable accounts of his life and work, see Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila, II, 12-15; and Ta²rīkh Baghdād, V, 112-113. For a more complete list of sources on him, see GAS, I, 511-512. His Kitāb as-Sunna appears to be lost.

¹⁷² Aḥmad b. Muḥammad b. al-Ḥajjāj Abū Bakr al-Marwazī (d. 275/888), credited with a number of important works, among them an abridgement of the *Masā'il* of Aḥmad. For a rather detailed account of his life, see *Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila*, I, 56-63; also see *Ta'rīkh Baghdād*, IV, 423-425 and *GAS*, I, 507.

¹⁷³ Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal.

 $^{^{174}}$ A comparison of the text of *KAS* with the wording found in *DST* (44) and *BA* (fol. 29a) indicates that what follows is a continuation of the commentary of Abū ^cAbd Allāh b. Ahmad.

¹⁷⁵ That is, it is a *ḥadīth maqtū*^c.

does end up, in Ibn al-Jawzi succomplaint seems to be Abū Yali doing. Ibn al-Jawzī, of course of tradition as an appropriate bass for

¹⁷⁷ According to his son 'Abd A finally declared this saying to be that it be striken from the record Allāh's comments on this tradition ما الله عليه وسلم والنبي صلى الله عليه وسلم (My father said to me shortly before it is in conflict with [other] had the said to me shortly before it is in conflict with [other] had the said to me shortly before it is in conflict with [other] had the said to me shortly before it is in conflict with [other] had the said to me shortly before it is in conflict with [other] had the said to me shortly before it is in conflict with [other] had the said to me shortly before it is in conflict with [other] had the said to me shortly before it is in conflict with [other] had the said to me shortly before it is in conflict with [other] had the said to me shortly before it is in conflict with [other] had the said to me shortly before it is in conflict with [other] had the said to me shortly before it is in conflict with [other] had the said to me shortly before it is in conflict with [other] had the said to me shortly before it is in conflict with [other] had the said to me shortly before it is in conflict with [other] had the said to me shortly before it is in conflict with [other] had the said to me shortly before it is in conflict with [other] had the said to me shortly before it is in conflict with [other] had the said to me shortly before it is in conflict with [other] had the said to me shortly before it is in conflict with [other] had the said to me shortly before it is in conflict with [other] had the said to me shortly before it is in conflict with [other] had the said to me shortly before it is in conflict with [other] had the said to me shortly before it is in conflict with [other] had the said to me shortly before it is in conflict with [other] had the said to me shortly before it is in conflict with [other] had the said to me shortly before it is in conflict with [other] had the said to me shortly before it is in the said to me shortly before it is in the said to me shortly w

¹⁷⁸ See Bukhārī, manāgib. 25:

interpretation (ta'wīl). We do not, however, take them to mean that God laughs in the sense of opening his mouth or [that his laughing entails] the movement of other bodily organs." It is astounding that this man should have ascribed attributes to God on the strength of traditions that have a slender documentary base (ahādīth āhād) and contain expressions open to serious question. If he did not attribute to God a laughing in accordance with the principles of reason $(ma^cq\bar{u}lan)$ he did nonetheless interpret the expression metaphorically (ta'awwala) without realizing that he was doing so. 176 How astonishing it is that he could take the expression "laughing" as an expression referring to [God's] favor (faḍl) and blessing (incām). As for the term "molars" how is it to be taken? By God, if [such an expression] were to be found [ascribed to God] in the two Sahīhs it would be necessary to reject it. How much more if [the tradition in which the expression occurs] does not rest on a reliable base (așl)! After Ahmad had transmitted the tradition "If only the people would keep aloof from them," that is, the rulers (umarā), he later said: "Strike this tradition [from the record of sound traditions]." ¹⁷⁷ Now this tradition is found in the two Sahīhs. ¹⁷⁸ How much more rigorous should one be in the case of a tradition which is not established [and] which runs counter to both revelation and reason! Those who affirm the molars $(adr\bar{a}s)$ as a divine attribute (sifa) do not really understand Islam.

¹⁷⁶ Despite Abū Yaʻlā's insistance on taking "laughing" in its literal (*zahir*) sense, he does end up, in Ibn al-Jawzī's view, adopting a quasi-figurative interpretation. Ibn al-Jawzī's complaint seems to be Abū Yaʻlā's inconsistency and his failure to recognize what he is doing. Ibn al-Jawzī, of course, objected to Abū Yaʻlā's willingness to consider an *āḥād* tradition as an appropriate basis for a discussion of the divine attributes.

¹⁷⁷ According to his son 'Abd Allāh, it was not until the very end of his life that Aḥmad finally declared this saying to be in conflict with the teaching of the Prophet and ordered that it be striken from the record of sound traditions (cf., Musnad, II, 301, 23-27). 'Abd Allāh's comments on this tradition (as reported in the Musnad) are as follows: قال أبي في أبل عليه وسلم مرضه الذي مات فيه: اضرب على هذا الحديث فإنه خلاف الأحاديث عن النبيّ صلى الله عليه وسلم (My father said to me shortly before his death: "Remove this hadīth [from the Musnad], for it is in conflict with [other] hadīths that go back to the Prophet").

¹⁷⁸ See Bukhārī, *manāqib*, 25; and Muslim, *fitan*, 74.

The Fifteenth Tradition

117 In a saying classified as $mawq\bar{u}f$ (that is, one going back to a Companion), the $Q\bar{a}d\bar{i}$ [Abū Yaʻlā] reported that 'Abd Allāh b. 'Umar once said: "God created the angels from the light of [His] two forearms and breast ($dhir\bar{a}$ 'ayn $wa\ sadr$)." ¹⁷⁹

118 On the basis of this tradition the $Q\bar{a}d\bar{i}$ [Abū Yaʿlā] attributed two forearms and a breast to God as attributes, although he qualified it by saying that these are not to be thought of as parts of the body. This is **[fol.27a]** reprehensible, for the saying does not in fact go back to the Prophet (*laysa bi-marfū*) nor is what it states true. Is it conceivable that finite creatures were made from [the light of] God's eternal essence? This is even more offensive than what Christians teach!

The Sixteenth Tradition

119 In the following tradition reported by Ibn 'Umar and cited in the Ṣaḥīḥs of Bukhārī and Muslim, the Prophet is quoted as saying: "[On the day of resurrection] God will bring the believer near [to Himself] and will cover him with His side (*kanaf*). And God will ask: 'Do you acknowledge [having committed] such and such a sin?""¹⁸⁰

120 The 'ulama' maintai [the believer] near to His 'His side' (kanafuhu) is to be care' (hiyāṭa) and 'His prote another person [with prote Whatever covers a thing is carried in battle (turs) is call to its bearer."

121 The Qāḍī [Abū Yafbring [the believer] near to one who does not comprel spatial terms is not applical draws near to [the believe draws near in His mercy (In

122 In a tradition cited in single authority, Mu'āwiya young slave girl who tende and discovered that a wolf became angry and beat her. A me for that, and I asked her Bring her to me!' When I ha

¹⁷⁹ Since no mention is made of the Prophet, it would appear that Ibn 'Umar is speaking for himself and not presuming to speak for the Prophet though that is not entirely clear. This saying is not cited in the Mu'tamad. See Ibn Fūrak (Mushkil, 143, 5) and Bayhaqī (Asmā', 342, 23-343, 1-5) where the saying is attributed to 'Abd Allāh b. 'Amr [b. al-'Āṣ]. In addition to the version of the saying cited above by Ibn al-Jawzī, Ibn Fūrak cites an interesting variation: خلق الله تعالى الملائكة من شعر ذراعيه وصدره أو من نورهما (God created the angels from the hair of His forearms and His chest, or from their light [cf., also 144, 4]). Ibn Fūrak notes, however, that the saying in its various forms is problematic for several reasons: 1) it does not go back to the Prophet and thus must be taken as reflecting nothing more than the views of Ibn 'Amr, and 2) it contains a number of grossly anthropomorphic expressions. For references to the creation of angels from light, see the Musnad, VI, 153 and 168 (cf., also Muslim, zuhd, 60; and Ibn Qutayba, Ta'wīl, 8 [Lecomte 6, n. 3]).

¹⁸⁰ For the full text of this tradition, see: Bukhārī, *mazālim*, 2; *tafsīr surah* 11; *adab*, 60; *tawhīd*, 36; Muslim, *tawba*, 52; Ibn Māja, *muqaddima*, 13 (183); *Musnad*, II, 74 and 105; *DST*, 44; and *BA*, 29a. See also Ibn al-Jawzī's *Gharīb al-Ḥadīth*, II, 302-303, where the tradition is cited and briefly discussed. Although Ibn al-Jawzī presents essentially the same point of view in this latter work, the authorities cited in support of that view differ from

those used here in KAS. For an Assee Ibn Fürak, Mushkil, 154-157.

Muhammad b. al-Qāsim Ah school of lexicography and gramm His Kināb Gharīb al-Ḥadith (no quotation above. For a summary writings, see GAL, I. 118; Suppl. al-Anbāri is not cited by Ibn al-Jan al-Ḥadith (I. 302-303).

I have found no reference to

Ibn al-Jawzi's point seems in necessarily from an affirmation of

Na See §34 where the Prophet's

120 The 'ulamā' maintain that the tradition means that God will bring [the believer] near to His mercy. Ibn al-Anbārī¹⁸¹ said: "The expression 'His side' (kanafuhu) is to be taken [metaphorically] as meaning 'His attentive care' (hiyāṭa) and 'His protection' (satr). When someone surrounds or covers another person [with protection], it is said that he has given him his side. Whatever covers a thing is said to give it its side (kanaf). Thus a shield carried in battle (turs) is called a kanīf since it provides a protective covering to its bearer."

121 The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{i}$ [Abū Yaʻlā] said: "[This tradition] means that God will bring [the believer] near to Himself ($dh\bar{a}tihi$)." These are the words of one who does not comprehend God 183 or realize that nearness defined in spatial terms is not applicable to Him. Thus when the Prophet said: "[God] draws near to [the believer] on the day of 'Arafa," he meant that [God] draws near in His mercy (lutf) and His pardon ('afw).

The Seventeenth Tradition

122 In a tradition cited in [the Ṣaḥīḥ of] Muslim, and transmitted by a single authority, Muʿāwiya b. al-Ḥakam reported the following: "I had a young slave girl who tended my sheep. One day I went out [to the herd] and discovered that a wolf had seized one of the lambs. Being human I became angry and beat her. Afterward when I met the Prophet he reprimanded me for that, and I asked him whether I should set her free. He replied: 'Bring her to me!' When I had fetched her he said to her: 'Where is God?' 184

those used here in *KAS*. For an Ash^carite view on the proper interpretation of this tradition, see Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 154-157.

 $^{^{181}}$ Muḥammad b. al-Qāsim Abū Bakr al-Anbārī (d. 328/940), a member of the Kufan school of lexicography and grammar, and the author of important works in both disciplines. His $Kit\bar{a}b$ $Ghar\bar{\imath}b$ al-Ḥad $\bar{\imath}th$ (no longer extant) is perhaps the source of Ibn al-Jawzī's quotation above. For a summary of biographical details and a list of his most important writings, see GAL, I, 118; Suppl. I, 182-183; GAS, VIII, 151-154; and EI^2 , I, 485b. Ibn al-Anbārī is not cited by Ibn al-Jawzī in his discussion of the term kanaf in his own $Ghar\bar{\imath}b$ al-Ḥad $\bar{\imath}th$ (I, 302-303).

¹⁸² I have found no reference to the question of God's *kanaf* in the *Mu^ctamad*.

 $^{^{183}}$ Ibn al-Jawzī's point seems to be that Abū Ya'lā failed to appreciate what follows necessarily from an affirmation of divine transcendence.

¹⁸⁴ See §34 where the Prophet's question is referred to and discussed briefly.

She answered: 'He is in heaven.' Then he asked: 'Who am I?' She replied: 'You are the messenger of God'. He then [turned to me and] said: 'Free her, for she is a believer,' "186"

123 We have already pointed out in an earlier part of this work that the Prophet was concerned [above all] to establish the fact of God's existence ($ithb\bar{a}t$ al- $wuj\bar{u}d$) [in the consciousness of his people]. ¹⁸⁷ Consequently, he spoke to them in terms with which they were familiar and emphasized [only] what was essential to the establishment [of God's existence]. He was satisfied to speak to them [fol.27b] in generalities (jumal) since elaborating on the details ($taf\bar{s}\bar{\imath}l$) might cause confusion in the minds of the untutored. ¹⁸⁸ However, it has been established among the ' $ulam\bar{a}$ ' that heaven and earth do not contain Him nor is He located within the bounds of particular places ($aqt\bar{a}r$). [The girl's statement that God is "in heaven"] is to be understood simply as her way of exalting the Creator. ¹⁸⁹

124 The following tradition
who reported: "I asked [th
God before He created Hi
sama"); below them then
there was empty space. T
waters." 193

125 [As for the isnad] Yesaying from Wakis b. Ḥudu Indeed, Yaslā is the only p wakis. 185 [As for the text of tashāb]. 186 It should be not all have "clouds," not the same of
¹⁸⁵ Cf. §60.

¹⁸⁶ For the full text of this tradition, see Muslim, *masājid*, 7 (33); Abū Dāwūd, *ṣalāt*, 167; *aymān*, 16 (1); Nasārī, *sahw*, 20; *Musnad*, II, 291; V, 447, 448; and Dārimī, *nudhūr*, 10. For discussions of the tradition, see *DST*, 45; *BA* (Beirut), 93-94; Bayhaqī, *Asmā*r, 421-422; Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 157-169; and Abū Yaʿlā, *Muʿtamad*, 56. See Gimaret, *Image*, 66-67, where other versions of this tradition are cited and their sources given.

¹⁸⁷ See especially §34.

the Prophet was satisfied with the general statement that God is in heaven and refused to get into a discussion of the details of what that might mean (cf., $Talb\bar{\imath}s$, 83, 4, where *jumal* is contrasted with $taf\bar{a}s\bar{\imath}l$). In §34 Ibn al-Jawzī seems to be saying something slightly different in regard to the approach of the Prophet—viz., emphasizing the concrete and the particular so as to make God's existence something real.

It is clear from this last line that Ibn al-Jawzī again opts for a metaphorical interpretation of the reference to God's being in the heaven—an interpretation advanced quite commonly in Ash'arite circles (cf., the Mushkil of Ibn Fūrak [p. 159-160] where the view is supported by both theological and philological arguments; and Gimaret, Image, 68-69). For al-Ghazzālī's use of this tradition, see Frank, al-Ghazālī and the Ash'arite School, 39.—It is curious that Ibn al-Jawzī makes no mention of Abū Ya'lā in connection with this tradition even though the latter held views which Ibn al-Jawzī would clearly have found problematic. Indeed, it is on the basis of a version of the above tradition that Abū Ya'lā argues that it is possible to speak of God's location in space, or as he puts it, God's "whereness" (aynīya): علي علي ويجوز علي علي الله أينيّة فيقال: أين هو؟ خلافًا للمعتزلة والأشعريّة في منعهم ذلك، والدلالة على جوازه ما رُوي عن معاوية بن الحكم قال...وروى أبو رزين قال: قلت: يا رسول الله أين كان ربّنا قبل أن يخلق السماوات (It is possible to

attribute "whereness" (ayurus) [
He "—his in contrast to the Mul
lunguage [in relation to God]. The
comes from a tradition related by
asked the Prophet: "O Messeng
hea was and the earth?" He replie
and below them there was nothing,
56, 10-19].

Ton Safd, Tabaqar, V. 518.

On the antecedent of the pro

See Lane (3046/3) where it impry, space; a vacant, or an empty space. 62-65.

Among the many occurrence B 182 r. Tirmidhi, tafsir siira 11 4-12 and also his Tarrikh, I. 37 de pressons of cosmology, generations of Ibn al-Jawzi's works (a Hadish, I. 81-82; and Gharib a Quayta, Tawil, 221-222 Lecont ii ii. Matamad, 56, 18-20 (cf., adminimal references as well as an

In some sources, his name 52 Dhahabi, Mizān IV, 335 L. He med in 209 824 (Tahdhib, XI, 403

Cf., al-Bayhaqi, Asmar, 377,

Ci_ Ibu al-Jawzi, Gharib al-

The Eighteenth Tradition

124 The following tradition was handed down from Abū Razīn [al-'Uqaylī]¹⁹⁰ who reported: "I asked [the Prophet]: 'O Messenger of God! Where was God before He created His creatures?' He replied: 'He was in clouds ($f\bar{t}$ ' $am\bar{a}$ '); below them¹⁹¹ there was empty space ($haw\bar{a}$ ')¹⁹² and above them there was empty space. Then He created His Throne ('arsh) above the waters." ¹⁹³

125 [As for the *isnād*] Ya'lā b. 'Aṭā' was the only person to transmit this saying from Wakī' b. Ḥudus¹⁹⁴ [who in turn had gotten it from Abū Razīn]. Indeed, Ya'lā is the only person known to have received traditions from Wakī'. [As for the text of this tradition], the term 'amā' means clouds (saḥāb). [196] It should be noted that the terms "above" (fawq) and "below" (taḥt) have "clouds," not the Creator, as their point of reference. Further,

attribute "whereness" (*aynīya*) [to God] for [the Prophet] was once asked: "Where is He?"—his in contrast to the Muʿtazilites and the Asharites who refuse to use that kind of language [in relation to God]. The evidence supporting the permissibility [of such language] comes from a tradition related by Muʿāwiya b. al-Ḥakam...going back to Abū Razīn, who asked the Prophet: "O Messenger of God, where was our Lord before he created the heavens and the earth?" He replied: "He was in the clouds; above them there was nothing and below them there was nothing; then He created the Throne above the waters" [*Muʿtamad*, 56, 10-19]).

¹⁹⁰ Ibn Sa^cd, *Ṭabaqāt*, V, 518.

¹⁹¹ On the antecedent of the pronoun, cf., Lane 2161/3.

¹⁹² See Lane (3046/3) where $haw\bar{a}$ is defined as "a vacancy; vacuity; a vacant, or an empty, space; a vacant, or an empty, thing." For other possible interpretations, see Gimaret, Image, 62-65.

¹⁹³ Among the many occurrences of this saying, see the following: Ibn Māja, *muqaddima*, 13 (182); Tirmidhī, *tafsīr sūra* 11 (1); the *Musnad*, IV, 11, 12; Tabarī, *Tafsīr*, XV, 246, 9-12; and also his *Ta²rīkh*, I, 37, 6-10. This tradition, like other prophetic sayings bearing on questions of cosmology, generated intense debate. In addition to discussions found in various of Ibn al-Jawzī's works (e.g., *DST*, 45-46; *BA* [Beirut], 94-95; a*l-Ḥadāʾiq fī ʿIlm al-Ḥadīth*, I, 81-82; and *Gharīb al-Ḥadīth*, II, 128), see also Bayhaqī, *Asmā*', 376ff.; Ibn Qutayba, *Ta²wīl*, 221-222 (Lecomte, 246-247); Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 168-175; and Abū Yaʿlā, *Muʿtamad*, 56, 18-20 (cf., also notes to the preceding tradition here in *KAS*). For additional references as well as an analysis of the saying, see Gimaret, *Image*, 61-65.

¹⁹⁴ In some sources, his name is given as Wakī^c b. ^cUdus (e.g., Ibn Sa^cd, *Ṭabaqāt*, V, 520; Dhahabī, *Mīzān* IV, 335). He is said to have been a nephew of Abū Razīn and to have died in 209/824 (*Tahdhīb*, XI, 403-404).

¹⁹⁵ Cf., al-Bayhaqī, *Asmā*³, 377, 1-2 (cf., *Mīzān*, IV, 335, 16-17).

¹⁹⁶ Cf., Ibn al-Jawzī, Gharīb al-Hadīth, II, 128.

unterpretation [of it]. A me however, is the [most] rel

126 [fol.28a] In the Sahi which Abū Hurayra report of God one day and said: our Who will show this m I will. When he had arri there any food in the hou said to her: 'Entertain then food send them to bed. W the lamp and make it app while the guest are. The for Franciset said to him: 'God guest last evening."- I'm

Proposet is reported by Al at people who are LDS The 'ulama' mainta what occasions surprise in what he did not know. Suc Cheanor. [When applied to me regards the thing or ev merting regards it as s earned tradition cited above extended to submit to (

the preposition "in" (fi) has the force of "above" in this expression and indicates that God is "above the clouds" by virtue of His sovereignty (tadbīr) and power (gahr). 197 Since people are familiar with the world of created things $(makhl\bar{u}q\bar{a}t)$, it is natural for them to inquire about it, including the clouds (sahāb), which are part of His creation. If [the Prophet] had been asked about what existed before the clouds, he would have said that only God existed. Indeed, 'Imrān b. Ḥuṣayn reported that the Prophet once said: "[In the beginning] God existed and there was nothing apart from Him." 198 Abū'l-Ḥusayn b. al-Munādī 199 said—indeed, I transcribed his words from a document written in his own hand: "Describing the hawā, 200 as being above or below Him is abhorrent to the learned (ahl al-cilm) because it implies containment [within space] and posits something like a receptacle $(wi^c\bar{a}^2)$ for Him who is not like [other] beings $(asy\bar{a}^2)$. We are in agreement that no part of creation is above the Almighty in any sense, and that He neither indwells things in His essential being nor is He separate from them. If He were present in things He would be part of them, and if He were separate from them He would be absent from them. 201 Agreement amongst us on this point is not limited to this text in regard to what is an objectionable

¹²⁷ Among the tradition

For this tradition in its van Houses. Les traditions. I actions III. pp. 7-8 c Baybac 135 Libn Fürak, Masshiil and explanation of this tradition

See the following for this to Les madinous. II, p. 350t; Abii Marriad, II. pp. 302, 406, 448; II 50 and Bayhaqi, Asmir, p. 47

¹⁹⁷ Cf., Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 173-174.

¹⁹⁸ Cf., Tabarī, *Τα*²*rīkh*, I, 38, 10; also his *Tafsīr*, XV, 248, 10-11. In both cases, ^cImrān, a Companion, is cited as the source of the report. Little is known of him except that he took a special interest in those sayings of the Prophet that had cosmological implications, apparently enjoyed expensive clothing, and died sometime during the reign of Mucāwiya (cf., Ibn Sa^cd, *Ṭabaqāt*, IV, 287-291).

¹⁹⁹ Ahmad b. Ja^cfar b. Muḥammad Abū'l-Ḥuṣayn b. al-Munādī (256-336/869-947), a Hanbalī traditionist and the author of a number of works on the Quran and the hadīth (cf., GAS, I, 44). According to Ibn Kathīr (Bidāya, XI, 233), Ibn al-Jawzī had a high opinion of his works and recommended them to others as sources of reliable instruction. For additional notices on him, see Ta'rīkh Baghdād, IV, 69-70; Ţabaqāt al-Ḥanābila, II, 3-6; and Muntazam, VI, 357-358.—I have not so far been able to locate the statement attributed above to Ibn al-Munādī in any other source.

²⁰⁰ It is possible perhaps that the reading of the MS (الهبوى) is a garbled form of the Arabic root اله, and not hawā as I have tentatively read it.

²⁰¹ For Ibn al-Munādī God's relationship to the world of finite existence cannot be defined in spatial terms, and so he appeals to a kind of dialectic of presence and absence. God's relationship to the world is not an either/or but rather a both/and kind relationship. What is worth noting is that Ibn al-Munādī (d. 336/947) was a Hanbalī, indeed, a contemporary of 'Abd Allāh b. Aḥmad, and appears to have been conversant with the language of kalām. Kalām appears to have had an influence on Ḥanbalism, or at least some Ḥanbalīs, as early as the first part of the 10th century—a century before Abū Ya'lā.

interpretation [of it]. A metaphorical interpretation $(ta^2w\bar{\imath}l)$ [of this tradition], however, is the [most] reliable one."

The Nineteenth Tradition

126 [fol.28a] In the Ṣaḥāḥ of Bukhārī and Muslim there is a tradition in which Abū Hurayra reported the following: "A man came to the Messenger of God one day and said: 'I am tired and hungry!' The Prophet then called out: 'Who will show this man hospitality tonight?' One of the Anṣār responded: 'I will'. When he had arrived home with his guest he said to his wife: 'Is there any food in the house?' She replied: 'Only enough for my sons!' He said to her: 'Entertain them by whatever means you can, and if they ask for food send them to bed. When our guest (dayf) sits down to eat extinguish the lamp and make it appear to him that we are eating!' And so they sat while the guest ate. The following morning when [the Anṣārī] went out the Prophet said to him: 'God was amazed ('ajiba) at your treatment of your guest last evening.'" 202

127 Among the traditions unique to Bukhārī there is one in which the Prophet is reported by Abū Hurayra to have said: "Your Lord is amazed (*'ajiba*) at people who are brought in chains and made to enter Paradise." ²⁰³

128 The 'ulamā' maintain that amazement ('ajab) has to do only with what occasions surprise in a person, and so it strikes his fancy because of what he did not know. Such a response, however, is not appropriate for the Creator. [When applied to God the term "amazement"] simply means that He regards the thing or event as significant, for the one who is amazed at something regards it as significant. The expression "in chains" [in the second tradition cited above] was intended to suggest that people are sometimes constrained to submit to God and that it is on this account that they will

²⁰² For this tradition in its variant forms, see: Muslim, *ashriba*, 172; Bukhārī, *tafsīr ṣūra* 59, 6 (Houdas, *Les traditions*, III, p. 468); Bukhārī, *manāqib al-anṣār*, 10 (Houdas, *Les traditions*, III, pp. 7-8); Bayhaqī, *Asmā*, p. 469; Ibn Qutayba, *Ta²wīl*, 267 (Lecomte, *Le traité*, 235); Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 191-194; and *DST*, p. 48-49. For a lengthy paraphrase and explanation of this tradition by Ibn al-Jawzī, see his *Zād al-Masīr*, VIII, 213-214.

²⁰³ See the following for this tradition in its various forms: Bukhārī, *jihād*, 144 (Houdas, *Les traditions*, II, p. 350); Abū Dāwūd, *jihād*, 114 (see Lane, 1956/3, for a translation); *Musnad*, II, pp. 302, 406, 448; Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 191; *DST*, p. 49; Ibn Manzūr, *Lisān*, I, 581/1; and Bayhaqī, *Asmā*, p. 476.

enter Paradise. Ibn al-Anbārī²⁰⁴ held that the expression "your Lord is amazed" [in the second tradition is a metaphorical way of saying] that He will grant them His blessing $(in^c\bar{a}m)$ and favor $(ihs\bar{a}n)$. It was this that the Prophet meant when he referred to God's amazement.

129 Ibn 'Aqīl said: "In its most basic sense the term amazement ('ajab) denotes a response to something that is deemed to be unusual or extraordinary (istighrāb), that is, a response to the discovery of something not known previously, for with things that are commonplace amazement is inconceivable. Thus, when a person observes for the first time a magnet attracting iron he will [naturally] be amazed. But how can the Creator, from whose knowledge nothing is hidden, be amazed [in this sense]? The only plausible explanation of the traditions in question is that they refer to events whose occurrence occasioned 'delight' in Him, in the same way that laughing can [fol.28b] only be the expression of someone who is pleased as, for example, in the words of the Prophet: 'God is filled with more joy when one of His creatures repents,' 205 that is, he is pleased. God himself said: 'Each party rejoices (farihūna) in what they have,' 206 that is, they are pleased."

130 The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{\iota}$ [Abū Yaʻlā] said: "[The Prophet] did not attribute 'amazement' to God [metaphorically] as a way of indicating the importance of something to Him. On the contrary, we affirm ['ajab] to be a divine attribute." ²⁰⁷ This point of view has nothing to commend it.

The Twentieth Tradition

131 This tradition has already been discussed in the preceding section.²⁰⁸

132 Bukhārī and Muslim red by Abū Hurayra in which to to the nearest heaven while says: 'Who will call upon N

some twenty of the Prophe however, that such things as (aighayyur) are not to be as of view regarding the mean reference to God's descent) draw near, for He has spondescending as, for example even though its source is in states: "Of the cattle He send understand the reference for things, in a metaphoric coming down?" The second

²⁰⁴ On Ibn al-Anbārī, see notes to §120.

²⁰⁵ The full sentence reads: "God is filled with more joy when one of his creatures repents than you are when you find an animal lost in the desert." For the full text of this tradition, see Muslim, *tawba*, 1-8 (esp. 1); Bukhārī, *da^cwāt*, 4/2 (Houdas, *Les traditions*, IV, 241); Ibn Māja, *zuhd*, 30; Tirmidhī, *birr wa²ṣ-ṣila*, 49, and 98; *Musnad*, I, 383; II, 316, 500, 524, 534; III, 83, 213; IV, 273, 275, 283. Cf., *DST*, 49-50.

²⁰⁶ S. 23: 53.

 $^{^{207}}$ Although Abū Yaʻlā discusses God's "rejoicing and laughing" in the Mu^ctamad (p. 59), I have found no mention of the problem of God's "amazement".

²⁰⁸ The tradition Ibn al-Jawzī has in mind here is: "God is filled with more joy when one of His creatures repents than one of you is at finding an animal lost in the desert." For references, see notes to §129.

In both Bukhāri and Muslingrant his request: and he who see see Muslim. salāt al-musājir and Marçais. Les traditions, L. 3 Turmdhī. mawāgit as-salāt, 211. i 504. For other citations of this to 504. Turmiya. Wāsiriya. 17 (English to 504. 177-178; and Laou 104-105) (translation). For version of 604. Marsedifāt, I. 122-123.

^{5. 57-25.}

S. 59-6 (cf., also vs. 7). It is to see that 143-145; sheep, goats, came these texts in Zād al-Masir (VII), Zamakhshari, Kaskshāf, III, 388, a

My rendering of the last part of the Arabic. The argument here amount of "sending down" or "de amounted metaphorically as a refer where "sending down" is equated to

The Twenty-First Tradition

132 Bukhārī and Muslim record in their respective Ṣaḥīḥs a tradition reported by Abū Hurayra in which the Prophet said: "Our Lord descends each night to the nearest heaven while the last third of the night still remains, and He says: 'Who will call upon Me so that I might answer him?" ²⁰⁹

133 This tradition concerning God's "descent" (nuzūl) was reported by some twenty of the Prophet's Companions. We have already pointed out, however, that such things as motion (ḥaraka), movement (nuqla) and change (taghayyur) are not to be ascribed to God. The authorities are of two points of view regarding the meaning of this tradition. One group construes [the reference to God's descent] metaphorically as meaning that His mercy will draw near, for He has spoken [metaphorically in the Quran] of things "descending" as, for example, the verse: "We caused the iron to descend" even though its source is in the earth below. In another verse [the Quran] states: "Of the cattle He sent down to you eight in pairs." Those who do not understand the reference to "the coming down" of these various classes [of things, in a metaphorical sense] how can they make sense [of their coming down]? The second group holds that one should refuse even

²⁰⁹ In both Bukhārī and Muslim, the following is added: "He who asks of Me, I will grant his request; and he who seeks forgiveness of Me, him will I forgive." For the full text, see Muslim, *ṣalāt al-musāfīrīn*, 168, 169, 170 and 171; Bukhārī, *tahajjud*,14 (Houdas and Marçais, *Les traditions*, I, 371); Abū Dāwūd, *sunna*, 19; Ibn Māja, *iqāma*, 182; Tirmidhī, *mawāqīt aṣ-ṣalāt*, 211, and *daʿwāt*, 78; *Musnad*, II, 264, 268, 282, 419, 487 and 504. For other citations of this tradition, see Ibn Khuzayma, *Tawḥīd*, 125-136; Bayhaqī, *Asmā*, 449-457; Ibn Qutayba, *Taʾwīl*, 238; Abū Bakr al-Ājurrī, *Sharīca*, 306-314; Ibn Taymīya, *Wāsiṭīya*, 17 (English trans. *Humaniora Islamica*, I, 112 and note 14); Graham, *Divine Word*, 177-178; and Laoust, *La Profession de foi d'Ibn Baṭṭa*, 57 (Arabic text), 104-105 (translation). For versions of this tradition judged apocryphal by Ibn al-Jawzī, see his *Kitāb al-Mawdūʿcāt*, I, 122-123.

²¹⁰ S. 57:25.

²¹¹ S. 39:6 (cf., also vs. 7). It is a question of four pairs, presumably those mentioned in S. 6: 143-145: sheep, goats, camels and oxen. Unfortunately, Ibn al-Jawzī's discussion of these texts in *Zād al-Masīr* (VII, 163) throws little light on the question of *nuzūl*. Cf., Zamakhsharī, *Kashshāf*, III, 388, and II, 56.

 $^{^{212}}$ My rendering of the last part of this sentence is admittedly something of a paraphrase of the Arabic. The argument here is somewhat strained perhaps, but it seems to be that the notion of "sending down" or "descent ($nuz\bar{u}l$)," as used in this Quranic verse, is to be construed metaphorically as a reference to the act of creating (cf., $Z\bar{a}d$ al- $Mas\bar{i}r$, VIII, 174, where "sending down" is equated with "creating").

to attempt an explanation [of the reference to God's descent]. Abū ' \bar{I} sā at-Tirmidhī reported that Mālik b. Anas, Sufyān b. 'Uyayna and Ibn al-Mubārak all insisted that such traditions be allowed to stand as they are and that no attempt be made to explain them.'

134 It is essential that human beings acknowledge God's transcendence (tanzīh) and refuse the attribution of movement (nuqla) to Him, for descending, construed as movement from one place to another, presupposes three things: firstly, an elevated body, and a place (makān) whose occupant reposes therein; [fol.29a] secondly, a body in an inferior position; ²¹⁴ and thirdly, a body which moves from the former to the latter. It is absolutely impossible to conceive God in these terms. If an uneducated person should ask what [the Prophet] meant by his reference to God's descending, it should be maintained that He intended only what is consistent with His transcendent majesty (bi-jalālihi). It is not incumbent on you to pursue the matter further. If someone should ask how one can suppress what one does not understand, my response is that since you already know that the one who descends to you is near you, be satisfied with [the thought of God's] nearness, but do not suppose that this nearness is to be likened to the proximity of finite bodies.

135 Ibn Ḥāmid said: "God is on the throne in His very essence (bi- $dh\bar{a}tihi$) and is in contact with it ($mum\bar{a}ss\ lahu$). Since He descends from the place wherein He reposes, ²¹⁵ His descending entails (actual) change of location ($intiq\bar{a}l$)." This man did not understand what is required by the transcendence of God. The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{a}$ [Abū Yaʻlā] said: "Descending ($nuz\bar{u}l$) is an attribute of the divine essence ($sifa\ dh\bar{a}t\bar{i}ya$), although it does not entail movement from one place to another ($intiq\bar{a}l$)." Such a statement is pure sophistry! There are some among them who maintain that God's descending does entail

is not appropriate to the Hanbal] held the above view of God's descending were anew everyday. 219 In truth, changing].

²¹³ Cf., Bayhaqī, *Asmā*², 453.

²¹⁴ That is, the "nearest heaven."

²¹⁵ That is, according to the tradition, His celestial Throne.

²¹⁶ See the Mu^c tamad p. 55 (§90) where Abū Yaʻlā sets forth his position on the question of the $nuz\bar{u}l$. Although he does not state that $nuz\bar{u}l$ is an attribute of essence, he clearly regards it to be one of the divine attributes. What Ibn al-Jawzī says about him above does appear to square with what Abū Yaʻlā himself has to say in the Mu^c tamad. He tries to stake out a middle-of-the-road position between literalists and those who interpret the $nuz\bar{u}l$ as a metaphor. His view is that God's descending $(nuz\bar{u}l)$ is real but that it does not entail motion or movement (haraka and $intiq\bar{a}l)$.

One of Ibn al-Jawzi's cle conception of God is به الحسّ كفول فائلهم: بشزل mex ب مکان لی مکان ویوجب ذات کے لية وكا أذلك مُحالُ على الحنَّ على وحر pertaining to the divine amil such that one of them will save sale a way so as to entail movem representing God], for the one wh implies that the being for exi in mecessitates His movemen Not only does the applica in Him. it makes God dependen some. For Ibn al-Jawzi that which struce itself. Hence, God's ex mesuppose space as a condition God must be conceived as being enciressing such a notion pushes la Ahamd b. Hanbal is quoted

He laughs. He rejoices. He
The editor of DST (47, m.
statement arributed by al-Istakhri it regarding it so. He also exprended the spatial contingency, the laught it was equally concerned without of the spatial contingency.

By denying nural (descending model appear to be placing himself to question.

motion (yataḥarraku). They do not understand, however, that motion (ḥaraka) is not appropriate to the Creator. Some have alleged that Aḥmad [b. Ḥanbal] held the above view, but this is a misrepresentation of his position. God's descending were a divine attribute then it would be one created anew everyday. In truth, however, God's attributes are eternal [and unchanging].

²¹⁷ One of Ibn al-Jawzī's clearest statements regarding the problematic posed by a spatialized conception of God is to be found in his Sayd al-Khāţir, 614, 16-19 where he فترى أقوامًا يسمعون أخبار الصفات فيحملونها على ما يقتضيه الحسّ كقول قائلهم: ينزل :writes بذاته إلى السماء وينتقل. وهذا فهم ردىء لأن المنتقل يكون من مكان إلى مكان ويوجب ذلك كون You will see people studying) المكان أكثر منه ويلزم منه الحركة وكلّ ذلك مُحال على الحقّ عزّ وجلّ texts pertaining to the divine attributes and interpreting them in the light of sense experience such that one of them will say: "[God] descends in His essence to the [lowest] heaven in such a way so as to entail movement." This is a reprehensible way of understanding [and representing God], for the one who moves exchanges one location for another, and that [in turn] implies that the being [or existence] of space is a more [basic form of reality] than He, since it necessitates His movement within space. Now it is absurd to think of God [in these terms]). Not only does the application of spatial categories to God necessarily impose limits on Him, it makes God dependent on a more fundamental concept, viz., that of place or space. For Ibn al-Jawzī that which occupies space is by definition secondary to the concept of space itself. Hence, God's existence must be conceived in such a way so as not to presuppose space as a condition or category essential to His existence. For Ibn al-Jawzī God must be conceived as being "outside" space. He seems to have been aware that expressing such a notion pushes language to its very limits.

²¹⁸ Aḥamd b. Ḥanbal is quoted (on the authority of al-Iṣṭakhrī) as having said: ويتحرك (He moves, He speaks, He reasons, He sees, He laughs, He rejoices, He loves and He loathes.... [*Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila*, I, 29, 6-7]). The editor of *DST* (47, n. 1), however, sides with Ibn al-Jawzī and declares the statement attributed by al-Iṣṭakhrī to Aḥmad to be a fabrication, though he gives no reasons for regarding it so. He also expresses surprise that Ibn Taymīya should quote a similar statement from Aḥmad without denying or refuting it.—Although he has much to say about spatial contingency, the last two sentences of §135 make it quite clear that Ibn al-Jawzī was equally concerned with the notion of temporal contingency.

²¹⁹ By denying $nuz\bar{u}l$ (descending) as an attribute, as he plainly does here, Ibn al-Jawzī would appear to be placing himself squarely in the Ash'arī-Mu'tazilī camp, particularly on this question.

The Twenty-Second Tradition 220

136 Muslim cites a tradition, reported only by Abū Mūsā [al-Ash^carī],²²¹ according to which the Messenger of God rose up one day [and delivered a homily] which included the following: "God does not sleep, nor is it appropriate that He should sleep. He lowers the Balance (qist) and He raises it.²²² Light ($n\bar{u}r$)—or fire ($n\bar{a}r$), according to the version [related by Abū Bakr b. Abī Shayba]—is His veil ($hij\bar{a}b$). If He were to remove [the veil], the splendors of His face ($subuh\bar{a}t$ wajhihi) would consume every creature within reach of His sight." ²²³

137 The meaning of the phrase "He lowers the Balance (qist) and He raises it" is that He abases [people] with justice (bi'l-cadl) and raises [others] with justice. In connection with the phrase "light...is His veil," it should be noted that the veil here has human beings as its object, not God, for it is not possible that God should be veiled since [the veil] must be greater than what is veiled. It is preposterous that God should be thought of as a body (jism) or an atom (jawhar) or a finite being existing alongside others, for all such things are marks of temporal existence (hadath). People know bodies to be contingent precisely because of their origination in time, their spatially limited character, and their susceptibility to the vicissitudes of time (hawādith). It is impossible [to suppose] that God's existence has [fol. 29b] a beginning or an end, nor is it permissible [to imagine] that His essence has limits. The veil referred to [in the above tradition] pertains only to

finite creatures; it is they w Said, the Prophet once said concealed from view by se This tradition is not reliable mave to be taken as pertaining 138 As for the term such Utayd said: "I have never! is sometimes said that the t face and, like the related en God's majesty (tafzim) a a:-Tawhid], one of w Our Lord's Face." 131 Ibn Khi the regarded the term as refer emenence]. The Creator, he bodies (nūr jismānī). that he once asked

²²⁰ Although the question of the ru^3ya is not addressed directly in this tradition or the discussion that follows, it is the question lurking in the background. It is entirely possible that the question of God's veiling was meant to provide the basis for a discussion of the ru^3ya , which is more directly taken up in connection with the following tradition. If this is the case, it would indicate that the traditions of this chapter are not organized haphazardly but in groups and in accordance with some principle of organization.

²²¹ Or perhaps: related from Abū Mūsā al-Ash'arī by a single transmitter.

²²² For a discussion of this expression, see Lane, 773/1; and the remarks of Muhammad F. 'Abd al-Bāqī in Muslim, *īmān*, 79, 162 (notes 2 and 3); also Ibn Māja, *muqaddima*, 13, 195.

²²³ This tradition in various forms is found in the following collections: Muslim, $\bar{l}m\bar{a}n$, 293, 295; Ibn Māja, muqaddima, 13: 195, 196; Musnad, IV, 401 and 405; Ibn Khuzayma, $Tawh\bar{l}d$, 19-20, 75-76; Bayhaqī, $Asm\bar{a}^2$, 180-181; Ibn Fūrak, Mushkil, 212-218; Ājurrī, $Shar\bar{r}a$, 304-305; DST, 50-51; and BA (Beirut), 100-102. Cf. also, $Lis\bar{a}n$, II, 473/1, 6-26; and Lane, 1290/2.

 $^{^{224}}$ Cf., Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 213, 4-214, 2, where the same view is expressed in language that is strikingly similar.

Ci., Bayhaqi, AsmiP, 402, 12

The reals mentioned in the tradi-

The full text of the version and the For other references to this allowed. Kingb al-Marvdir de. 1 Kingb al-Marvdir de. 1 Kingayma, Tawifid, 20-21 Kingayma, Shu al-Jawai s thinking, s

Cf. Bayhaqi, Asmar, 180; and

The chapter heading given in the Form of Our Lord" (نور) and the given in KAS (نور) and the males sandable given the orthogon

This work appears to be lo "This work appears to be lo "SCL for a list of of his works regarded the Knth at Surge

Probably Ahmad b. Yahya i garder who spent some time Challe (d. 311/923). Cf., GAS, D

Maria dhi la iar al-Hulwini (d. 27 Marian Tahaya al-Hunibila, 1, 83

finite creatures; it is they who are veiled from Him.²²⁵ According to Sahl b. Sa^cd, the Prophet once said: "[On the day of resurrection] God will be concealed from view by seventy thousand veils of light and darkness."²²⁶ This tradition is not reliable. If it were, the veils mentioned therein would have to be taken as pertaining to finite creatures, not to God.

138 As for the term subuhat (splendors), it is the plural of subha. Abū Ubayd said: "I have never seen this word (harf) except in this tradition. It is sometimes said that the term subha denotes the splendor (jalal) of His face and, like the related expression subha Allah, was meant to express only God's majesty (ta^czim) and His transcendence (tanzih)." [In his book $Kitab \ at-Tawhid$], one of whose chapters is entitled "The Glow (daw^3) of Our Lord's Face," 228 Ibn Khuzayma cites the tradition of the subuhat because he regarded the term as referring to light ($n\bar{u}r$) of the sort known [in human experience]. The Creator, however, is beyond the kind of light associated with bodies ($n\bar{u}r$ $jisman\bar{i}$). Abū Bakr al-Khallāl reported in his $Kitab \ as-Sunna^{229}$ that he once asked Aḥmad b. Yaḥyā 230 about the expression "the

²²⁵ Cf., Bayhaqī, Asmā', 402, 12-13: الحجاب المذكور في الأخبار يرجع إلى الخلق لا إلى الخالق (The veils mentioned in the traditions on this subject apply to human beings, not to the Creator); also Ibn Fūrak, Mushkil, 462f., where a similar view is set forth.

²²⁶The full text of the version attributed to Sahl b. Sa'd is cited in §238 of *KAS* (tradition no. 58). For other references to this tradition along with assessments of its authenticity, see Ibn al-Jawzī, *Kitāb al-Mawdū'āt*, I, 116; Bayhaqī, *Asmā'*, 402; Dhahabī, *Mīzān*, III, 191; and Ibn Khuzayma, *Tawḥīd*, 20-21. For an analysis of this tradition, which in many ways parallels Ibn al-Jawzī's thinking, see Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 462-465. Cf., Gimaret, *Image*, 72ff.

²²⁷ Cf. Bayhaqī, *Asmā*', 180; and Ibn al-Jawzī, *Gharīb al-Ḥadīth*, I, 454.

²²⁸ The chapter heading given in the Cairo edition of *Kitāb at-Tawḥīd* (1387/1968) is "On the Form of Our Lord" (باب ذکـر صــورة ربـُنا). The discrepancy between the wording given in *KAS* (ضورة) and that found in the printed edition of *Kitāb at-Tawḥīd* (ضورة) is understandable given the orthographic similarities of the two words, undoubtedly the result of variant readings in the manuscript tradition.

²²⁹ This work appears to be lost. See El^2 , IV, 989-990; GAL, I, 183; and GAS, I, 511-512, for a list of of his works and sources on his life. Ibn Taymīya ($Kit\bar{a}b\ al-\bar{I}m\bar{a}n$, 158) regarded the $Kit\bar{a}b\ as-Sunna$ to be one of the most important works on Ḥanbalī doctrine.

²³⁰ Probably Aḥmad b. Yaḥyā Abū'l-ʿAbbās Thaʿlab (d. 291/904), the great Kufan lexicographer who spent some time in Baghdad and who was a contemporary of Abū Bakr al-Khallāl (d. 311/923). Cf., *GAS*, IX, 140-141. Less likely, but a possibility, is Aḥmad. b. Yaḥyā Abū Jaʿfar al-Ḥulwānī (d. 276), who is mentioned as one of Abū Bakr al-Khallāl's teachers (*Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila*, I, 83) and considered by some to have been a member of

splendors (subuhat) of His face," and he replied: "The term subuhat refers [in the first instance] to the place on which one prostrates oneself [when performing the salat]." This would suggest that [in his use of the term subuhat the Prophet] was expressing himself in language that was familiar [to his audience] as he did when he said: "The hearts of His creatures are between the two fingers [of Rahman]." 232

139 Ibn Ḥāmid said: "It is essential to believe that the veil belongs to God and that He is behind it." The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{\iota}$ [Abū Yaʻlā] said: "One should not refuse to attribute a veil to God, but it should not be taken as indicating a limit (hadd) or thought to be something existing alongside Him." ²³³ This is a confused statement meant to satisfy the masses (fawamm).

The Twenty-Third Tradition

140 Ibn 'Abbās reported that the Prophet said: "The people of Paradise will see their Lord every week in the sands of Kāfūr, 235 and those sitting nearest Him will be the first to reach Him on the day of assembly (*yawm al-juma'*)." 236

141 The expression "in people of Paradise], for the [mot God]! The expression relationship] but means the tradition [reported by 'Abd the day of judgment those whand of Rahmān on minburg referred to as] "the tradition said]: "There will be no one mot speak [fol.30a] face to version of this tradition cin There will be no one in thand in hand with him (khāṣa how ever, that this version of Allāh ²⁴¹ on the authority of \$1.

them is cited with a complete is a madition as it appears in KAS). It was an inform of the the tradition where المنافذة ألا فسارغوا إلى الحبوات والمنافذة ألا فسارغوا إلى المنافذة ألا فسارغوا إلى المنافذة ألا أله المنافذة ألى
the Ḥanbal $\bar{\imath}$ school. On him, see also $Ta^2r\bar{\imath}kh$ $Baghd\bar{a}d$, V, 212-213; and $Shadhar\bar{a}t$, II, 224.

²³¹ See $Lis\bar{a}n$, II, 473/1, 25-26, where this definition of $subuh\bar{a}t$ is cited along with others. Cf., also Lane, 1290/2.

²³² See §§143-146 for a discussion of God's fingers. For the full text of this tradition, see Muslim, *qadar*, 17; Ibn Māja, *muqaddima*, 13(199); Tirmidhī, *qadar*, 7; *da^cwāt*, 89; *Musnad*, II, 168, 173; VI, 182, 251, 302, 315. Cf., Ibn Qutayba, *Ta²wīl*, 263 (Lecomte, *Le Traité*, 233). The text given by Muslim might be translated as follows: "The Messenger of God said: 'The hearts of all persons are between the two fingers of *Raḥmān* as though they were a single heart, and he turns them as he wishes.' The Messenger of God added: 'O God, disposer of hearts, dispose our hearts to give obedience to you!'" See §145 where the tradition is quoted.

²³³ This statement is not to be found in the Mu^c tamad.

²³⁴ "Confused" because Abū Ya^clā again equivocates: he clearly has problems with a literal interpretation of the veil but cannot bring himself to accept a metaphorical interpretation.

 $^{^{235}}$ "Kāfūr" is said to be the name of one of the springs of Paradise ($Lis\bar{a}n$, V, 149, 17; Lane 2622/3), or the water from that spring said to resemble camphor ($k\bar{a}f\bar{u}r$) in its taste. The word occurs once in the Quran (S. 76:5) and has been the subject of much speculation by the commentators. For a summary of the views found in the $tafs\bar{v}r$ literature, see $Z\bar{a}d$, VIII, 430; Ṭabari, $Tafs\bar{v}r$, XXIX, 128-129; and Zamakhshari, $Kashsh\bar{a}f$, IV, 195-196 (cf., also EI^2 , IV, 417-418).

²³⁶ That is, Friday. See Ajurrī, Sharī'a, 265, 1-6, where the tradition in a slightly longer

For the full text, see: Muslim and Bayhaqi, Asmā, 324. Cf., also

In the full text of the trading secreted as a part of Paradise—a preherers will be invited after employed by angels and in a bounderse with God face-to-face. It is market of Paradise.

For the various versions of the Dirami, riquiq, 92; and Muslim, ion

⁻⁻ AsmaP. 460, 14-15.

Given as Sayf b. 'Ubayd All DST. 51.

Cf.. Bayhaqī. 460. 18.

141 The expression "in the sands of Kāfūr" has as its reference [the people of Paradise], for they are the ones who are "in the sands of Kāfūr", [not God]! The expression "those nearest Him" [does not imply a spatial relationship] but means those who most enjoy God's favor. In another tradition [reported by 'Abd Allāh b. 'Amr b. al-'Āṣ] the Prophet said: "On the day of judgment those who have acted justly [will be seated] at the right hand of *Raḥmān* on *minbars* of light." In a prophetic saying [sometimes referred to as] "the tradition of the market of Paradise" [the Prophet said]: "There will be no one in the celestial assembly with whom God will not speak [fol.30a] face to face (ḥāḍarahu muḥāḍaratan)." In another version of this tradition cited by Abū Bakr al-Bayhaqī, the Prophet said: "[There will be no one in the celestial assembly] but that God will walk hand in hand with him (*khāṣarahu mukhāṣaratan*)." [Al-Bayhaqī] observed, however, that this version of the tradition was transmitted by Sayf b. 'Abd Allāh 241 on the authority of Salama b. al-'Ayyār 242 and is not to be found in

form is cited with a complete <code>isnād</code> (cf., also <code>DST</code>, 50; and <code>BA</code>, 30b, both of which give the tradition as it appears in <code>KAS</code>). Ibn Fūrak (<code>Mushkil</code>, 221, 15-17 [cf., 219, 3-4]) cites a variant form of the the tradition which, despite certain differences, is essentially the same in substance: إِنَّ اللّه جلّ ذكره ينزل كلّ يوم جمعة لأهل الجنّة على كثيب من كافور فيكونون في القرب [God will descend every Friday to the people of Paradise, in the sands of Kāfūr, and their nearness [to Him] will depend on how early they arrived at the place of the Friday prayers. Alas, they will race ahead in striving for the good [transmitted on the authority of al-Minhāl b. 'Amr, according to sources cited by Ibn Fūrak]). Ibn Fūrak, who regards the transmitter as "very weak," nonetheless holds the <code>matn</code> of the tradition to be authentic, but he does insist on a metaphorical interpretation (221-222).

²³⁷ For the full text, see : Muslim, $im\bar{a}ra$, 18; Nasā'ī, $\bar{a}d\bar{a}b$ al- $qud\bar{a}t$, 1; Musnad, II, 160; and Bayhaqī, $Asm\bar{a}$ ', 324. Cf., also Ibn Fūrak, Mushkil, 115; and Mu^ctamad , 53.

²³⁸ In the full text of the tradition (see Ibn Māja, *zuhd*, 39, e.g.), the *sūq al-janna* is described as a part of Paradise—a place of unimaginable luxury and abundance—to which believers will be invited after entering Paradise. It is said that the *sūq al-janna* will be surrounded by angels and in it believers will mingle freely with each other and will converse with God face-to-face. It is also said that there will be no buying and selling in the market of Paradise.

²³⁹ For the various versions of this tradition, see Ibn Māja, *zuhd*, 39; Tirmidhī, *janna*, 15; Dārimī, *riqāq*, 92; and Muslim, *janna*, 5. Cf., Bayhaqī, *Asmā*, 460-461.

 $^{^{240}}$ Asmā⁵, 460, 14-15.

 $^{^{241}}$ Given as Sayf b. 'Ubayd Allāh by Bayhaqī (Asmā', 460, 18-19); as Yūsuf b. 'Abd Allāh in DST, 51.

²⁴² Cf., Bayhaqī, 460, 18.

the canonical collections of traditions ($sah\bar{a}h$). He further noted that sayings of this sort are not strengthened by having such men as transmitters, pointing out that the term $mukh\bar{a}sara$ spelled with a $kh\bar{a}$ means to join hands ($mus\bar{a}faha$). ²⁴³

142 The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{i}$ [Abū Yaʿlā] said: "It is not impossible that God will actually be present in the sands of Kāfūr." [By making such a statement] he has accepted [the idea of God's] location in a particular place, though he added: "Not in such a way as to entail movement." This is meaningless and misleading [talk]. He also said: "It is not impossible to conceive [of the people of Paradise] as being near to the divine essence (ad- $dh\bar{a}t$)." Since he lacked a tradition to support this point, he cited the words of the Prophet: "There is not one of you but his Lord will be alone with Him." ²⁴⁴ [In his gloss on these words] he pointed out that the idea of "being alone with" (khalwa) implies nearness (qurb) and that nearness to the divine essence (ad- $dh\bar{a}t$) is therefore possible. I have already refuted this view earlier [in the present work]. ²⁴⁵

The Twenty-Fourth Tradition

143 In a tradition included in the Ṣaḥāḥs of Bukhārī and Muslim, Ibn Mascūd reports that a [rabbi] 246 once came to the Messenger of God and said to him: "O Muḥammad, [on the day of judgement] God will place the heavens on one of His fingers, the earths on another finger, the mountains on another, the trees and rivers on another, all living creatures on another, and—according to one version of this tradition—the water and land on a finger. And then God will shake them." [Upon hearing these words] the Prophet laughed and recited the verse: "They do not comprehend the power

of God in its full measure laughing was meant to con his concurrence [with his w 144 Abū Sulaymān al-K except by reference to the on the Quran or prophetic What is in conflict with the or should be interpreted (agreed upon by con rejection of anthropomorphi [cray] canonical sources on silent on the question of (designate a divine attribute. I way that by affirming it on correct approach God in accordance with the or comparing them to hum memon was transmitted by of them [apart from 'Ubayd affirmed (tasdigan) [the wor to the tradition by one of i opinion. It is not permissible the supposition of a transmit fact as an expression of hi

²⁴³ Asmā², 460, 18-20.

²⁴⁴ Cf., Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 224. The tradition as found in Ibn al-Jawzī and Ibn Fūrak does not appear in the canonical collections; the version found in these latter reads سيخلو in place of سيخلو (see Ibn Māja, *muqaddima*, 185; *zakāt*, 28; Muslim, *zakāt*, 68; Bukhārī, *manāqib*, 25; etc. Cf., also Ājurrī, *Sharī*^ca, 269-270).

²⁴⁵ An issue that is taken up repeatedly in KAS. See, e.g., tradition no. 16 (§§119-121).

²⁴⁶ The Arabic text of *KAS* simply reads $rajulun\ min\ al-Yah\bar{u}d$; other versions of the tradition, however, use the term $habr\ (DST, 51)$. The nature of the conversation in question does, I think, justify the term rabbi here.

A verse-fragment taken from 8. & 19. and S. 22: 74.

See the following for some of 19 (4.5) [Les traditions. Por 19 (4.5) [Les traditions. Por 19 (2) (5)]; tafsir, 39 (2) (4.2). 21. 22: Tirmidhi, tafsir, 39 (2) (4.2). Im Fürak, Machin, 238-24 (1.4). and Ibu Qutayba, Tarwil, 20 generated much discussion at a 13th-century Sicily, for example Funderick II, as well as others. Suchan Christians, For more on Sicili (Edinburgh 1975), 9

CK. Bayhaqi, Asmir, 337, 3 (Section of the al-manifique, 19, 20, 21

That is, these words regarding the

of God in its full measure."²⁴⁷ According to one version, the Prophet's laughing was meant to convey his astonishment at the [*rabbi's*] words and his concurrence [with his words].²⁴⁸

144 Abū Sulaymān al-Khattābī said: "Do not ascribe attributes to God except by reference to the Quran or to reliable reports, that is, reports based on the Quran or prophetic sayings whose genuineness is beyond question! What is in conflict with these [two sources] should not be ascribed [to God] or should be interpreted (yuta'awwal) in accordance with the principles (usūl) agreed upon by competent authorities (ahl al-cilm), along with a rejection of anthropomorphism (tashbīh). Now the Quran and the Sunna—the [only] canonical sources on which the divine attributes are to be based—are silent on the question of God's fingers. The term 'hand', when used to designate a divine attribute, is not to be construed as a [literal] hand in such a way that by affirming it one is also affirming that God has fingers. On the contrary, the correct approach $(tawq\bar{\imath}f shar\bar{\imath}^c)$ [fol.30b] is to apply terms to God in accordance with the Quran without probing their modality (takyīf) or comparing them to human qualities (tashbīh). Although the [above] tradition was transmitted by a number of the students of Ibn Mascūd, none of them [apart from 'Ubayda al-Salmānī] mentioned the Prophet's having affirmed (tasdīgan) [the words of the rabbi]. 249 These words 250 were added to the tradition by one of its [later] transmitters and expresses his own opinion. It is not permissible that we should derive a divine attribute from the supposition of a transmitter. The Prophet's laughing is to be taken, in fact, as an expression of his displeasure with Jews on account of their

²⁴⁷ A verse-fragment taken from S. 39: 67. The same wording, however, is also found in S. 6: 19, and S. 22: 74.

²⁴⁸ See the following for some of the more common forms of this tradition: Bukhārī, tawhīd, 19 (4, 5) [Les traditions, IV, 592 (4, 5)], 36 [Les traditions, IV, 609], 39 (5) [Les traditions, IV, 629 (5)]; tafsīr, 39 (2) [Les traditions, III, 432(2)]; Muslim, sifāt al-munāfiqīn, 19, 20, 21, 22; Tirmidhī, tafsīr, 39 (2); Ibn Khuzayma, Tawhīd, 76-79; Bayhaqī, Asmā², 333-337; Ibn Fūrak, Mushkil, 238-245; DST, 51-52; and BA, 30b. Cf. Zamakhsharī, Kashshāf, III, 408; and Ibn Qutayba, Ta²wīl, 264 (Lecomte, 234). Perhaps because the tradition of the fingers generated much discussion among medieval Muslims, it also attracted the interest of others. In 13th-century Sicily, for example, the tradition came to the attention of the Norman king, Frederick II, as well as others, and became the focus of debates involving Muslims and Sicilian Christians. For more on this interesting development, see A. Ahmad, A History of Islamic Sicily (Edinburgh 1975), 91-92.

²⁴⁹ Cf., Bayhaqī, $Asm\bar{a}$, 337, 3 (cf., 334, 17); also see Bukhārī, $tawh\bar{a}$, 19, 39; and Muslim $sif\bar{a}t$ al-munā $fiq\bar{a}n$, 19, 20, 22.

²⁵⁰ That is, these words regarding the Prophet's having concurred with the *rabbi*.

anthropomorphist tendencies. The revelation of this verse²⁵¹ is proof of the Prophet's condemnation of them."

145 Ibn 'Aqīl said: "[The words] 'they do not comprehend the power of God in its full measure' [were revealed because the Jews] supposed that God's attributes are related to each other as are those of His creatures. The reference to *shirk* in the verse is in fact a refutation of them. The meaning [of the term 'fingers'] in the traditions of the Prophet [is apparent] in another of the Prophet's sayings: 'The hearts of human beings are between the two fingers of God; He turns them [between His fingers] as He pleases.' Since what is turned between two fingers is under the control [of another], it points to the fact that the hearts [of human beings] are under the power and authority of the One who 'turns them.' "255

146 The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{l}$ [Abū Yaʻlā] said: "It is possible to interpret this tradition literally (' $al\bar{a}$ $z\bar{a}hir$) and to regard 'the fingers' as attributes referring to ($r\bar{a}ji^ca$ $il\bar{a}$) the divine essence (adh- $dh\bar{a}t$). However, we do not take the term 'fingers' to imply that God has limbs or that He is divided into parts." Such statements reflect confusion. Either we must take the term as implying the existence of bodily members or interpret it metaphorically. If the expression

motwithstanding [Abū Yalā]
These statements reflect vacil
to people who say such thing

The

147 In a tradition recorded Satistics Ibn 'Umar reports the God will roll up the heavens in His [right] hand and will oppressors and those who examine His left hand and will crumd those who exalt themselved the same observed 'Abd Alla Messenger of God related the earths in His hands and He is these words] he closed his hands

148 It has already been est the "hand" of God is not abdulu! does not involve or the (kuff). In using such expenses was through sense experient and was intended merely to

²⁵¹ "They do not comprehend the power of God in its full measure" (S. 39: 67).

²⁵²Hence (following the logic ascribed to the Jews), if God possesses a hand, He must also possess fingers.

²⁵³ See the last part of S. 39: 67, where the reference to *shirk* occurs: "Glory be to Him, and exalted be He far above what they associate (*yushrikūna*) [with Him]."

²⁵⁴ For the full text of this tradition, see Muslim, *qadar*, 17; Ibn Māja, *muqaddima*, 13 (199); Tirmidhī, *qadar*, 7; *da*^c wāt, 89; *Musnad*, II, 168, 173; VI, 182, 251, 302, 315. Cf., Ibn Qutayba, *Ta*² wīl, 263 (Lecomte, *Le Traité*, 233). The text given by Muslim reads as follows: "The Messenger of God said: 'The hearts of all persons are between the two fingers of *Raḥmān* as though they were a single heart, and He turns them as He wishes.' The Messenger of God added: 'O God, Disposer of hearts, dispose our hearts so as to render obedience to You!'" Cf., Ājurrī, *Sharī*^ca, 316.

 $^{^{255}}$ For a quite different approach to the tradition of the fingers, see R. Frank's discussion of al-Ghazzālī's interpretation of the tradition (*al-Ghazālī and the Ash'arite School*, 23 n. 34 [p. 112]).

رافية النات to be taken as an equivalent of صفات النات or does Abū Yaʿlā wish to make a distinction? Unfortunately, Abū Yaʿlā does not take up the question of the "fingers" in the Muʿtamad; it is clear, however, from Ibn al-Jawzī's quotation that Abū Yaʿlā did regard the أصابع (fingers) as sifāt. Beyond this, it is difficult to say more on the basis of KAS. For a summary of Ḥanbalī views on the question of the "fingers," see Laoust, Profession, 103 and n. 1.

Literally: These are the state

See Muslim, split al-munificia.

1988 : Abū Dāwūd, sanna. 19

1988 : The Fürak. Musball. 243: 1

1988 : VII. 196-197.

See Muslim, pjär al-manajiai seems to imply that, in rela-

is interpreted literally (${}^cal\bar{a} \ z\bar{a}hirih\bar{a}$), it necessarily means bodily members, notwithstanding [Abū Ya ${}^cl\bar{a}$'s] insistence that it does not imply composition. These statements reflect vacillation and equivocation [on his part]; 257 speaking to people who say such things is a waste [of time].

The Twenty-Fifth Tradition

147 In a tradition recorded by Bukhārī and Muslim in their respective Ṣaḥīḥs Ibn 'Umar reports that the Prophet said: "On the day of judgment God will roll up the heavens [like a scroll], [fol.31a] and He will take them in His [right] hand and will cry out: 'I am the King (malik)! Where are the oppressors and those who exalt themselves?' Then He will roll up the earth with His left hand and will cry out: 'I am the King! Where are the oppressors and those who exalt themselves?' "This version of the tradition is found in Muslim and, of the various forms of this tradition, is the most complete. In another version, also found in Muslim, it is reported that 'Ubayd Allāh b. Miqsam observed 'Abd Allāh b. 'Umar [indicating by gesture] how the Messenger of God related the words: "God will take His heavens and His earths in His hands and He will say: 'I am God!—[as the Prophet related these words] he closed his hand and opened it—I am the King!" 259

148 It has already been established on the basis of peremptory evidence that the "hand" of God is not a limb and that His act of "taking in hand" (qabḍahu) does not involve contact (mubāshara) or imply the existence of a palm (kaff). In using such expressions [as "hand" or "taking hold of"], the Messenger merely sought to facilitate understanding by reference to what is known through sense experience. His [gesture] in closing and opening his hand was intended merely to call attention to the "similarity" (shabah)

²⁵⁷ Literally: "these are the statements of one who cannot [decide whether to] stand or sit."

²⁵⁸ See Muslim, *ṣifāt al-munāfiqīn*, 24; Bukhārī, *riqāq*, 44; *tawḥīd*, 6; Ibn Māja, *muqaddima*, 13 (198); Abū Dāwūd, *sunna*, 19; Bayhaqī, *Asmā*, 323-324; Ibn Khuzayma, *Tawhīd*, 71-73; Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 243; Ājurrī, *Sharī*, 320; *DST*, 52-53; *BA*, 31a; and *Zād al-Masīr*, VII, 196-197.

²⁵⁹ See Muslim, *ṣifāt al-munāfiqīn*, 25; cf., also Bayhaqī, *Asmā*², 339, 17-340, 3. The *isnād* seems to imply that, in relating the tradition, 'Abd Allāh b. 'Umar repeated the Prophet's gestures.

between two acts of "taking in hand" (qabdatyn). Both of these involve the notion of seizing or taking possession of, just as [in another tradition the Prophet] called attention to the outward similarity (shabah) between the seeing (ru^2ya) of God [in the hereafter] and the seeing of the moon ²⁶¹—a comparison intended to call attention to the outward similarities between the [two] acts of seeing (ru^2ya) , but a comparison that does not imply any likeness $(tashb\bar{t}h)$ between the objects seen $(al-mar^2\bar{t}y)$.

149 As for the term "left hand," it occurs only in that version of the tradition which Muslim received from Ibn 'Umar in a report transmitted by 'Umar b. Hamza and Sālim [b. 'Abd Allāh b. 'Umar]. However, in the version received from Ibn 'Umar through the transmission of Nāfi' and others, the expression "left hand" is not to be found. Likewise, in the versions reported by Abū Hurayra and others from the Prophet there is not a single reference to the "left hand." The expression does appear in one other tradition, but that tradition has an entirely different text and is weak, for it was transmitted by an authority suspected of falsehood (ba' almatrūkīn). Since it has been reliably established that the Prophet said: "Both of His hands are right hands," the reference to God's left hand must be regarded as weak. Abū Bakr al-Bayhaqī has suggested that the person who introduced this expression did so out of habit since the left hand is the natural counterpart of the right hand.

150 The Qāḍi said: [fol.31b] "It is possible to ascribe the closing and opening of the hand (al-qabḍ wa'l-basṭ) to [God as an attribute of] His essence." We have already explained our reasons for rejecting such a view. ²⁶⁶

151 In the Musnad of Ahma reported that the Prophet rec Hanself to the mountain He a swoon]"181 and then added: extending the tip of His fin from Thābit al-Bunānī who h ar-Tawīl said: "O Abū Muba Then [Thābit] struck him on man right do you have to que me authority of the Prophet. Tadition?" In another version that the Prophet recited the me mountain," and then ad mountain] collapsed." In s Hamid. [the Prophet is to werse]: "He extended his fing

 $^{^{260}}$ That is, God's action in taking in hand the heavens and the earth (as related in the tradition) and the Prophet's illustrative gesture.

²⁶¹ There are numerous occurrences of this tradition; see, e.g., Ibn Māja, muqaddima, 13 (177 and 179); Muslim, $\bar{l}m\bar{a}n$, 299 and 302.

 $^{^{262}}$ Cf., Bayhaqī, $Asm\bar{a}$, 324, 5-6, where the same point is made in language that is nearly identical.

²⁶³ For the full text of this tradition in its various forms, see Muslim *imāra*, 18; Nasā²ī, *ādāb al-quḍāt*, 1; and *Musnad*, II, 160. Cf., Bayhaqī, *Asmā*², 324, 12; Ibn Qutayba, *Ta²wīl*, 264-265 (Lecomte, 234-235); Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 109-114, and 441; and Ājurrī, *Sharīra*, 323.

²⁶⁴ Cf., Mu^ctamad, 53, 2-4; 56, 2-8.

²⁶⁵ Cf., Bayhaqī, Asmā², 324, 8-9.

²⁶⁶ See §§92-94; also §§41-42 where the question of God's "hand" is discussed.

S. 7: 143. The full verse: "Will were to him, he said: 'O Lord show we Me; but behold the mountainen his Lord manifested Himself Masses collapsed." For Ibn al-Jawa ward. Lufsir. XIII, 97-100; and Za

For the full text of this tradition and I'm Fürak, Mushkil, 245-248 (common are found in Tabari, Tufu Chamabi, Mizān, I, 593; and Ibn al-J

In place of the Arabic text four mansmitters some difficulty).

المستشاه المستقال ا

See the Musnad, III. 209: Taba

Ci. Ibn Khuzayma, Tawhid, 11.

manuscaces of the Quranic verse is put each case indicates that it is a quality assumes it to be so and seeks.

The Twenty-Sixth Tradition

151 In the Musnad of Ahmad there is a tradition from Anas [b. Mālik] who reported that the Prophet recited the verse "And when his Lord manifested Himself to the mountain He caused it to turn to powder [and Moses fell into a swoon]"267 and then added: "He illustrated [these words spoken to Moses] by extending the tip of His finger (khinsir)." ²⁶⁸ [Upon receiving this tradition from Thabit al-Bunani who had previously received it from Anas], Humayd aţ-Ṭawīl said: "O Abū Muḥammad, why are you relating this tradition?" 269 Then [Thabit] struck him on the chest and said: "Who are you O Humayd? What right do you have to question this tradition? Anas reported it to me on the authority of the Prophet, so how can you say: 'Why are you relating this tradition?" In another version of the tradition on this verse [it is reported that the Prophet recited the words:] "When his Lord manifested Himself to the mountain," and then added: "He gestured with his finger and [the mountain] collapsed." 270 In still another version of this tradition cited by Ibn Hāmid, [the Prophet is reported to have said upon reciting the above verse]: "He extended his finger up to the first joint." ²⁷¹

²⁶⁷ S. 7: 143. The full verse: "When Moses arrived at his appointed time and his Lord spoke to him, he said: 'O Lord show me so that I may behold Thee!' He replied: 'You shall not see Me; but behold the mountain—if it stays in its place, then you shall see Me.' And when his Lord manifested Himself to the mountain, He caused it to turn to powder, and Moses collapsed." For Ibn al-Jawzī's gloss on this verse, see Zād al-Masīr, III, 257; cf., Tabarī, Tafsīr, XIII, 97-100; and Zamakhsharī, Kashshāf, II, 114.

²⁶⁸ For the full text of this tradition, see the *Musnad*, III, 125; also *DST*, 53-54; *BA*, 31a; and Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 245-248 (cf., also 393-395, and 465-467). Other versions of the tradition are found in Ṭabarī, *Tafsīr*, XIII, 97-100; Ibn Khuzayma, *Tawḥīd*, 113-114; Dhahabī, *Mīzān*, I, 593; and Ibn al-Jawzī, *Kitāb Mawdū^cāt*, I, 120-122.

اما ترید إلی هذا؟ In place of the Arabic text found in the Musnad اما ترید إلی هذا (which seems to have given transmitters some difficulty), one finds the question recast in other renderings of the tradition: قدت عند الله الله الله الله عند (Dhahabī, $M\bar{\imath}z\bar{a}n$, I, 593, 16; Ibn al-Jawzī, $al-Mawd\bar{\imath}c\bar{\imath}at$, I, 122, 7), تقول هذا (Ibn Khuzayma, $Tawh\bar{\imath}d$, 114, 6), تقول هذا (Ṭabarī, $Tafs\bar{\imath}r$, XIII, 99, 4), and اتحدت باله هذا (Ibn Khuzayma, 113, 5).

 $^{^{270}}$ See the *Musnad*, III, 209; Ṭabarī, *Tafsīr*, XIII, 98; and Ibn Khuzayma, *Tawḥīd*, 113. Cf. *Lisān*, III, 27.

²⁷¹Cf. Ibn Khuzayma, *Tawhīd*, 113, 12.—The subject of the sentence following the three occurrences of the Quranic verse is problematic (from a theological perspective); the context in each case indicates that it is a question of God's finger, not the Prophet's. Ibn Fūrak clearly assumes it to be so and seeks a way around the theological problem by suggesting a

152 Those traditionists who have expressed their views on this tradition have observed that Ḥammād b. Salama 272 was the only person to receive it from Thābit [al-Bunānī]. Further, Ibn Abī'l-'Awjā', 273 the zindīq, is known to have tampered with [the traditions collected by] Ḥammād and during his later years passed them on to others. This explains why the collectors of sound traditions sometimes avoided those [with chains in which the name of Ḥammād appears]. The questions raised by the above tradition are not difficult to explain. The Prophet was attempting to encourage a better understanding [of the verse] among his listeners through an appeal to sense experience. Thus [the Prophet] placed his hand on his finger (kinṣir) as a way of indicating that God had manifested only a small part of His mystery ($\bar{a}y\bar{a}t$). 274

153 Ibn 'Aqīl said: "[This tradition means that God] manifested of the light which He possesses only what might be compared to the tip of the small finger (*khinṣir*)—that is, only to a degree that is commensurate with the finite limits of our understanding. We do not suppose that what pertains to God can be measured or that the divine essence can be described as light [of the sort we know]. If someone should ask why Ḥumayd objected to Thābit's [transmission of this tradition], our answer is that he may have assumed that the [reference to the small finger] concerned the question of the divine attributes."

154 Indeed, the $Q\bar{a}di$ ascribed a small finger to God on the basis of this defective tradition. ²⁷⁵ [fol. 32a] As I have already said, the reference to the finger in the tradition was meant to apply to the Prophet [not to God]. ²⁷⁶

in the hearts of His creature bardihi) to the earth and it quite manifests Himself [fully]

156 The Qāḍī said: "The phraken in its literal sense ('alā : such a way as to imply that G says that [God] manifests a pour (ba'ḍ) utters nonsense." of a report deriving from a contradict what the majority agreement that the Creator is paraba('du). The words [cite manifests some of His signs nothing more."

metaphorical interpretation of "the small finger" (393ff.). See §154, however, where Ibn al-Jawzī insists that the reference is to the Prophet, not to God.

²⁷² Ḥammād b. Salama b. Dīnār Abū Salama, a Basran traditionist (d.167/783), was the nephew of Ḥumayd at-Tawīl and was generally regarded as reliable in matters of tradition, although some critics raised questions about certain traditions transmitted in his name. Dhahabī notes that while Muslim included some of Ḥammād's traditions in his Ṣaḥīḥ, Bukhārī avoided them (Dhahabī, Mīzān, I, 594). For the details of his life and his extraordinary piety, see: Ibn Saʿd, Ṭabaqāt, VII, 282; Dhahabī, Mīzān, I, 590-595; Abū Nuʿaym al-Iṣbahānī, Hilya, VI, 249-252; and Massignon, Essai, 168, 201, 234-235. Cf. KAS, §§ 8 and 79.

²⁷³ For more on 'Abd al-Karīm b. Abī'l-'Awjā' (d. 155 A.H.), see notes to §79.

²⁷⁴ Cf., Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 246-247, where the same point is made.

 $^{^{275}}$ The Mu^ctamad makes no reference to the small finger (khinsir) as a divine attribute.

 $^{^{276}}$ Cf., the last part of §152. In his *Kitāb al-Mawḍū* c c d c d $^{$

Extracation. Although he does declar 1.1541, he seems unwilling to declar

A mawlā of Ibn Abbās and a leasenetical work. He travelled widely the Maghrib), apparently in support of the Maghrib), apparently in support of the Maghrib), apparently in support of the Maghrib of Abū Nuaym III modern perspective on Tkrima and Sanacht in El². III. 1081-1082 of Nuaym III.

Ci_DST. 54; and BA. 31b. See form of the tradition is cited seems evident from §156 where a regarded this tradition as or a

The verb JS, might be conscrued that in this case, too, one is forced

I'm Fürak glosses the expression بحرفة ومحفرة كما قال تعالى: روما مرسو By the expression) بالآبات لا تخريف

for the Most High has said. 154, 6-7; cf., 255, 16-17; S. 17

The Twenty-Seventh Tradition

155 According to the $Q\bar{a}d\bar{\iota}$, 'Ikrima' said: "When God decides to put fear in the hearts of His creatures, He manifests a part of Himself ($abd\bar{a}$ 'an ba' dihi) to the earth and it quakes; but when He wishes to destroy a people, He manifests Himself [fully] to it." ²⁷⁸

156 The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{\iota}$ said: "The phrase 'He manifests a part of Himself' is to be taken in its literal sense ('alā zāhirihi) as referring to His essence, but not in such a way as to imply that God is divided into parts ($tab^c\bar{\iota}d$)." Now he who says that [God] manifests a part (ba^cd) of Himself that is not in reality a part (ba^cd) utters nonsense. To apply the term part [to God] on the basis of a report deriving from a Follower, even if it were authentic, is to contradict what the majority of Muslims have affirmed, for they are in agreement that the Creator is not to be thought of as divisible into parts ($yataba^{cc}du$). The words [cited in the saying of 'Ikrima] mean that God manifests some of His signs or wonders (ba^cd $\bar{a}y\bar{a}tihi$) [to the earth], nothing more. 280

fabrication. Although he does declare the form reproduced here in KAS to be defective (§154), he seems unwilling to declare it a fabrication ($mawd\bar{u}^c a$).

 277 A *mawlā* of Ibn 'Abbās and a leading (though controversial) transmitter of the latter's exegetical work. He travelled widely throughout the Umayyad empire (including Khurasān and the Maghrib), apparently in support of the Khārijī cause, and is said to have died in 105/723 (or, according to some, in 107/725). For a review of the widely divergent assessments of 'Ikrima's reliability as a transmitter and the soundness of his views, see Dhahabī, $M\bar{\imath}z\bar{a}n$, I, 93-97; the Hilya of Abū Nuaym (III, 326-347); and Ibn al-Jawzī's Safwa (II, 58-59). For a modern perspective on 'Ikrima and a list of the sources on him, see the article by J. Schacht in EI^2 , III, 1081-1082 (cf., Massignon, Lexique technique, 171, 289).

²⁷⁸Cf., *DST*, 54; and *BA*, 31b. See also Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 254, 3-5, where a slightly different form of the tradition is cited (reported by 'Ikrima on the authority of Ibn 'Abbās). It seems evident from §156 (where he refers to the saying as a *kalām tābi*'î) that Ibn al-Jawzī regarded this tradition as originating with 'Ikrima.

might be construed as a passive (he should not be addressed or spoken to) but in this case, too, one is forced to assume an ellipsis.

اعلم أنّه يحتصل أن يكون المراد بقوله «أبدى Ibn Fūrak glosses the expression as follows: عن بعضه أي عن بعض آياته وعلاماته ممّا تكون منذرة ومخوّفة ومحذرة كما قال تعالى: «وَمَا نُرسلُ عن بعضه» أي عن بعض آياته وعلاماته ممّا تكون منذرة ومخوّفة ومحذرة كما قال تعالى: «وَمَا نُرسلُ (By the expression "He manifests a part ($ba^c d$) of Himself" He may well have meant: [He manifests] some ($ba^c d$) of His signs so as to warn, to instill fear and to caution, for the Most High has said: "We sent signs for the purpose of instilling fear" [Ibn Fūrak, 254, 6-7; cf., 255, 16-17; S. 17: 59]).

The Twenty-Eighth Tradition

157 Abū'l-Aḥwaṣ al-Jushamī reported the following: "The Messenger of God once said [to my father, Mālik b. Naḍla]: 'Is it true that you take a razor and cut off the ear of one of [your female camels] and then say: "This is a baḥūra"? And do you slit the ear of another and say: "This one is a ṣarīma"?'281 He replied: 'Yes'. [The Prophet] responded: 'Stop this practice, for God's razor (mūsā) is sharper than yours and His forearm (sā'id) is stronger than yours.'"282

158 The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{i}$ [Abū Yaclā] said: "On the basis of a literal interpretation of this text it is possible to ascribe a forearm to God as an attribute of the divine essence (*ṣifa li-dhātihi*)." However, the predication of a divine attribute on the basis of a questionable tradition ignores the normal understanding of such expressions in Arabic usage. When [Arabs] speak thus they mean it only to be taken as a figure of speech (*tajawwuz*) or metaphor (*isticāra*), for the term "forearm" (*sācid*), in such usage, is meant to connote

power (quwwa) precisely becignoring [of this distinction uneducated ('āmmīya) and a understanding rests. [If one would also be necessary to as

The

159 [fol.32b] According to a said: "When a believer performer of Raḥmān." 285

160 In the preceding chapter eyes" as applied to God in a above tradition is [not that Go ho prays and so the latter of the occasion. It was for this to the occasion in the occasion in the second in the occasion.

²⁸¹ On the various definitions of the terms $bah\bar{n}ra$ and $sar\bar{n}ma$, See Lane (157/2-3) and $Lis\bar{a}n$ (IV, 43/2-44/1). Also, the article by Wensinck in EI^2 , I, 922.

²⁸² See DST, 54; BA, 31b; Bayhaqī, Asmā², 341-342; Ṭabarī, Tafsīr, XI, 122; Musnad, IV, 136-137; and Ibn Sacd, Tabaqāt, VI, 28. The longer version of this tradition (Musnad, III, 473) reads as follows: "Abū'l-Aḥwaṣ related the following on the authority of his father, Mālik b. Naḍla: 'The Prophet came to me while I was in an unkempt state, and he said: "Do you own livestock (māl)?" I said: "Yes!" The Prophet said: "What kind?" [Mālik] said: "I have every kind, i.e., camels, cattle, horses, and sheep." [The Prophet] said: "Since God gave them to you, they are yours. Do the camels of your people give birth with sound ears and you then take a razor and cut them off, and say: 'These are baḥīras?' Do you slit the ears [of others], and then say: 'These are sarīmas?' And you forbid these to yourself and your people?" [Mālik] said: "Yes." [The Prophet] said: "Accept what God has given you, for the forearm of God is stronger and the razor of God is sharper"'" (cf., Țabarī, Tafsīr, XI, 122). Lengthy discussions of this tradition are to be found in the standard commentaries on S. 5: 106 (cf., also S. 6: 140): e.g., Zād al-Masīr, II, 436-440; Ṭabarī, Tafsīr, XI, 121-122; and Zamakhsharī, Kashshāf, I, 649. For a literary analysis of a version of this hadīth, see S. Stetkevych, "Toward a Redefinition of 'Badīc' Poetry," Journal of Arabic Literature, 12 (1981), 1-29. For more on the pre-Islamic background of the practice of slitting the ears of animals, see the article "Baḥīra" in EI2, I, 922 (Wensinck); R. Paret, Kommentar, 130-136; Wellhausen, Reste arabischen Heidentums, 112f.; Henninger, "Die unblutige Tierweihe der vorislamischen Arber in ethnologischer Sicht," in Paideuma, Mitteilungen zur Kulturkunde, IV, 179-190; and Gräf, Jagdbeute und Schlachttier im islamischen Recht; eine Untersuchung zur Entwicklung der islamischen Jurisprudenz (Bonn 1959), 58ff.

الله al-Jawzī here alludes to a Firak (Mushkil, 257, 12-14): تسرة عامداً وإن كان الساعد محلاً للفرة substratum (locus) of a thing to the seeing is termed an eye and hearing forearm is a substratum or locus argument is made.

The synatx of the Arabic reuring to the fact that a long pured constructed complex sentence. Became an understandable English form. It is same time, aiming to remain as

That is, before (or in front of lamonical collections. In addition to Date same form as we have it in KAL 12-259. 2), albeit in a somewhat long المنافذ المنا

power (quwwa) precisely because a person's power is in his forearm.²⁸³ The ignoring [of this distinction between modes of speech] is typical of the uneducated (${}^c\bar{a}mm\bar{\imath}ya$) and a violation of the conditions on which [true] understanding rests. [If one were to accept a literalist point of view] it would also be necessary to ascribe a razor ($m\bar{\imath}s\bar{a}$) [to God].²⁸⁴

The Twenty-Ninth Tradition

159 [fol.32b] According to a tradition reported by Abū Hurayra, the Prophet said: "When a believer performs his prayers (salat) he is before the two eyes of Rahman." ²⁸⁵

160 In the preceding chapter, we have already discussed the question of "eyes" as applied to God in certain verses of the Quran. The point of the above tradition is [not that God has two eyes, but] that He observes the one who prays and so the latter ought to conduct himself in a manner befitting the occasion. It was for this reason that the Prophet said: "[When one of

²⁸³ Ibn al-Jawzī here alludes to a hermeneutic principle spelled out more fully by Ibn Fūrak (*Mushkil*, 257, 12-14): العرب تسمّي محلّ الشيء باسم ما فيه من طريق القرب كما سُمّت (Arabs give the name of the substratum (locus) of a thing to the latter on account of the proximity [of the two], and so seeing is termed an *eye* and hearing an *ear*; so also power is termed a *forearm* because the forearm is a substratum or locus of power). Cf., Bayhaqī, *Asmā*², 342, 12-17, where the same argument is made.

²⁸⁴ The synatx of the Arabic text of the last part of the paragraph is rather involved, owing to the fact that a long parenthetical statement is embedded in a rather loosely constructed complex sentence. Because of the difficulty of rendering such a long sentence into an understandable English form, I have broken it down into several smaller units—while, at the same time, aiming to remain as close as possible to the overall sense of the Arabic.

²⁸⁵ That is, before (or in front of) *Raḥmān*. This tradition does not appear in any of the canonical collections. In addition to *DST* (55) and *BA* (31b), where it appears in essentially the same form as we have it in *KAS*, it is also cited in the *Mushkil* of Ibn Fūrak (258, 12-259, 2), albeit in a somewhat longer form: الله عليه وسلّم: إذا قام العبد إلى الصلاة فإنّه بين عيني الرحمن فإذا التفت قال له رسول الله صلّى الله عليه وسلّم: إذا قام العبد إلى الصلاة فإنّه بين عيني الرحمن فإذا التفت قال له (The Messenger of God said: "When a believer performs the *ṣalāt* he faces [lit. is before the two eyes of] *Raḥmān*; and when he turns [away], the Lord says to him: 'To whom do you turn? Is it to one who is better than I? Draw near to Me for I am better for you than he to whom you turn'").

you says his prayers] God is in front of him (*qibala wajhihi*)." ²⁸⁶ The real point of these words is [not to locate God in a particular place but to underscore the point] that God sees [the one who prays].

The Thirtieth Tradition

161 Bukhārī and Muslim cite a tradition in their respective Ṣaḥūḥs in which ʿĀʾisha reports that the Prophet once came to visit her while another woman was in the house, and he said to ʿĀʾisha: "Who is this woman?" ʿĀʾisha replied: "She is so and so," and [ʿĀʾisha] went on speaking of [the woman's] dedication to her prayers. ²⁸⁷ The Prophet responded: "Enough said! You are responsible *only* for what you are capable of doing. By God, the Most High will not turn away (*yamallu*) [from you] until you first turn away from Him." ²⁸⁸ In another version of this tradition it reads: "God will not turn away [from you] in disgust (*yasaʾmu*) until you turn away [from Him] in disgust." ²⁸⁹

162 The 'ulamā' maintain that this tradition means that He will not turn away (yamallu) even though you turn away. This is the view of Ibn

Qutayba and al-Khaṭṭābī ^{2*} ar is a consensus. ³⁹¹ Some schol (malla) from something abutradition would mean that G you] as long as you have no [the kind of] "turning away" (istithqāl), aversion (nufīa) a since He is not subject to changworld (ḥulūl al-ḥawādith) is r 163 The Qāḍī [Abū Yasīaming away' (malal) to God in disgust' (saʾāma)." Such a known to the science of lexico

s consistent with His being

expression "turning away in di

The

164 Khawla bint Ḥakīm report
campled [the idolaters] under fi
165 Now Wajj is the name of
God inflicted defeat [fol.33a] of
the The reference [to trampling the content of
²⁸⁶ These words are part of a tradition in which worshippers are warned against spitting in front of them during the *ṣalāt* since God's face is in front of the believer when he prays (see Muslim, *masājid*, 50; *zuhd*, 74; Bukhārī, *ṣalāt*, 33; *adhān*, 94; *adab*, 75; Ibn Māja, *masājid*, 10 [763]; Abū Dāwūd, *ṣalāt*, 22; Nasāʾī, *masājid*, 31; *Musnad*, II, 6, 29, 53, 66, 72). The text given by Ibn Māja reads as follows: 'Abd Allāh b. 'Umar said: "The Messenger of God saw phlegm on the *qibla* of the mosque while he was saying his prayers, and he rubbed it off. After he had finished his prayers, he said [to those present]: 'When you say your prayers God is before your face. Therefore, let none of you spit in front of him during the prayers.'" Cf., Bayhaqī, *Asmā*², 465, 16ff.; also Ibn Fūrak, 263, 4, and 265, 10-12.

²⁸⁷ One version has ' \bar{A} 'isha saying that the woman was in the habit of spending the whole of the night in prayer (Bayhaqī, $Asm\bar{a}$ ', 483; cf., Ibn Māja, zuhd, 28 [4239]).

²⁸⁸In slightly varying forms, this tradition appears in virtually all of the canonical collections. See, for example: Bukhārī, *īmān*, 32 (Houdas and Marçais, *Les Traditions*, I, 24); Muslim, *ṣalāt al-musāfirīn*, 221; Nasā[¬]ī, *qiyām al-layl*, 17; *īmān*, 29. See also Bukhārī, *tajahhud*, 18; *ṣawm*, 52; *libās*, 43; Muslim, *ṣalāt al-musāfirīn*, 215; *ṣiyām*, 177; Nasā[¬]ī, *qibla*, 13; Ibn Māja, *zuhd*, 28; *Musnad*, VI, 40, 51, 61, 84, 122, 189, 199, 212, 231, 233, 241, 244, 250, and 268. Cf., also *Lisān*, XI, 629/1, 19-21; Ibn Qutayba, *Ta¬wīl*, 375 (Lecomte, 325): Bayhaqī, *Asmā*¬, 483, 8-11; and Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 272.

²⁸⁹ Muslim, şalāt al-musāfirīn, 220; and Musnad, VI, 247.

See Bayhaqī, Asmā. 483. 12ff.

⁻ Cf. Lisān, XI, 629/1, 19ff.

See Ibn Fürak. 272. 7-9. where and the world of change. mala! See Gharib al-Ḥadīth (II. 373.) where the second of the verb malla, each

The hadith fragment cited here is by Ibn al-Jawzī in DST (56-Ibn Qutayba, Tawil, 268-269 (3anhaçi, Asmā, 461; and Lisān, I. 1984). VI. 409: and Bayhaqi, 461 (6)

According to some authorities. W

Qutayba and al-Khaṭṭābī 290 as well as the lexicographers among whom there is a consensus. Some scholars (qawm) say that the one who turns away (malla) from something abandons it (tarakahu). [In line with this] the tradition would mean that God will not abandon (yatruku) His reward [to you] as long as you have not ceased rendering Him obedience. However, [the kind of] "turning away" (malal) that entails dislike (karāhiya), irritation (istithqāl), aversion ($nuf\bar{u}r$) and loathing (sarāma) is impossible for [God] since He is not subject to change (taghayyur); participation in the phenomenal world ($hul\bar{u}l$ $al-haw\bar{a}dith$) is not possible for Him.

163 The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{\iota}$ [Abū Yaʻlā] said: "It is possible to attribute a [literal] 'turning away' (malal) to God, though not the kind that is a 'turning away in disgust' (saʻāma)." Such a statement, however, is contrary to what is known to the science of lexicography and [does not take into account] what is consistent with His being or what is a violation of that being. The expression "turning away in disgust" (saʾāma) may not be applied to Him.

The Thirty-First Tradition

164 Khawla bint Ḥakīm reported that the Prophet said: "The last time God trampled [the idolaters] under foot (ākhiru waṭatin waṭatin waṭahā) was at Wajj." ²⁹³

165 Now Wajj is the name of a valley in the vicinity of Tā'if ²⁹⁴ where God inflicted defeat [fol.33a] on the idolaters near the end of the Prophet's life. The reference [to trampling under foot] appears in another tradition in

²⁹⁰ See Bayhaqī, $Asm\bar{a}$, 483, 12ff., where the views of al-Khaṭṭābī are reported more fully.

²⁹¹ Cf. *Lisān*, XI, 629/1, 19ff.

²⁹² See Ibn Fūrak, 272, 7-9, where almost identical language is used. Because God is beyond the world of change, *malal* may be applied to God only if construed as metaphor. Cf., his *Gharīb al-Ḥadīth* (II, 373, 11-13) where Ibn al-Jawzī offers three possible interpretations of the verb *malla*, each metaphorical or quasi-metaphorical.

²⁹³The <code>hadīth</code> fragment cited here is quoted in a number of sources; in addition to the citations by Ibn al-Jawzī in *DST* (56-57); *BA* (32a); and *Gharīb al-Ḥadīth* (II, 473); see also Ibn Qutayba, *Ta³wīl*, 268-269 (Lecomte, 237-238); Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 279-280; Bayhaqī, *Asmā*³, 461; and *Lisān*, I, 197/1, 25ff. For the full text of the tradition, see the *Musnad*, VI, 409; and Bayhaqī, 461 (cf., also *Musnad*, IV, 172; and Lane, 2949/2).

²⁹⁴ According to some authorities, Wajj was another name for Ṭārif itself (*Lisān*, II, 397; cf., *Marāṣid*, III, 1426).

which the Prophet prays: "O God, make severe your trampling (*waṭataka*) of Muḍar."²⁹⁵ [What we have here is a metaphorical expression] involving the term "foot" (*qadam*); this was the view of Ibn Qutayba and a number of other authorities.²⁹⁶ In his commentary on this tradition, Sufyān b. 'Uyayna maintained that it refers to the last campaign—that is, against Ṭāʾif—undertaken by the Prophet.

166 The $Q\bar{a}di$ said: "It is permissible, on the basis of our principles $(u\bar{s}ul)$, to interpret this tradition literally (' $al\bar{a}$ $z\bar{a}hirihi$), for the meaning of the text refers to the divine essence itself (adh- $dh\bar{a}t$), not to God's actions; thus we interpret [the term foot] in the prophetic saying 'God will descend and place His foot in Hell' as applying to the divine essence." The principles to which this man alludes lead inevitably to the attribution of corporeality ($tajs\bar{t}m$), locomotion ($intiq\bar{a}l$), and movement (haraka) to God. Not only is this position anthropomorphist ($tashb\bar{t}h$), it violates literary usage (lugha) and contravenes both [sound] historical method (ma^crifat at- $taw\bar{a}r\bar{t}kh$) and the proofs of reason (adilla al- $cuq\bar{u}l$). [Abū Yaʻlā] was misled by a tradition in which Kaʻcb²98 is reported to have said: "Wajj is [the name of] a sacred (muqaddas) place from which the Lord ascended to heaven after He had completed²99 the creation of the earth." 300 Even if these

words go back to Ka'b, it is al-Kitāb. for we know that he we were to conclude that the the place at which [God] creation was completed. Honly in the sense that He turn of the heavens, as the Qurada the heavens, as the Qurada the heavens which then reported by Abū Hurayra tha Gabriel came and led me to the and said: This is the place for This saying, however, was in the place traditions and claim transmitter. If someone shourance expression] istawā ila

²⁹⁵ The tradition containing these words occurs frequently in the canonical collections; for a sampling of these, see the following: Bukhārī, *adhān*, 128; *istiqā*, 2; *jihād*, 98; *anbiyā*, 19; *tafsīr*, 3 (9); *adab*, 110; Muslim, *masājid*, 294, 295; Abū Dāwūd, *ṣalāt*, 216; *witr*, 10; Nasā̄, *taṭbīq*, 27; Ibn Māja, *iqāma*, 145; *Musnad*, II, 239, 255, 271, 418, 470, 502, and 521. Bukhārī, *adhān*, 128 (*Les traditions*, I, 267), adds the following explanation at the end of the tradition: "The people of Muḍar who lived to the east [of Medina] were at that time hostile to him (the Prophet)."

²⁹⁶ See Ibn Qutayba, *Ta²wīl*, 269; cf., also Bayhaqī, *Asmā²*, 461-462; and Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 279-280. Ibn Fūrak's interpretation of this expression is based almost entirely on Ibn Qutayba; in contrast to Ibn Qutayba, however, Ibn Fūrak goes on to work out the theological implications of the tradition. It is worth noting that all three authors cite the view of Sufyān in support of their own position, as Ibn al-Jawzī himself will do in the following sentence.

²⁹⁷ On this tradition and its interpretation, see §§105-109.

²⁹⁸ Ka^cb al-Aḥbār b. Māti^c, a Yemenite Jew who converted to Islam during the reign of ^cUmar and is said to have been the source of many reports of Jewish origin that found their way into early Islam. He reportedly died in Hims near the end of ^cUthmān's reign, possibly in 32/652.

²⁹⁹ The expression *yawma qaḍā* used here might also be rendered: "on the day when He decreed the creation of the earth" (cf., Lecomte, 239).

This tradition, with a full israid as an example of a tradition that is profession other instances of the tradition.

According to this interpretation are area and thus the place from whither creation.

I take 'amada ilā primarily as a

Or perhaps: turned His attention

Also translated "smoke" or "mine and the problem posed by a smally L. 58: Zamakhshari, Kash 237; R. Paret, Kommentar, 433-25 creation. Ibn al-Jawzi (folio men that the earth was created before the control of the cont

For a longer version of this says

i. cf., Minan, I. 345, where a s

as al-Bähali from Ibn al-Mubarak
the wadroon as a fabrication (mon

in his Kitab ad-Dufufa (L. 149).

The same and notes that the latter regardade. L 345) where the same charge that in time, but it would appear from

words go back to Ka'b, it is possible that he received them from the Ahl al-Kitāb, for we know that he transmitted numerous sayings from them. If we were to conclude that the saying does go back to [Ka'b, Wajj] refers to the place at which [God] "ascended" (istawā) from the earth after its creation was completed. He then went up ('araja) [to the heavens], but only in the sense that He turned His attention to ('amada ilā) the creation of the heavens, as the Quran itself says: "Then He 'went up to' (istawā ilā) the heavens which then consisted [only] of vapor (dukhān)." He was reported by Abū Hurayra that the Prophet said: "During my night journey Gabriel came and led me to the Rock of Jerusalem (sakhra bayt al-muqaddas) and said: 'This is the place from which your Lord ascended to heaven.' This saying, however, was transmitted by Bakr b. Ziyād, who used to fabricate traditions and claim that he had received them from a reliable transmitter. If someone should point out that Ibn 'Abbās said: "[The Quranic expression] istawā ilā as-samā' means that He ascended (sa'ida) to

³⁰⁰ This tradition, with a full $isn\bar{a}d$, is cited by Ibn Qutayba ($Ta^{2}w\bar{\imath}l$, 270 [Lecomte, 239]) as an example of a tradition that is problematic on account of its anthropomorphist implications. For other instances of the tradition, see $Lis\bar{a}n$ (II, 397); and $T\bar{a}j$ al- $^{4}Ar\bar{u}s$, (II, 270 [Cairo, 1306]).

³⁰¹ According to this interpretation, Wajj was the name of the last part of the earth to be created, and thus the place from which God ascended to the heavens in order to attend to their creation.

³⁰² I take 'amada ilā primarily as a gloss on istawā, not on the verb 'araja.

³⁰³ Or perhaps: turned His attention to....

³⁰⁴ Also translated "smoke" or "mist" by some. For further discussion of this verse (S. 41:11) and the problem posed by the verb *istawā*, see *Zād al-Masīr*, VII, 245, and especially I, 58; Zamakhsharī, *Kashshāf*, III, 445 (also I, 270-271); Ṭabarī, *Tafsīr*, I, 429-437; R. Paret, *Kommentar*, 433-434; and *KAS*, §§49 to 59. On the question of the order of creation, Ibn al-Jawzī (following Mujāhid, Ḥasan al-Baṣrī, Ibn 'Abbās) favored the view that the earth was created before the heavens (*Zād al-Masīr*, I, 58).

³⁰⁵ For a longer version of this saying, see: *Kitāb al-Mawḍū̄^cāt*, I, 113 (with a complete *isnād*); cf., *Mīzān*, I, 345, where a slightly different *matn* and *isnād* are given (Bakr b. Ziyād al-Bāhilī from Ibn al-Mubārak from Ibn Ḥibbān). Both Ibn al-Jawzī and Dhahabī reject the tradition as a fabrication (*mawḍū̄^ca*).

³⁰⁶ In his $Kit\bar{a}b$ ad- $Du^caf\bar{a}^o$ (I, 149), Ibn al-Jawzī cites Ibn Ḥibbān as the source of this statement and notes that the latter regarded Bakr as a "charlatan" ($dajj\bar{a}l$). Also, see Dhahabī ($M\bar{\imath}z\bar{a}n$, I, 345) where the same charges are made. Neither Ibn al-Jawzī nor Dhahabī locate Bakr in time, but it would appear from the two notices that he must have lived during the 8th century.

the heavens," we would insist that it rather means "His command (*amruhu*) ascended," since God does not admit of movement or change.

167 Scholars fall into three [fol.33b] classes in regard to texts bearing on the divine attributes ($akhb\bar{a}r$ as- $sif\bar{a}t$). The first group allows such texts to stand as they are without gloss ($tafs\bar{i}r$) or metaphorical interpretation ($ta^2w\bar{i}l$), unless there is no other recourse. Thus, for example, in the case of the verse "Your Lord comes" 307 —they take it to mean that His command (amr) comes. This was the approach followed by the salaf. The second group [consists of those who advocate] a metaphorical interpretation ($ta^2w\bar{i}l$), though it is a position fraught with some risk, 308 as we have noted previously. The third group takes sense experience as its point of departure in determining the meaning of the text. Ignorance is widespread among those [in this group] who specialize in the transmission of texts ($n\bar{a}qil\bar{i}n$), since they are not familiar with the rational sciences ($^cilm\ al-ma^cq\bar{u}l\bar{a}t$) by which one can know what may be ascribed to God and what may not, for the rational sciences ($^cilm\ al-ma^cq\bar{u}l\bar{a}t$) 309 safeguard such texts from being construed in

anthropomorphic terms. When they are prone to construe so was this [very tendency] the basis of our principles, it is under foot as applying to (adh-dhāt)." By his own adpoint of reference. If only locomotion (intiqāl), and co God, they would not have to

168 It is astounding that and then turn around and change," thereby contradiction come across is a report from

³⁰⁷ S. 89:22

³⁰⁸ Cf., §36 (and elsewhere in ch. 1) where Ibn al-Jawzī concedes that when practiced in a public setting metaphorical interpretation can undermine the faith of rank and file believers by raising doubts as to the adequacy and reliability of scripture. But Ibn al-Jawzī seems equally firm that $ta^2w\bar{\imath}l$, when practiced by competent authorities, need not have harmful consequences. Indeed, he argues frequently that it is the only sure way of protecting the unity and transcendence of God. It is a question of where and by whom $ta^2w\bar{\imath}l$ is practiced.

³⁰⁹ Apart from the two occurrences in §167, Ibn al-Jawzī uses the expression 'ilm al-ma^cqūlāt nowhere else in KAS (the term ma^cqūlāt does appear in §245, and in §115 ma^cqūl occurs, but neither passage throws any light on his use of 'ilm al-ma^cqūlāt'). If, by this expression, he is referring to a specific science or a group of sciences, exactly what he has in mind is unclear since there is no elaboration of the expression. It is clear that he could not have had metaphysics in mind even though the expression is sometimes used in that sense. It is also possible, however, that he is not referring to a science or set of sciences at all but rather to a set of principles based on reason or a method of reasoning. In any case, it is clear from his repeated references to reason ('aql), especially in chapter 1, that Ibn al-Jawzī had a fairly robust faith in the essential goodness of reason and its powers (cf., e.g., his Dhamm al-Hawā, 5-11, where he takes up the question of caql, its nature, and its virtues. In the same chapter he cites a number of prophetic traditions celebrating the virtues of 'aql, among them the following: "A man may be among those who observe the fast, the ṣalāt, the ḥajj, and the jihād, but on the day of judgment he will be recompensed only in accordance with the degree to which he followed the dictates of reason" [Dhamm, 7, 6-7]). From the references to reason in KAS, it is clear that 'aql is a faculty that has access to a truth independently of sense experience and revelation. It is on the basis of caql that we can know that God is beyond the categories of time and place, and that He is not

capable, therefore, of being localing sort. Ibn al-Jawzi's conception of and beyond these to the Aristotelia be fairly certain that he had only that he understood it. As for the Grafunction: it is the source of truth moral force in that it is through real and passions of the carnal soul localing.

Cf.. Şayd al-Khāṭir. 428-432

See the first several lines of §

In his notice on Ibn Kadish Ahmad b. 'Ubayd Allah b. Maha 526 1131), which he says, he coo Kādish himself. Ibn al-Jawzi ack received an ijāza (permissa) from the notice in the Municipal mixed. On the one hand, he notes i he was highly regarded by a manb Muhammad b. al-Khashshab d. 5 respected hadith expert. Muhamma necause, on at least one occasion, he the Prophet-something which Ibal al-Jawzī does not include Ibn Kāda one of his first teachers in the screen merature of Ibn Kādish's legal affi Kadish can be found in the follow -83: and Mīzān, I. 118 (cf., Mir in a

anthropomorphic terms. When people lack [a knowledge of these sciences] they are prone to construe sacred texts by reference to sense experience. It was this [very tendency] that the $Q\bar{a}di$ exemplified when he said: "On the basis of our principles, it is possible to interpret the expression 'trampling under foot' ³¹¹ as applying to God, and to relate it to the divine essence itself $(adh-dh\bar{a}t)$." By his own admission their principles take the senses as their point of reference. If only they had understood that movement (haraka), locomotion $(intiq\bar{a}l)$, and change (taghayyur) are not to be predicated of God, they would not have taken sense experience as their starting point.

168 It is astounding that [Abū Yaʿlā] could make the [above] statement and then turn around and say: "...but not in the sense of movement or change," thereby contradicting himself. One of the strangest things I have come across is a report from Abūʾl-ʿIzz b. Kādish³¹¹² according to which

capable, therefore, of being localized in space, or subject to movement or to change of any sort. Ibn al-Jawzī's conception of reason clearly owed much to Muʿtazilī and Ashʿarī kalām and beyond these to the Aristotelian and Neoplatonic conceptions of reason, though we can be fairly certain that he had only the vaguest idea of the historical roots of the notion of 'aql as he understood it. As for the Greeks and the medieval mutakallimūn, reason has a double function: it is the source of truth regarding the nature and being of God, but it is also a moral force in that it is through reason that human beings exercise control over the desires and passions of the carnal soul (nafs).

³¹⁰ Cf., Sayd al-Khāṭir, 428-432 (faṣl 236).

³¹¹ See the first several lines of §164.

³¹² In his notice on Ibn Kādish in the *Muntazam* (X, 28), Ibn al-Jawzī gives his name as Ahmad b. 'Ubayd Allāh b. Muhammad b. Ahmad Abū'l-'Izz b. Kādish al-'Ukbarī (d. 526/1131), which he says, he copied down from a document written in the hand of Ibn Kādish himself. Ibn al-Jawzī acknowledges having studied hadīth under him and even having received an ijāza (permission) to transmit the traditions of Ibn Kādish. It is evident from the notice in the Muntazam, however, that Ibn al-Jawzī's attitude toward him was mixed. On the one hand, he notes that his knowledge of the hadīth was extensive and that he was highly regarded by a number of scholars, among them the Ḥanbalī polymath Abū Muḥammad b. al-Khashshāb (d. 567/1171), but Ibn al-Jawzī also notes that the highly respected hadīth expert, Muhammad b. Nāṣir [d. 550/1155]), viewed him with suspicion because, on at least one occasion, he had fabricated a tradition and placed it in the mouth of the Prophet—something which Ibn Kādish later acknowledged and sincerely regretted. Ibn al-Jawzī does not include Ibn Kādish in his Mashvakha despite the fact that the latter was one of his first teachers in the science of hadīth. No mention is made in the biographical literature of Ibn Kādish's legal affiliation. In addition to the Muntazam, notices on Ibn Kādish can be found in the following: Bidāya, XII, 219; Shadharāt, IV, 78; Kāmil, X, 683; and Mīzān, I, 118 (cf., Mir'āt az-Zamān, 344, and 455).

Abū Ja'far Muḥammad b. 'Uthmān b. Abī Shayba 313 is said to have written the following in his *Kitāb al-'Arsh*: "God informed me that He went (*ṣāra*) from the earth to heaven, and then from heaven to His Throne upon which He then seated Himself." We are thankful to God that He has not dimininished our portion of a knowledge that is based on both revelation and reason. We keep ourselves aloof from those who have brought shame on our school (*madhhabanā*), for people would otherwise censure *us* because of what *they* teach.

The Thirty-Second Tradition

169 [fol.34a] According to Abū Umāma, the Prophet said: "[God's] servants

do not approach Him with minhu), namely the Quran."

170 In a tradition reported of the Quran to other form over His creatures, for the Qwill return to Him. The (waṣala) to us from Him moreover. [the saying] is t Prophet. 317

³¹³ The full isnād reads: Ibn Kādish from Abū Ṭālib al-'Ushārī from Abū'l-Fatḥ b. Abī'l-Fawāris from Abū 'Alī b. aṣ-Ṣawwāf from Abū Ja'far Muḥammad b. 'Uthmān b. Abī Shayba. The latter, the source of the report, was a Kufan traditionist who later settled in Baghdad where he died in 297/910. He was regarded by many as an exceptionally learned individual who composed a number of valuable works (tawālīf mufīda) in the science of *ḥadīth*, among them a biographical work on traditionists (Ibn Athīr, *Lubāb*, II, 315), and several other works on the science of tradition. In addition to these, he was the author of several more popular works, including the Kitāb al-'Arsh (referred to above by Ibn al-Jawzī) and a short work entitled Kitāb Fīhi Dhikr Khalq Ādam wa Khaṭī atihi (GAS, I, 164). His work as a traditionist was vigorously defended by a number of contemporaries (among them Abū 'Alī Ṣāliḥ Jazara, 'Abdān and Ibn 'Adī); some traditionists, however, considered him unreliable, and some even accused him of the deliberate fabrication of traditions. Among the severest of his critics were Abd Allāh b. Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal, Abū Muḥammad b. Khirāsh, Dāraqutnī, Abū Bakr al-Barqānī, and, above all, Abū Jasfar al-Ḥaḍramī (known to his contemporaries under the nickname Muṭayyan). As his notice on Ibn Abī Shayba indicates, Ibn al-Jawzī tended to side with the critics (Muntazam, VI, 95-96; cf., also his Kitāb aḍ-Du'afā', III, 84-85). For a detailed account of the conflict between Ibn Abī Shayba and Muṭayyan, see Tarīkh Baghdād, III, 43-44; and Mīzān, III, 642-643. Cf., also Bidāya, XI, 118-119; and Shadharāt, II, 226.

³¹⁴ A manuscript of the work is fortunately extant under the title *Kitāb al-ʿArsh wa Mā Ruwiya Fīhi* (Zahirīya Library, Damascus, Ḥadīth no. 297, fol. 105b—119a [cf., GAS, I, 164, where the title is given as *Kitāb al-ʿArsh wa Mā Warada Fīhi*]). The sentence cited above by Ibn al-Jawzī is an exact quote of what appears near the bottom of fol. 106b of the manuscript. Whether this relatively short manuscript of *Kitāb al-ʿArsh* is the complete work or merely an abridgment of a longer original remains to be determined, however. Though undated, the evidence furnished by the manuscript would indicate that it was copied sometime in the early part of the 7th century A.H.

According to Turmidhi, the waters transmitters (vii., Aburn-Na regarded as a gloss (Turmidhi, man appears above in KAS (cf., also Markel, 286; and Tarrith Bughdi the following variant: (25) (cf., also approach Him with anything timed in DST, 60, n. 1]). For of Bughaqi, Asmar, 241, 4-5, 9-10, and

See Tirmidhi. than the al-Qui Anita ledited by H. Daiber with on 19, 20-21 (Arabic text. 116 foom 19, 20-21 (Arabic text. 116 foom 19, 20-21), where several ne Frank. Beings and their Attributes tenues concerning the origin of the second of

That is, it is to be taken as a manufactured by a Companion (cf., Bay to see that the second second by Hanbalis, his communicate again, suggest that there are of revelation in ways that he that is a communicate again.

do not approach Him with the like of what proceeded from Him (kharaja minhu), namely the Quran." ³¹⁵

170 In a tradition reported by 'Uthmān, the Prophet said: "The superiority of the Quran to other forms of speech is comparable to God's superiority over His creatures, for the Quran proceeded from Him (*minhu kharaja*) and will return to Him." The point of the saying is that the Quran has come (*waṣala*) to us from Him (*min 'indahu*) and will return to Him again; moreover, [the saying] is to be taken as resting on the authority of the Prophet. The saying is to be taken as resting on the authority of the Prophet.

at the end were added to the *matn* by one of its transmitters (*viz.*, Abūʾn-Naḍr Hāshim b. Qays al-Kinānī [d. 207/822]) and are to be regarded as a gloss (Tirmidhī, *thawāb al-Qurʾān*, 17). In addition to Tirmidhī, the *matn* as it appears above in *KAS* (cf., also §237) is found in *DST*, 60; *BA*, fol. 32b; Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 286; and *Taʾrīkh Baghdād*, VII, 88, 19-21. In his *al-Jāmiʿ al-Kabīr*, Suyūṭī cites the following variant: من أخرج منه ([God's] servants do not approach Him with anything more pleasing to Him than what proceeded from Him [cited in *DST*, 60, n. 1]). For other variations on the tradition, see *Musnad*, VI, 256; Bayhaqī, *Asmā*², 241, 4-5, 9-10, and 236, 13-14.

³¹⁶ See Tirmidhī, thawāb al-Qur³ān, 25; Dārimī, fadāʾil al-Qur³ān, 6 (2); Ibn Qudāma, ʿAqīda (edited by H. Daiber with commentary) in Studia Arabica et Islamica (Beirut 1981), 109, 20-21 (Arabic text; 116 [commentary]); Ibn Fūrak, Mushkil, 288, 6-7; and Bayhaqī, Asmāʾ, 237-239, where several nearly identical versions of the tradition are cited; also R. Frank, Beings and their Attributes (Albany 1978), 9 and n. 2. For a detailed study of early debates concerning the origin of the Quran and the significance of the expression خرج منه, see Madelung, "Origins of the Controversy Concerning the Creation of the Koran" in Orientalia Hispanica sive studia F. M. Pareja octogenario dicata, 513-516. Madelung suggests that the saying was an attempt by early (pre-mihna) traditionalists to counter the Muʿtazilī (and earlier Jahmī) claim that the Quran was created outside God (خلق في غير) and separate from Him since His essence is beyond change. Sunnī traditionalists, by contrast, maintained that the Quran enjoys a special relationship to the divine essence, for "it proceeded from Him and will return to Him." Hence, by virtue of its divine source, the Quran stands apart from the world of created things. Even though the Quran is not God it is qualitatively different from those entities that make up the created order.

That is, it is to be taken as $marf\bar{u}^c$, viz, a tradition going back to the Prophet and reported by a Companion (cf., Bayhaqī, $Asm\bar{a}^o$, 237, 15, 20; 238, 19; and 239, 8). Even though Ibn al-Jawzī does not indicate here how the two sayings of this section were construed by Ḥanbalīs, his comments in §237, where he cites the tradition from Abū Umāma again, suggest that there was a tendency in Ḥanbalī circles to understand the process of revelation in ways that had anthropomorphic implications. In §237 he comments on the خرج منه as follows: المعنى ظهر عنه ولا يجوز أن يظنُ أنّه خروج جسم من جسم لأنّ الله عزّ وجلّ

The Thirty-Third Tradition

171 Abū Hurayra reported that the Messenger of God said: "God recited [the surahs] $T\bar{a}^{\nu}H\bar{a}^{\nu}$ and $Y\bar{a}^{\nu}S\bar{i}n$ for a thousand years before He created Adam." When the angels heard [the recitation of these surahs from] the Quran, they said: 'Blessed be the community to whom these words shall be revealed; blessed be the hearts that shall memorize them and the tongues that shall recite them." ³¹⁹

172 This tradition, which Ibrāhīm b. Muhājir 320 transmitted from 'Umar b. Ḥafṣ 321 is apocryphal ($mawd\bar{u}$). Ibn 'Adī remarked that among the traditions

means that it became manifest from Him, but one should not suppose that it was like the going out of one body from another, for God is not a body nor is His word a body). Ibn al-Jawzī's paraphrase of the tradition in the last sentence of §170 seems to accent the destination of revelation (its reception by humankind) as opposed to the Quran's origins, though without neglecting entirely the question of origin. It is worth noting, however, that the origin of revelation is no longer described as a "going out" but rather as an "arriving to...from..." (وصل إلينا من عنده). The terminology and word order of this sentence does seem to indicate a shift of emphasis away from origin (and particularly a literalistic conception of origin) to an emphasis on reception. For a more detailed discussion of the theological implications of the two sayings of this section, see Ibn Fūrak, Mushkil, 286-289. There is little, if anything, in Ibn Fūrak's discussion that Ibn al-Jawzī would have objected to. For a Ḥanbalī perspective on the question of the Quran's eternity, see Arberry, "A Hanbalite Tract on the Eternity of the Quran," Islamic Culture, III (1956), 23ff.

reported by this Ibrāhim non than this one, for he was Hafs]. Bukhārī himself po authority whose traditions fa in their entirety (munkar al-leadit "We burn his traditions! reported by him] are not to he set aside (matrūk al-hadī Hībbān said: "The text (matrī

The

173 In the Sahihs of Bukhārī Abū Hurayra that the Prophe of humankind, kinship (rahi nefuge from the severing [of I you not pleased that I strengthose who weaken you?" 127

³¹⁸ The surahs in question are 20 and 36, respectively.

³¹⁹ In addition to *DST*, 61; and *BA*, 32b; see also, Bayhaqī, *Asmā*, 232, 8-11; Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 289, 11-12; *Kitāb al-Mawdū* āt, I, 109, 2-5; and al-Ghazzālī, *Iḥyā*, I, 273, 3-5. This *ḥadīth* is not to be found in any of the canonical collections. For a translation of the text of the saying, see Madelung, "Origins of the Controversy Concerning the Creation of the Koran" in *Orientalia Hispanica sive studia F. M. Pareja octogenario dicata*, 515.

³²⁰ Ibrāhīm b. Muhājir b. Mismār, a Medinese traditionist who, according to Madelung, flourished during the first half of the 2nd/8th century (Madelung, "Origin," 515, n. 2). This dating, however, seems too early since in several sources (including *KAS*) Ibrāhīm is said to have studied *ḥadīth* under 'Umar b. Ḥafṣ b. Dhakwān who, according to al-Khaṭīb, died in 198/813 (*Taʾrīkh Baghdād*, XI, 192-194). It seems more likely that Ibrāhīm belongs to the late 8th century (or perhaps early 9th). The only two notices I have found on him (Ibn al-Jawzī's *KDM*, I, 54-55; and Dhahabī's *Mīzān*, I, 67) focus almost entirely on his work as a traditionist and provide virtually no information on the details of his life.

³²¹ Cumar b. Ḥafṣ b. Dhakwān Abū Ḥafṣ al-ʿAbdī, a native of Basra who settled in Baghdad and died there in 198/813. The sources are virtually unanimous in declaring him to be unreliable in matters of ḥadīth. For notices on him, see Ibn Saʿd, VII, 344; Ṭarīkh

Marie XI. 192-194: KDM, IL 3

A manufact tradition is one that authority whose reputation is insuff E^g. III. 26bt. Dozy, II. 722/2; cf., G

E a mansmitter is classified as a EF. III. 266.

Or "we tear them up" (e.g., Ta

See Torrith Boghdad, XL 193

The A tradition designated as ma

transmitter who is suspected of guilty of much carelessness or free

CE. Minin, I, 67. Although Ibn imaid, it is likely that his real objects what this was. He may have found interpomorphist implications I troub it in Quart's pre-eternity, which se was a problem for him, he was not the lakeling, "Origins," 523-5251.

Literally, "I join (or unite) those "Among the numerous citarions

reported by this Ibrāhīm none fits the definition of a *munkar* tradition better than this one, for he was the only one to transmit it [from 'Umar b. Ḥafṣ]. ³²² Bukhārī himself pointed out that Ibrāhīm b. Muhājir was a weak authority whose traditions fall into the class of those that are to be rejected in their entirety (*munkar al-ḥadīth*). ³²³ Of 'Umar b. Ḥafṣ, Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal said: "We burn his traditions!" ³²⁴ Yaḥyā b. Ma'īn maintained [that traditions reported by him] are not to be trusted. Nasā'ī said that his traditions are to be set aside (*matrūk al-ḥadīth*). ³²⁵ Finally, the traditionist Abū Ḥātim b. Ḥibbān said: "The text (*matn*) of this tradition is a fabrication (*mawdū*')." ³²⁶

The Thirty-Fourth Tradition

173 In the Ṣaḥīḥṣ of Bukhārī and Muslim it is reported on the authority of Abū Hurayra that the Prophet said: "When God had completed the creation of humankind, kinship (raḥim) stood up and said: 'This is the place of refuge from the severing [of kinship ties]!' [God] replied: 'Yes indeed! Are you not pleased that I strengthen those who strengthen you and weaken those who weaken you?'" 327 In another tradition recorded by Bukhārī, the

Baghdād, XI, 192-194; KDM, II, 206; and Mīzān, III, 189-190.

³²² A *munkar* tradition is one that is objectionable because it is transmitted by a single authority whose reputation is insufficient to offset the fact of his being its only transmitter (*El*², III, 26b; Dozy, II, 722/2; cf., Guillaume, *Traditions of Islam*, 181).

³²³ If a transmitter is classfied as *munkar al-ḥadīth*, all of his traditions are to be rejected (cf., EI^2 , III, 26b).

³²⁴ Or "we tear them up" (e.g., *Ta'rīkh Baghdād*, XI, 193).

³²⁵ See $Ta^{3}r\bar{t}kh$ $Baghd\bar{a}d$, XI, 193, where the same charge is levelled against ^cUmar b. Ḥafṣ. A tradition designated as $matr\bar{u}k$ is to be "abandoned" because it comes from "a single transmitter who is suspected of falsehood..., or is openly wicked in deed or word or is guilty of much carelessness or frequent wrong notions" (EI^{2} , III, 26b).

 $^{^{326}}$ Cf., $M\bar{\imath}z\bar{a}n$, I, 67. Although Ibn al-Jawzī's discussion of this tradition is limited to its $isn\bar{a}d$, it is likely that his real objection had to do with its matn, though he does not tell us what this was. He may have found the portrayal of God as reciting the Quran (with its anthropomorphist implications) troubling, but he also may have been troubled by the notion of the Quran's pre-eternity, which seems to be at least implied in the tradition. If this latter was a problem for him, he was not the only Ḥanbalī to be exercised over this question (cf., Madelung, "Origins," 523-525).

³²⁷ Literally, "I join (or unite) those who join (or unite) you and I sever those who sever you." Among the numerous citations of this tradition, see esp., Muslim, *al-birr wa*²*ṣ-ṣila*,

up and seized the loin of Ro

the severing of kinship ties

meaning we have already a

the lain of Rabmän also or

request for aid (intidre) as

tradition in the two Salahs

Mustim is suspended (musi-

Those who strengthen me. (

me. God will weaken the

fluory) is equated with loin

tratom's attachment to God's

protection of God's power

and that rotion actually amar

mile land for the Ouran st

This man is

we resemble of someone's "si

and it is reported in a tra

tear enough as to be

men further (in his commen me reference to God's loin and m organ or than He is a

han does not imply bodily

Building, spirit al-Charles, 57,

CL. By Flesk, Musel, NO.

Cl. see Lude, 32V, 189, 10

to the Get pive it migh

II negtur improc.

war brainst and her

الرح بعزاما الطعا التاسا

14.00 St. See LOS. |61, Say 1

"Topic or head his group

in this of pay on 8" II.

No. (1997 365 145)

I'm the Hamid said: "It is

176 Since [the above] say

Prophet is reported to have said: "The term kinship (*raḥim*) is derived from the same root (*shajna*) as the term *Raḥmān* (the All-Merciful)." ³²⁸

174 Abū 'Ubayd states that the term *shajna*, also pronounced *shujna* [or *shijna*], denotes the branches of a tree. [fol.34b] In the above tradition, then, the term *shajna* refers to an intimate relationship of interconnection like the roots and branches of a tree that are intertwined with each other.³²⁹

that God shows special regard for kinship (raḥim); and so He strengthens those who strengthen it, weakens those who weaken it, and sees to it that its rights are respected—in the same way that one shows special regard for one's kinfolk over those to whom one is not related by blood. Or it may mean that the term raḥim is derived from [the same root as] the name Raḥmān, as if to emphasize [raḥim's] importance by calling attention to the derivation of the term. This latter interpretation is supported by a tradition in which 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. 'Awf reports, on the authority of the Prophet, that God said: "I am Raḥmān! I have created raḥim and have derived its name from mine. Hence those who strengthen it, I will strengthen them, and those who sever it, I will scatter them." In another tradition, not cited in the canonical collections, the following words are found: "Raḥim is a branch (shajna) which is joined to the loin (haqw) of Raḥmān." A variant of this tradition reads: "When God created humankind, raḥim stood

^{16;} Bukhārī, *tafsīr al-Qur³ān*, 47 (*Les traditions*, III, 445); *adab*, 13 (*Les traditions*, IV, 143-144); *tawḥīd*, 35 (*Les traditions*, IV, 624); *Musnad*, II, 330, 383, 406; Bayhaqī, *Asmā*², 368-369; and Graham, *Divine Word*, 134ff. Cf., also Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 301-303, where several related traditions are cited and discussed.

عن أبي هريرة عن النبيّ قال: إنّ الرحم شجنة :The tradition in Bukhārī (adab, 13 [2]) reads: عن أبي هريرة عن النبيّ قال: إنّ الرحم شجنة .Cf., also Tirmidhī, al-birr wa'ṣ-ṣila, 16; Musnad, I, 190, 321; II, 160, 295, 383, 406, 455; and Bayhaqī, Asmā², 370, 8-13; also Ibn Fūrak, Mushkil, 301; and Graham, Divine Word, 135.

³²⁹ On the Kufan grammarian Abū 'Ubayd al-Qāsim b. Sallām (d. 224/838), see *El*², I, 157. See also Ibn al-Jawzī, *Gharīb al-Ḥadīth*, I, 523, where Abū 'Ubayd's comments on *shajna/shujna* are cited.

³³⁰ For this tradition, see Abū Dāwūd, *zakāt*, 45; *Musnad*, I, 191, 194; II, 160, 498; Tirmidhī, *al-birr wa'ṣ-ṣila*, 9; Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 301; Bayhaqī, *Asmā*², 370; and Graham, *Divine Word*, 134.

³³¹ DST, 62; Bayhaqī, Asmā², 368, 369; and Ibn Fūrak, Mushkil, 301.

up and seized the loin of $Rahm\bar{a}n$ and said: 'This is the place of refuge from the severing [of kinship ties].'"³³²

176 Since [the above] sayings contain figures of speech ($amth\bar{a}l$), whose meaning we have already explained, the reference to [rahim's] clinging to the loin of $Rahm\bar{a}n$ also ought to be construed [metaphorically], viz., as a request for aid ($istij\bar{a}ra$) and protection ($it'is\bar{a}m$). This is born out by a tradition in the two $Sah\bar{h}s$ in which $Sah\bar{a}s$ reports that the Prophet said: "Rahim is suspended (mu'allaqa) from the throne (Sash), and it says: 'Those who strengthen me, God will strengthen them, and those who weaken me, God will weaken them.'" Abū Bakr al-Bayhaqī said: "The loin (Sasham) is equated with loin cloth (Sasham) hence the tradition [referring to Sasham) attachment to God's loin] means that it is attached to [or seeks the protection of] God's power (Sasham)."

177 Ibn Ḥāmid said: "It is essential to affirm that God does have a loin and that *raḥim* actually attaches itself to it. We also believe that God has a side (*janb*), for the Quran states: 'Alas for me, for I have neglected God's side (*janb*)." This man is utterly bereft of understanding! How can one be neglectful of someone's "side"? He then went on to maintain that attachment (*taʿalluq*) implies proximity and even contact (*mumāssa*) with [God's] loin, since it is reported in a tradition that God permitted [fol.35a] David to draw near enough as to be able to touch a part of Him. The Qāḍi went even further [in his commentary] on this saying, but he added the caveat: [the reference to God's loin] does not mean that He [literally] possesses such an organ or that He is made up of parts; *raḥim's* taking hold of [God's loin] does not imply bodily organs or a multiplicity of parts, nor does it

³³² Bukhārī, tafsīr al-Qur³ān, 47.

³³³ Cf., Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 302, 1-3, 11-12; and Bayhaqi, *Asmā*², 369, 6-8.

 $^{^{334}}$ Muslim, $al\text{-}birr\ wa^3$ ṣ-ṣila, 17; Musnad, II, 163, 190, 193, 209; and Bayhaqī, $Asm\bar{a}^2$, 369. Cf., also $Lis\bar{a}n$, XIV, 189, 10.

³³⁵ A metaphor for power.

 $^{^{336}}$ In short, God's power or might is the place of refuge from the severing of kinship ties (rahim). Ibn al-Jawzī's "quote" here is actually a paraphrase of al-Bayhaqī's statement. The full text reads: وقيل: الحقو الإزار وإزاره عزّه بمعنى أنّه موصوف بالعزّ فلاذت الرحم بعزّه من القطيعة ($Asm\bar{a}^{o}$, 369, 8-9).

³³⁷ S. 39: 56. See KAS, §61, for more on this verse and its "proper" interpretation.

 $^{^{338}}$ I have not found this saying cited elsewhere. For more on Dāwūd and his place in Muslim belief and piety, see EI^2 , II, 182.

imply union (ittiṣāl) or contact (mumāssa). [Abū Yaʿlā] then went on to contradict these confused comments by adding: "The expression raḥim (kinship) is an ellipsis that stands for dhū'r-raḥim (one devoted to kinship);³³⁹ it is [raḥim] who clings to the loin of Raḥmān. [Thus, in the text of the tradition] the governing word (muḍāf) of the construct phrase is suppressed and the object of the phrase (muḍāf ilayhi) stands by itself, for it makes no sense to attribute an act of 'clinging to' or 'attaching oneself to' (taʿalluq) raḥim. Rather, what is meant is that the person devoted to kinship (dhū'r-raḥim) attaches himself to the loin [of God]."³⁴⁰

178 [The net result of Abū Yaʻlā's approach] is to give added weight to anthropomorphic and corporealist interpretations [of the tradition]. Discussion with such persons is useless, for as the saying goes: "Without reason (^{c}aql) there can be no meeting [of minds] ($qir\bar{a}n$)." If the one possessing rahim—being a body (jism)—is attached ($ta^{c}alluq$), then to what is it attached? ³⁴¹ We seek God's protection against errors of understanding!

The Thirty-Fifth Tradition

179 In his $\frac{\dot{S}ah\bar{i}h}{\dot{r}}$, Muslim reports [from Abū Hurayra] that the Prophet said: "God says: 'Invincible power (al- ^{c}izz) is My loin cloth ($iz\bar{a}r\bar{i}$) and majesty (al- $kibriy\bar{a}$) is My cloak ($rid\bar{a}$ $^{\bar{i}}$). Whoever challenges Me in respect of either of them, him will I punish."

180 Abū Sulaymān al-Khaṭṭābī said: "This saying means that majesty $(kibriy\bar{a}^2)$ and power (^cazama) are attributes unique to God. No one is comparable to God in respect of these qualities. It is not appropriate for

mystee to presume to posse modesty and self-abasemen are used above as figures of emphasize that just as no o day no creature may share i

authority of Abū Hurayra, mesent [fol.35b] when My s to memions Me; if he memion in My soul (fi nafsi), memion him before an even tendstreach (shibr), I will to tizzws near to Me by an authority, and if he comes Mc The Quid [Abū Ya/lā] to an authority of an innovator (memis); no distinction is to

See Buchārt, as-bid, 15, 3 as S In Ib. also 19 and Dit and ue lie Mily, adoit, 58: Ton STM, SUT 524, 534, 539; III. 218. are found in Ba Im Crymyma, Towtid. ___ I - and Graham, Divisi the less part of this saying is creed. The statement amplituded to A wall in the light of §44 where the فلتاد وهذا قول لا يستند الا عاصا بوجب أنَّ القَانَ تَدرَ * وَالنَّضِي الْ and a standard over and above mention. For it assumes that [Go an from it). To affirm that so mercine is reparate from the divi at anthropomorphis or of

³³⁹ Literally, "the one possessing *raḥim*" which I take to mean: the one devoted to filial ties or virtues.

³⁴⁰ In the sense of taking refuge in, or seeking the protection of. One of Ibn al-Jawzī's problems with this kind of analysis is that it does not tackle the central problem of the tradition, viz., the question of the loin.

³⁴¹ Despite Abū Ya^clā's grammatical analysis of the saying, the central problem remains: what is to be made of the reference to the loin?

³⁴² The tradition may be found in the following in substantially the same form cited by Ibn al-Jawzī: Muslim, *al-birr wa'ṣ-ṣila*, 136; Abū Dāwūd, *libās*, 28; Ibn Māja, *zuhd*, 16 (2, 3); *Musnad*, II, 248, 376, 414, 427, 442; VI, 19; and Munāwī, *Itḥāfāt*, 45 (90-92). Also see Bayhaqī, *Asmā*², 133, 12-13; 138, 21-22; Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 316; and Graham, *Divine Word*, 162-163. Most versions of this tradition are traced back to Abū Hurayra.

anyone to presume to possess them, for the qualities befitting a creature are modesty and self-abasement. The terms cloak $(rid\bar{a}^2)$ and loin cloth $(iz\bar{a}r)$ are used above as figures of speech (mathalan) and, as such, were meant to emphasize that just as no one may share [God's] 'cloak' or 'loin cloth' so also no creature may share in His majesty or power."

The Thirty-Sixth Tradition

181 In the Ṣaḥāḥs of Bukhārī and Muslim there is a tradition, cited on the authority of Abū Hurayra, in which the Prophet says: "God said: 'I am present [fol.35b] when My servant thinks of Me and I am with him whenever he mentions Me; if he mentions Me in his soul ($f\bar{\imath}$ nafsihi), I will mention him in My soul ($f\bar{\imath}$ nafs $\bar{\imath}$). If he mentions Me before an assembly, I will mention him before an even better assembly. If he draws near to Me by a handsbreadth (shibr), I will draw near to him by an arm's length ($dir\bar{\alpha}^c$); if he draws near to Me by an arm's length, I will draw near to him by a fathom ($b\bar{\alpha}^c$); and if he comes to Me walking, I will come to him running." 343

182 The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{i}$ [Abū Yaʻlā] maintained that God has a soul (nafs) and that it is an attribute over and above His essence ($z\bar{a}$ 'ida ʻalā'dh-dhāt). These are the words of an innovator (mubtadi') and reflect an anthropomorphist stance ($tashb\bar{i}h$); no distinction is to be made between God's $dh\bar{a}t$ and His nafs. ³⁴⁴

³⁴³ See Bukhārī, *tawḥīd*, 15, 3 (Houdas, *Les traditions*, IV, 588); Muslim, *dhikr wa du*^cā², 2a, 2b, also 19 and 20; and Muslim, *tawba*, 1. For other references to this tradition, see Ibn Māja, *adab*, 58; Tirmidhī, *da*^c*awāt*, 31; *Musnad*, II, 251, 315, 391, 413, 445, 480, 516, 517, 524, 534, 539; III, 210, 277, 491; and IV, 106. Other references to this tradition, with commentary, are found in Bayhaqī, *Asmā*², 457ff.; Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 222-223 and 317-322; Ibn Khyzayma, *Tawḥīd*, 7; Qushayrī, *Risāla*, 322; Ibn Qutayba, *Ta*²*wīl*, 284 (cf., Lecomte, 249); and Graham, *Divine Word*, 127-128. Cf., also *KAS*, §§33/6 and 222 where the last part of this saying is cited.

³⁴⁴ The statement attributed to Abū Yaʻlā and Ibn al-Jawzī's comments above should be read in the light of §44 where the meaning of the expression وقد ذهب القاضي على أنّ لله نفسًا وهي صفة زائدة على ذاته. قلت: وهذا قول لا يستند إلا 'The Qāḍī [Abū Yaʻlā] held that God's nafs is an attribute over and above His essence. But this view is derivative of a corporealist perspective, for it assumes that [God's] essence is a 'thing' and that [His] nafs is something distinct from it). To affirm that something is زائدة على الذات so assert that the thing in question is separate from the divine essence, which for Ibn al-Jawzī is tantamount to adopting an anthropomorphist or corporealist stance since it introduces multiplicity into the

The

There is no reason not to accept the interpretation referred to above in connection with our discussion of the verses of the Quran.³⁴⁵ Expressions such as "drawing near" (*qurb*) and "running" (*harwala*) occur frequently in Arabic, as e.g., in the Quranic verse where it speaks of "...those who 'march' against our signs [so as to thwart them]."³⁴⁶ It is clearly not a question of literal or physical movement (*mashy*).³⁴⁷

The Thirty-Seventh Tradition

183 Abū Sa^cīd [al-Khudrī] reported a tradition in which the Prophet said: "God is beautiful ($jam\bar{\imath}l$) and He loves beauty ($jam\bar{a}l$)." ³⁴⁸

184 According to the experts (${}^{c}ulam\bar{a}^{p}$), the term $jam\bar{\imath}l$ here has the special sense of mujmil, viz., one whose beauty is expressed in his actions. [When applied to God, it refers to] His creation of beauty of form ($s\bar{\imath}ura$), of character ($akhl\bar{a}q$), and of deeds ($ihs\bar{a}n$). ³⁴⁹ One judges to be beautiful

being of God. See *Mushkil*, 319-320, where Ibn Fūrak argues that the term *nafs*, when applied to God, must be construed as being identical with the divine essence. On the question of the *nafs*, see El^2 , VII, 880-884; and Lane, 2827/1-2828/2.

³⁴⁹ Cf., Lane, 461/1; Bayhaqi, Asmā², 42; and Ibn Fūrak, Mushkil, 330, 10ff., where he insists that jamīl here must be understood in the sense of mujmil. He writes: إنّ أهل اللغة قد اللفظ من فعيل على معنى مُفعل كوصفنا الله جلّ ذكره بأنّه حكيم والمراد به مُحكم لما فعله، وكذلك يجوز أن يقال: الله تعالى جميل بعنى مُجمل وإجماله المضاف إليه على وجهين: أحدهما أن يكون يحسن الصور والخلق الوجه الثاني من الإجمال المضاف إلى الله عز وجلٌ وهو بمعنى (Lexicographers sometimes use expressions of

The (Jadi [Abū Ya'lā's] exp with the notion of divine [describe God as beautiful a divine essence itself; the exp and beauty (hum) referred in the most beautiful form (mathib) in its purest form.

The Quit [Abu Ya'la]

Aria: "When God has learning and Hell, He will of the angels." He will stop a the people of that level. After the you wish]! But they have of Your power. You were to divide [fol. 3]

The charts of from I are species to God as an arrive applied to God as an arrive appli

3 "the first level" is presum

The less notions once in the

teliera cresetes as meaning

³⁴⁵ See esp. §44, where Ibn al-Jawzī maintains that references to God's *nafs* in the Quran are to be construed as referring to his $dh\bar{a}t$ (essence).

³⁴⁶ S. 22: 51 and 34: 5.

³⁴⁷ Cf., Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 318, 10-16.

³⁴⁸ Lane (461/1) reads the last word of this saying as *jimāl* and translates it "and He loves those of like character." The standard *hadīth* collections, however, read it as *jamāl*, as does Ibn Manzūr (*Lisān*, XI, 126/2). For references to the saying, see Muslim, *īmān*, 147; and *Musnad*, IV, 133, 134, 151. The same text is cited by Ibn Manzūr in *Lisān*, XI, 126/1, 20-21; and Lane, 461/1, respectively, in their discussion of *jamīl*. Cf., also al-Ghazzālī, *Ihyā*, IV, 298; Bayhaqī, *Asmā*, 42; and Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 329. A slightly different version is found in Tirmidhī, *birr wa ṣila*, 61; and *Musnad*, I, 399. See Bayhaqī, *Asmā*, 41-42, 311-312; and especially Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 329-331, where the meaning of *jamīl* as applied to God is discussed in some detail. For other interpretations of the tradition, especially those offered by al-Ghazzālī and Ibn 'Arabī, see Ormsby, *Theodicy*, 104ff.

($jam\bar{\imath}l$) what is characterized by perfection and goodness ($t\bar{a}mma\,mustahsana$). The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{\imath}$ [Abū Yaʻlā's] explanation [of beauty], however, is not in keeping with the notion of divine [transcendence]. He said: "It is permissible to describe God as beautiful and to regard that quality as an attribute of the divine essence itself; the expression $jam\bar{a}l$ denotes that quality of perfection and beauty (husn) referred to by the Prophet when he said: 'I saw my Lord in the most beautiful form ($f\bar{\imath}\,ahsani\,s\bar{\imath}ratin$).'" This is anthropomorphism ($tashb\bar{\imath}h$) in its purest form. ³⁵⁰

The Thirty-Eighth Tradition

185 The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{i}$ [Abū Yaʻlā] reported the following from 'Umar b. 'Abd al-'Azīz: "When God has finished [deciding the fate of] the people of Paradise and Hell, He will come walking in the shadow of the clouds with the angels." He will stop at the first level [of Paradise] and will greet the people of that level. After being greeted by them He will say: 'Ask Me [what you wish]!' But they will respond: 'What shall we ask of You? Because of Your power, Your majesty, and Your exalted position ($mak\bar{a}n$), if You were to divide [fol. 36a] among us the provisions for both men and jinn (thaqalayn)³⁵³ we would give them to eat and drink, and what would

the fa^cil pattern [act. part. of form I] in the sense of the muf^cil pattern [act. part. of form IV] as, for example, when we refer to God as $hak\bar{\imath}m$ [wise or judicious] in the sense of muhhim [one who acts wisely or judiciously]. Thus it is permissible to speak of God as jamil [beautiful] in the sense of mujmil [one whose actions are beautiful or characterized by beauty]. Beauty of action $[ijm\bar{\imath}ml]$ may be predicated of God in one of two senses: 1) in the sense of producing beautiful forms and qualities, or 2) in the sense of doing deeds of goodness and generosity). Ibn Fūrak's point is that jamil, when applied to God, is an attribute of action (fi^cl) , not of essence $(dh\bar{\imath}ml)$. This is precisely the point Ibn al-Jawzī insists on above.

³⁵⁰ Following an Ash arite line of reasoning, Ibn al-Jawzī emphatically denies that *jamīl* can be applied to God as an attribute of the divine essence (cf., Ibn Fūrak, 329, 12, and 331, 5). When applied to God it can only be one of the *ṣifāt al-fī* (attributes of action).

³⁵¹ An allusion to S. 2: 210 ("What, do they expect that God will come to them in the shadow of the clouds with the angels?"). For a discussion of this verse, see $Z\bar{a}d$ al- $Mas\bar{\iota}r$, I, 225-229; Tabarī, $Tafs\bar{\iota}r$, IV, 260-274; and Zamakhsharī, $Kashsh\bar{a}f$, I, 353-354 (cf., §64).

³⁵² By "the first level" is presumably meant "the lowest level or rank."

 $^{^{353}}$ The term occurs once in the Quran in its dual form (S. 55: 31) and is regarded by most medieval exegetes as meaning "humankind and the jinn" (cf., Zamakhsharī, $Kashsh\bar{a}f$,

TRADETRONS CO

A what is reported to

I about the place of

The Ambie engression ma

The town of occur in a num

as a reference to the Prophet's

The in two of this interpreta

and the concede hove

Minhid (d. ca. 1/4/722

the latter of the latter on the

the second and the late 9th cer man 1. Furthel and made into 1

Compact of 175 888 Later it.

an amount in support of the vi-

and the second struck

mil Dr. Kathir Bullion, XI, 174, F

meetic or Resental's into

Service Santal's who are

and the second section of the second section of the second section of the section

Clearly this was an issue a

and rectum significant that the i

the case of the Quillette. So for as

was the less prominent

The mapping of the mapping

three. The union, reported by

The section is

mer tied AUSD to Sellier, according

"See DOT 95, and 81, 55, 339

to the mid-12th century to

major majorial is a referen

ed me that I would s

remain with us would not be decreased.' He will reply: 'So make your request!' They will answer: 'We ask for Your acceptance $(rid\bar{a})$.' He will respond: 'It is because of My acceptance that you will be invited to dwell in the house of My honor.' [God] will do this to the people of each rank [among the people of Paradise] until He reaches His court ($il\bar{a}$ majlisihi)."³⁵⁴

186 This tradition is a fabrication placed in the mouth of 'Umar. [But even if it were to be accepted as one of 'Umar's sayings], how would it be possible to establish a divine attribute on the basis of what 'Umar said? Ibn Ḥāmid said: "On the day of resurrection He will *come* to the place of judgment (maḥshar), for [the Quran] says 'Your Lord will come...,'355 [that is,] at the time of His descent to [the nearest] heaven." The Qāḍī [Abū Ya'lā] said: "The verse 'God will come to them in the shadow of the clouds' 356 is a confirmation of what 'Umar said." [Abū Ya'lā], however, did not understand that this verse means that God will bring them the shadow [of the clouds as protection]. [Abū Ya'lā] went on to say: "It is possible to take the text [of 'Umar's saying] in its literal sense ('alā zāhirihi) though we do not construe His walking (mashyahu) and His arrival at His court to mean movement (intiqāl)." How can a person who says he interprets these terms in a literal fashion turn around and say "but not in the sense of movement"? He added this

IV, 47, e.g. Also see Paret, *Der Koran* [translation], 447, and note 14; and *Les traditions*, I, 431). For a summary of the meanings of the term *thaqal*, see Lane 344/2.

³⁵⁴ See DST, 64, where the saying is quoted in full. Although Ibn al-Jawzī cites Abū Yaʿlā as his source, the saying does not appear in the Muʿtamad. Indeed, apart from Ibn Fūrak, where the middle portion of the saying is cited in a slightly different form (Mushkil, 334, 3-4), I have so far not found it cited elsewhere. The saying as quoted by Ibn Fūrak reads: إِنَّ اللّه يَشِي فِي ظَلَلُ مِن الغمام والملائكة ويقف على أدنى أهل الجنّة درجةً، فيسلّم عليهم (God will come walking in the shadow of the clouds and will stop at the lowest rank of the people of Paradise. He will greet them and they will reciprocate the greeting whereupon He will return to His 'Place').

³⁵⁵ S. 6: 158 (cf., also 9: 24). On 6: 158, see *Zād al-Masīr*, III, 156; Zamakhsharī. *Kashshāf*, II, 63. Cf., also *KAS*, §64.

³⁵⁶ S. 2: 210.

 $^{^{357}}$ As he explains elsewhere (see, e.g., §64; also $Z\bar{a}d$ al-Mas $\bar{i}r$, I, 226), $f\bar{i}$ in this verse carries the force of the preposition bi so that the verse should be construed as meaning: God will bring them the shadow (bi-zulal) of the clouds as an act of mercy, not that God will come to them literally in the shadow. In the former sense God is portrayed as exercising His power; in the latter He is portrayed as engaging in an act of movement.

qualification merely to please the uninformed, for how can walking (mashy) [taken in its literal sense] mean anything other than movement $(intiq\bar{a}l)$?

The Thirty-Ninth Tradition

187 'Ā'isha is reported to have said: "When The Messenger of God was asked about 'the place of honor' $(maq\bar{a}m\ mahm\bar{u}d)$," he said: 'My Lord promised me that I would sit on the Throne ('arsh)." 359

³⁵⁸ The Arabic expression maqām maḥmūd appears only once in the Quran (S. 17: 79); it does, however, occur in a number of traditions (e.g., Musnad, I, 398; III, 456; Dārimī, riqāq, 80; and Bukhārī, tafsīr, 17, 11). Sunnīs generally seem to have regarded the expression as a reference to the Prophet's role as intercessor for the Community on the day of judgment. In a lengthy discussion of the expression in his Tafsīr (XV, 97-100), Ṭabarī argues in favor of this interpretation and cites a long list of authorities in support of this view. Ţabarī does concede, however, that the alternative view set forth by the first-century exegete, Mujahid (d. ca. 104/722), cannot be dismissed entirely. Mujāhid had argued that the maqām maḥmūd is a reference to the fact that on the day of judgment God will invite the Prophet to sit with Him on the Throne ('arsh). Mujāhid's interpretation apparently won little support until the late 9th century when it was taken over by some of the disciples of Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal and made into a kind of Ḥanbalī slogan, despite Aḥmad's silence on the question. The first Ḥanbalī known to have defended the view of Mujāhid was Abū Bakr al-Marwazī (d. 275/888). Later it was taken up by Barbahārī (d. 329/941) who organized a virtual crusade in support of the view, leading to a series of public demonstrations in which Țabarī himself came under attack (Yāqūt, Irshād, VI, 242-243; Muntazam, VI, 159, 172; and Ibn Kathīr, Bidāya, XI, 174. For an interesting account of Tabarī's involvement in this controversy, see Rosenthal's introduction to his translation of Tabari's Ta'rīkh [vol. I, 69-78]). Other Hanbalīs who are known to have defended the view of Mujāhid are Abū Bakr an-Najjād (d. 348/960), Ibn Baṭṭa (d. 387/997), Ibn Ḥāmid (d. 403/1012), and (according to Ibn al-Jawzī) Abū Ya'lā (d. 458/1065). Ibn Abī Ya'la reports that Barbahārī never gave a lecture without making reference to the maqām maḥmūd (Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila, II, 43, 20-21). Clearly this was an issue about which some Hanbalīs felt deeply. It is interesting and perhaps significant that the issue appears to have been dropped from the Hanbalī agenda by the mid-12th century (cf., Laoust, La Profession de foi d'Ibn Batta, exxxiv, on the case of Ibn Qudāma). So far as I have been able to determine 'Abd al-Qādir al-Jīlānī (d. 561/1165) was the last prominent Ḥanbalī of the 12th century to take up a defense of the old Ḥanbalī position on the maqām maḥmūd (Ghunya, I, 71-72).

³⁵⁹ See *DST*, 66, and *BA*, fol. 33b, where the saying is cited, in both cases traced back to 'Ā'isha. The saying, reported by 'Ā'isha, is also cited by 'Abd al-Qādir al-Jīlānī in his *Ghunya*, I, 71-72. 'Abd al-Qādir also quotes another saying, attributed to 'Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb and 'Abd Allāh b. Sallām, according to which God will have the Prophet seated in front of

188 This saying does not, in fact, go back to the Prophet. However, Ibn Ḥāmid [who regarded it as sound] said: "One must believe that contact with (mumāssa) and nearness to God (qurb min al-ḥaqq) are entailed in [God's] asking the Prophet to sit on his Throne, for Ibn 'Umar pointed out in connection with the verse 'God is near to us and an excellent refuge' that the nearness [to God] mentioned here is such that [when the Prophet sits on the Throne] he will actually touch a part of Him." Ibn 'Umar, however, never said such a thing. Those who believe that the divine essence is made up of parts (tab'īḍ) have, in effect, declared the consensus [of the 'ulamā' on this question] to be false.

189 The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{i}$ [Abū Yaʻlā] said: "[The saying] 'God will ask his Prophet to sit on His Throne' means that He will bring [the Prophet] near to Himself $(dh\bar{a}tihi)$ —[a possibility] indicated by the verse 'He was within two bows' length of Him' and supported by the comment of Ibn 'Abbās: 'There was a distance of only two bows' length between them'." The reference in the above verse, however, is to Gabriel, not to God. Those who declare that it is possible [fol.36b] [for a creature] to draw near to the divine essence also acknowledge the possibility of actual contact ($mul\bar{a}saqa$) with Him. The position advocated by the $Q\bar{a}d\bar{i}$, however, is tantamount to $tajs\bar{i}m$, pure and simple.

The Fortieth Tradition

190 Dāraquṭnī cited a tradition whose chain of authorities goes back through Abū Isḥāq and 'Abd Allāh b. Khalīfa to 'Umar who reported that a woman

more to the Messenger of G allow me to enter Paradis mained God and then adder amin when God occup 199 This tradition exists in at is cated with an isnail go Crear respectively, to the ! Federaling Tabaci / Turbir, V (S. 2: 255 (Zād al-)) of the sem tarted 17 some many E God's "lawsi eno The History league comprehends some maintain that the man timed in favor of the fire Empiral-Handris, L. 28. Market 177. 19. arte The Barra, 88, n. 2; for a Bellind, Long., 413-405). In his lease which of the three views the impression that h in the find or by Tabari, but noted and the formal resistance to the la The God's presentess and His o # 6/15. 1/ 1912-194, that the made and a soul of the question for The letter land and furst, see library TEL S 1: 255 ** For expons of this tradition Manual 300 Talk and Ibn Khuza Em. or Tabel, Telefr, V. 400. and the Hart L 22-23. See also C कार के क्षा जो किए ब्रे-विकास s red mile later | First as-Sinon pech - constant resember d males on the Cour and to have the same colors among them and Tables, Earlier, V. 400 and p. 1.

THE REST SERVICE

Him on His $kurs\bar{\imath}$ on the day of judgment. Cf., also KAS, §152, where the idea expressed in the above saying is mentioned and discussed briefly. In addition to the references cited in the preceding note, see also, $Tabaq\bar{a}t$ al-Hanabila, II, 10, 1ff.; and 43, 20-21, where the views of Abū Bakr an-Najjād and Barbahārī are reported and discussed (cf., Laoust, Profession, 113, n. 1; also EI^2 , I, 1039b; and Goldziher, Richtungen, 94). For Ash'arite and Mu'tazilite perspectives on the $maq\bar{a}m$ $mahm\bar{u}d$, see Ibn Fūrak, Mushkil, 339 and 391; and Zamakhsharī, $Kashsh\bar{a}f$, II, 462-463, respectively. Cf., also $Z\bar{a}d$ al- $Mas\bar{i}r$, V, 76, where Ibn al-Jawzī presents the two interpretations of the $maq\bar{a}m$ $mahm\bar{u}d$ but without indicating which one is to be preferred.

³⁶⁰ S. 38: 25 and 40. Cf., also S. 34: 37.

³⁶¹ S. 53: 9

³⁶² On the significance of form III of *laṣaqa*, see Ullmann, *Wörterbuch der Klassischen Arabischen Sprache*, II, pt. 1, 659/1, 666/2, and 670/1.

came to the Messenger of God and said to him: "Pray to God that He might allow me to enter Paradise!" [Upon hearing these words, the Prophet] praised God and then added: "His *kursī*³⁶³ encompasses the heavens and the earth; When God occupies his *kursī*] it creaks like a new saddle when ridden." ³⁶⁵

191 This tradition exists in a large number of different versions. Sometimes it is cited with an *isnād* going back through 'Abd Allāh b. Khalīfa³⁶⁶ and 'Umar, respectively, to the Messenger of God, and sometimes with an *isnād*

³⁶³ Following Tabarī (Tafsīr, V, 397-403), Ibn al-Jawzī states in his commentary on the āyat al-kursī (S. 2: 255 [Zād al-Masīr, I, 403, 2-4]) that exegetes differ over the meaning of the term kursī: 1) some maintain that it refers to God's knowledge ('ilm); thus when S. 2: 255 says that God's "kursī encompasses the heavens and the earth," it means, in effect, that His knowledge comprehends all things. 2) Some hold that it refers to God's footstool. 3) Finally, some maintain that the kursī is a synonym for 'arsh (throne). While Ṭabarī declares himself in favor of the first interpretation of the term, Hanbalīs, following Ahmad (cf., *Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila*, I, 28, 14-16), traditionally preferred the second (cf., e.g., the Mu^ctamad of Abū Ya^clā, 177, 19; al-Jīlānī's Ghunya, I, 56, 7-9; and Laoust, La Profession de foi d'Ibn Batta, 88, n. 2; for a non-Ḥanbalī, but still traditionalist, point of view, see Bayhaqī, Asmā², 403-405). In his commentary on the āyat al-kursī, Ibn al-Jawzī does not indicate which of the three views is to be preferred. Indeed, from remarks made below in §192, one has the impression that he personally inclined toward a fourth view not mentioned in the Zād or by Ṭabarī, but noted by Zamakhshari (Kashshāf, I, 385-386), viz., one that sees the Quranic reference to the kursī (and the 'arsh) as metaphorical language designed to express God's greatness and His power. In any case, it is clear from the discussion below in KAS, §§192-194, that the traditional Hanbalī view, indeed any view that smacks of literalism, is out of the question for Ibn al-Jawzī. For a similar approach to the question of the terms kursī and 'arsh, see Ibn Fūrak, Mushkil, 341-342, and 387-390 (cf., El², V, 509).

³⁶⁴ Cf., S. 2: 255.

³⁶⁵ For citations of this tradition in other works, see *DST*, 66; *BA*, fol. 34a; Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 389, 7-8; and Ibn Khuzayma, *Tawḥīd*, 106, 5-9. For similar or closely related texts, see Ṭabarī, *Tafsīr*, V, 400, 1-6; *Muʿtamad*, 177, 17-19; *Asmāʾ*, 403-404; and Ibn al-Jawzī's, '*Ilal*, I, 22-23. See also Gimaret, *Images*, 77, where still other references may be found. In spite of Ibn al-Jawzī's reference above to Dāraquṭnī, I have not found the saying in the latter's *Kitāb as-Sunan*; perhaps it is a question of his *Kitāb aṣ-Ṣifāt*.

³⁶⁶ An early Kufan transmitter about whom little is known; he is said to have received traditions from 'Umar and to have been regarded as a reliable transmitter by a number of 9th century scholars, among them: Ibn Ḥibbān, Ṭabarī, Ibn Māja, and others (*Mīzān*, II, 414; Ṭabarī, *Tafsīr*, V, 400 and n. 1). Although his dates are not given, he is identified as a member of the *tābi*rī generation.

going back through Abū Isḥāq³⁶⁷ and 'Abd Allāh b. Khalīfa but stopping with 'Umar. [In one such version] 'Umar [is reported to have] said: "When God sits on the *kursī* it is heard to creak like a camel's saddle." ³⁶⁸ According to Ibn Jarīr, ³⁶⁹ 'Abd Allāh b. Khalīfa reported [in still another version] that the Prophet said: "Verily [God's] *kursī* encompasses (*wasi'a*) the heavens and the earth; [when] He seats Himself upon it no part of it is left [unoccupied], not even a space the width of four fingers ³⁷⁰—and as he spoke these words he made a sign with his fingers and joined them—and verily [the *kursī*] creaks like a saddle on account of the load it must bear when ridden." ³⁷¹ According to Abū Bakr al-Marwazī, however, Ibn Khalīfa reported that the Messenger of God said: "The *kursī* is that upon which the Lord sits and no part of it remains [unoccupied] except a space the width of four fingers."

192 There is a conflict between the wording of this last version and that of the preceding one, a conflict that is a consequence of confusion and poor memory on the part of its transmitters. The preferred reading is: "No part of it remains [unoccupied], not even a space the width of four fingers." These words, however, should be taken to mean that God fills [the *kursī*] with his power ($^{c}azama$) and majesty (hayba). 372 In short, this text resorts to figurative language in order to impress [upon the consciousness the reality of] the Creator's majesty and power. The expressions "when He sits" ($idh\bar{a}$

ar and or "when He takes I miners, represent either an al mised upon what they presi Similarly, some have const on the Throne ('and on the Throne]. T utting on something so that t This is a characteristic of fin meaning of this tradition is attribute of God's being on th me only leave [fol.37a] the the words have any meaning reference to four [fingers] do s clearly anthropomorphic man er it entails the predi a not sound because it rests and Abū Bakr b. Mus that will be left for it would have been bem to the worship of God and not BE The Older [Abu Ya'la

300

³⁶⁷ cAmr b. cAbd Allāh b. cAlī Abū Isḥāq as-Sabīcī, a respected Kufan transmitter who died in 128/745 or in 130/747 (cf., Ibn Sacd, *Ṭabaqāt*, VI, 313-315). Dhahabī reports that Abū Isḥāq, though a sincere and honest person, suffered from amnesia in his later years and sometimes inadvertently confused traditions he transmitted (*Mīzān*, III, 270).

 $^{^{368}}$ I have not found this version of the tradition cited elsewhere except in *DST*, 67; and *BA*, fol. 34a.

³⁶⁹ The famous Ṭabarī (Muḥammad b. Jarīr Abū Ja^cfar aṭ-Ṭabarī, d. 310/922), author of a justly celebrated commentary on the Quran. For the text of what follows, see his $Tafs\bar{\imath}r$, V, 400, 1-6.

³⁷⁰ That is, the width of a palm. As the above translation indicates, I take the $m\bar{a}$ here as a negative. If it is taken as a pronoun (which seems feasible from a grammatical point of view), the results are quite different. In the former case, God occupies the whole of the $kurs\bar{i}$ so that not even a space the width of a palm remains; in the latter case, He occupies the whole of it except the space of a palm.

 $^{^{371}}$ See Ṭabarī, $Tafs\bar{\imath}r$, V, 400, 1-6; Dārimī, ar- $Radd\ {}^{\varsigma}al\bar{a}'l$ - $Mar\bar{\imath}s\bar{\imath}$, 432, 2-6; and $Mu^{\varsigma}tamad$, 178, 2-5. In Ṭabarī and Dārimī the $isn\bar{a}d$ is given in full. For additional references, see Gimaret, Images, 77.

³⁷² Cf., Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 341-342; also Zamakhsharī, *Kashshāf*, I, 385, 6-9.

In Final, Manifel, 389-3

mentation here is a tentari

an-Zighim's statement i

ferrors the reference is to b

al-Quatari (d. 260/873), w

al-Quatari is said to have

al-Sin and to have counted

especially Abit Bakr al-M

in the arrange internance. F

That is, that part of the law si or

Limit Burga, Ketth of Indian.

Sharehill ash-Sharehill ash-Shar

with a list of sources, see Juy

qa^cada) or "when He takes his seat" (idhā jalasa), used by [certain] transmitters, represent either an alteration [of the original text] or an interpretation based upon what they presumed the meaning [of the original text] to be. Similarly, some have construed [the Quranic verse] "He seated himself (istawā) on the Throne ('arsh)" to mean that He [literally] seated himself (qa^cada) [on the Throne]. The Creator, however, is not to be described as sitting on something so that part of the thing in question is left [unoccupied]. This is a characteristic of finite bodies (ajsām)! ³⁷⁴ Ibn Zāghūnī said: "The meaning of this tradition is that the four fingers are deduced from the attribute of God's being on the Throne (sifat al-istiwā)." ³⁷⁵ Such [nonsense] can only leave [fol.37a] the unlettered masses (al-cawāmm) confused. Do his words have any meaning at all? [If not], then it should be said that the reference to four [fingers] does not imply contiguity or contact. All of this is clearly anthropomorphic and corporealist [in its conception of God]. Moreover, it entails the predication of divine attributes on the basis of what is not sound because it rests on defective traditions. Indeed, I have seen a report that Abū Bakr b. Muslim al-'Ābidī³⁷⁶ once said: "This is the space (mawdi^c)³⁷⁷ that will be left for Muḥammad so that he may seat himself on it."378 It would have been better had this pious man given himself exclusively to the worship of God and not taken up the discussion of such matters.

193 The Qāḍī [Abū Yaʿlā] reported that Shaʿbī 379 said: "God fills the

³⁷³ S. 7: 54.

³⁷⁴ See Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 389-390, where similar views are expressed.

³⁷⁵ My translation here is a tentative attempt to render the Arabic of this sentence, but the point of Ibn az-Zāghūnī's statement is not entirely clear to me.

³⁷⁶ Perhaps the reference is to Muḥammad b. Muslim b. 'Abd ar-Raḥmān Abū Bakr az-Zāhid al-Qanṭarī (d. 260/873), well known among his fellow Baghdādīs for his ascetic practices. Al-Qanṭarī is said to have practiced a brand of asceticism based on the teaching of Bishr al-Ḥāfī and to have counted al-Junayd among his students. Although he did count Ḥanbalīs (especially Abū Bakr al-Marwazī) among his close friends, he is not identified as a Ḥanbalī in the *ṭabaqāt* literature. For biographical notices on al-Qanṭarī, see esp., *Ta³rīkh Baghdād*, III, 256; *Muntaṣam*, V, 25-26; *Ṣafwa*, II, 221; and the *Ḥilya* of Abū Nuʿaym, X, 309.

³⁷⁷ That is, that part of the *kursī* or ^carsh which God does not (or will not) occupy.

³⁷⁸ Cf., Ibn Batta, Kitāb al-Ibāna, 61 (trans., 113).

 $^{^{379}}$ Abū c Āmir b. Sharāḥīl ash-Sha c bī, a leading jurist and traditionist of Kufa (died in 103/721 or, according to some, in 110/728). For a critical discussion of his life and work, along with a list of sources, see Juynboll, EI^{2} , IX, 162-163; also GAS, I, 277. Among the

Throne ('arsh') so completely that it creaks like a camel's saddle." This, however, is a saying falsely attributed to Sha'bī. In commenting on the saying, [Abū Ya'lā] said: "It is entirely permissible to construe this saying in its literal sense ('alā zāhirihi') to mean that the divine essence fills (tamla'u) the Throne, but not, however, in the sense of occupying a place ($l\bar{a}$ 'alā shughli makānin)." Those who spread this kind of confusion should not discourse on [matters of this sort in public]. How astonishing it is that something may fill a particular place but not occupy it!

194 The Qāḍā [Abū Yaʿlā] reported that Khālid b. Maʿdān³81 said: "The All-Merciful One is heavy for the carriers of the Throne ('arsh) [to bear]." [Abū Yaʿlā] went on to say: "It is permissible to take this statement in its literal sense ('alā zāhiri), for the weight [born by the carriers of the Throne] derives from the essence of Raḥmān," but he added: "this interpretation does not imply actual contact." Such persons ought to be more discreet in the statements they make!

The Forty-First Tradition

195 According to the Ṣaḥīḥs of Muslim and Bukhārī, Abū Saʿīd [al-Khudrī] reported that the Messenger of God said: "On the day of resurrection God will say: 'O Adam!' and he will reply: 'I am here at Your service ready to do Your bidding.' Thereupon a voice (ṣawt) will cry out saying: 'God commands that you send a group of your descendents to Hell.'"³⁸²

196 The term "voice" (sawt) is found only in traditions transmitted by

Ḥafṣ b. Ghiyāth. 383 Wak? al-A mash diverge [from the of this tradition contains monce was asked about Ḥafṣ [fol.37b] contain errors. 385

197 There is a sound to uttered' His revelation idea heard [something] that sour One traditionist, relating tradition in his own words heaven heard [God's] voice Mascud reads: "When God theard a noise that sounded heard a noise that sounded heard in more acceptable containing the words "the inappear in any of the sound to

more important sources on him, see Ibn Sa'd, *Ṭabaqāt*, VI, 246-256; *Ḥilya*, IV, 310-338; and *Ṣafwa*, III, 40-41.

³⁸⁰ Cited also by Ibn Fūrak (Mushkil, 341, 3-4). Abū Yaʻlā, however, makes no mention of the saying in his Mu^c tamad.

³⁸¹ Abū ʿAbd Allāh Khālid b. Maʿdān b. Abī Kurab (or Kurayb) al-Kalāʿī, a prominent Syrian ascetic who died in 103/721. For an interesting account of this colorful figure, see *Ḥilya*, V, 210-221 (cf. Ṣafwa, IV, 188); and Ibn Saʿd, Ṭabaqāt, VII, 455. J.van Ess (El²,IV, 369) regards him as a man of Qadarī sympathies.

 $^{^{382}}$ Cf., DST, 67; and BA, fol. 34a. This tradition, including the reference to the <code>sawt</code>, appears twice in Bukhārī: <code>tawhīd</code>, 32 (3); and <code>tafsīr</code>, 22 (1), in both of which Ḥafs. b. Ghiyāth and his son 'Umar are mentioned as among its transmitters. For versions of this tradition that omit reference to the <code>sawt</code>, see Bukhārī, <code>riqāq</code>, 45; Muslim, <code>īmān</code>, 379; <code>Musnad</code>, I, 388; and II, 378. Despite Ibn al-Jawzī's reference above to Muslim, I have not found this tradition (with its reference to the <code>sawt</code>) in his <code>Ṣaḥīh</code>.

Hafs b. Ghiyāth b. Talq Abi aho was appointed to the office of almough he was equally well to mixed in their assessment of his m among them Abū'l-Ḥasan al-sijiti ampetence and reliability in this fi reservations. Ibn Sa'd accuse 1991. Ahmad b. Ḥanbal and V among them are servations of traditions of tractions of traditions of the servations. Ibn Sa'd accuse 1991. Ahmad b. Ḥanbal and V among them are servations of traditions of the servations. Ibn Sa'd accuse 1991. Ahmad b. Ḥanbal and V among the servations of traditions of traditions of the servations. Ibn Sa'd accuse 1991. Ahmad b. Ḥanbal and V

Ci. Muslim, imān, 379.

Ci_ Mitim, L. 567-568.

For the full text of this tradi-2/1-202 (in both, the tradiand Ibn Fürak, Machkil, 351,

im at-Jawzi's objection to discuss and theological factors and theological factors and address and add

Ḥafṣ b. Ghiyāth.³⁸³ Wakī^c, Jarīr and others who received traditions from al-A^cmash diverge [from the wording transmitted by Ḥafṣ] and their version of this tradition contains no reference to the voice.³⁸⁴ Aḥmad [b. Ḥanbal] once was asked about Ḥafṣ and he replied: "The traditions he transmitted [fol.37b] contain errors." ³⁸⁵

197 There is a sound tradition [which reads as follows]: "When God 'uttered' His revelation (*idhā takallama...bi³l-waḥy*), the inhabitants of heaven heard [something] that sounded like a chain being dragged over rocks." ³⁸⁶ One traditionist, relating what he presumed to be the meaning of the tradition in his own words, reported it as follows: "The inhabitants of heaven heard [God's] voice (*ṣawt*)." However, the version reported by Ibn Mascūd reads: "When God 'uttered' his revelation the inhabitants of heaven heard a noise that sounded like a chain being dragged across rocks." This wording is more acceptable than that of the preceding one. The sentence containing the words "the inhabitants of heaven heard his voice" does not appear in any of the sound traditions. ³⁸⁸

³⁸³ Ḥafṣ b. Ghiyāth b. Ṭalq Abū ʿUmar an-Nakhaʿī al-Kūfī (d. 194/809), an Iraqi jurist who was appointed to the office of $q\bar{u}d\bar{t}$ and held judgeships in both Baghdad and Kufa. Although he was equally well known in the field of *ḥadith* studies, *ḥadīth* critics were mixed in their assessment of his reliability as a transmitter. According to al-Khaṭīb, some (among them Abū'l-Ḥasan al-ʿIjlī and Yaʿqūb b. Shayba) had words of high praise for his competence and reliability in this field ($Ta^{2}r\bar{t}kh$ $Baghd\bar{a}d$, VIII, 197-198). Others, however, had reservations. Ibn Saʿd accused him of $tadl\bar{t}s$ or fraudulent reporting ($Tabaq\bar{a}t$, VI, 389-390); Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal and Yaḥyā b. Maʿīn are said to have had serious doubts as to the trustworthiness of traditions received from him ($M\bar{t}z\bar{a}n$, I, 568), especially when he transmitted from memory. For more on him, see $Ta^{2}r\bar{t}kh$ $Bagh\bar{a}d$, VIII, 188-200; Ibn Athīr, $K\bar{a}mil$, VI, 237; Dhahabī, $M\bar{t}z\bar{a}n$, I, 567-568; $Tahdh\bar{t}b$, II, 415-418; and $Shadhar\bar{a}t$, I, 340.

³⁸⁴ Cf., Muslim, *īmān*, 379.

³⁸⁵ Cf., *Mīzān*, I, 567-568.

³⁸⁶ For the full text of this tradition, see Abū Dāwūd, *Sunan*, *sunna*, 20; and Bayhaqī, *Asmā*², 201-202 (in both, the tradition is traced back to Ibn Mas^cūd). Cf., Bukhārī, *tawḥīd*, 32f.; and Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 351, 403, and 450-451.

³⁸⁷ See *Zād*, VII, 452ff., where Ibn al-Jawzī discusses the tradition of Ibn Mas^cūd in an extended gloss on S. 34:23. Cf., also Ṭabarī, *Tafsīr*, XVII, 87. In this connection see also Madelung, "Origins of the Controversy," 514f. For other versions of the tradition, see Ibn Khuzayma, *Tawhīd*, 145-149; and Bahyaqī, *Asmā*, 201-202.

³⁸⁸ Ibn al-Jawzī's objection to the tradition of the *ṣawt*, quoted above from Bukhārī's Ṣaḥīḥ, is twofold, textual and theological. Since the tradition is attested by a single authority, viz., Ḥafṣ b. Ghiyāth, it is not an adequate basis for the predication of a divine attribute, for

The Forty-Second Tradition

198 In a tradition reported by Jābir [b. 'Abd Allāh], the Prophet [is alleged to have] said: "When God spoke to Moses on Mount Sinai, He addressed him in a language (*kalām*)³⁸⁹ different from the one He used when He [first] summoned Moses. [Moses asked: 'O my Lord, is the language in which you addressed me Your language (*kalām*)?']³⁹⁰ He replied: 'O Moses, I spoke to you in ten thousand tongues (*lisān*) only, but I have the power to speak in all tongues. Indeed, I have a power greater even than that!' When [Moses] returned to the Banū Isrā'īl, they said to him: 'Describe the speech (*kalām*) of your Lord!' He replied: 'It is impossible for me.' They said: 'Describe it for us as best you can!' He replied: 'Imagine the sound (*ṣawt*) of thunder which comes in the clearest form you have ever heard.'" ³⁹¹

Ibn al-Jawzī insists repeatedly (cf., §33, e.g.) that only those traditions that rest on multiple authorities (i.e., hadīth mutawātir or what he sometimes also calls hadīth mashhūr) constitute sufficient grounds for the assertion of a divine attribute. Important as these textual considerations are for Ibn al-Jawzī, if one views the above discussion in the context of KAS as a whole and its central concern, one must assume that Ibn al-Jawzi's principal objection to the sawt tradition is based on the theological conviction that God's speech, which is eternal and one, cannot be thought of as consisting of letters (hurūf) and articulated sounds (aṣwāt muqaṭta^ca), since these latter belong to the world of phenomenal existence (what he elsewhere refers to as the realm of the shāhid), and are therefore temporal and finite. Reliance on letters/words and sounds to express meaning is peculiar to finite corporeal beings. God, by contrast, has no need of temporally originated means to realize His purpose. To ascribe sawt to God is to fall prey to the error of tajsīm. For an exceptionally clear exposition of the theological problem posed by the attribution of sawt to God, see Ibn Fūrak, Mushkil, 351-352; 403-405; and 450-451. Running through Ibn Fūrak's discussion of the word or speech of God (kalām Allāh) is the distinction between God's word in its eternal essence and its articulation in time and space. He repeatedly insists that the kitāba (the written text of revelation) and the maktūb (the meaning expressed through that text) are not to be confused, or as he sometimes puts it, the 'ibāra' (expression) is not to be equated with the mu^cabbar (what is expressed), or the dalāla (indicator) with the madlūl (indicated). Although Ibn Furak was an Ashcarite, the position he takes seems entirely consistent with the logic and general theological stance of KAS. Ibn al-Jawzī's earlier writings, however, reflect a somewhat different position (cf., e.g., Şayd al-Khāṭir, 247-253).

³⁸⁹ See Ṭabarī, *Tafsīr*, IX, 404-407, where *kalām* and *lisān* are used interchangeably in several traditions similar to the one cited above.

199 This is a defective in authority of Fadl b. 'Isā." said: "He is worthless as a "All are to be rejected." "It that he was given to deception said: "It would have been be libu 'Uyayna said: "Fadl b. Imally. Yahyā said: "He is a m % 4 164, which must have be libu al-Masir, II, 256; cf... Golda Ta-175.

4a Iraqi traditionist who numericage and spent at least part of the people of Wasir, and # 0 Fair. II. 195, 19 he was a amony However, ci. are the west approval. For a sw also see Mitain, III, 135-Al-Fadi b. Isa b. Aban Abu tion Born widely known for their Fadi b. 'İsi's dates are no to the first toward the end of the un Crist us-Durgier, III. 7; Tahdi ne at Marille, 118, 513-514; W Importer Theologie, 243f. For as a scale article by J. van Ess in "CE_Minute, III., 136t and Tolk in the assessment of Nasari Built-us-ManudiFit: L 113. Barin Abi Khālid E To Said. Tahagir, VII.

In the following where these II. 19th and Knain of Manual Strategies of this in the manual Strategies of the second Strategies of the manual Strategies of the factor of the manual Strategies of the second Strategies of th

and the second court were few per

the little of th

the membercal views, see

Committee of the Queen," 507.

³⁹⁰ Cf., Abū Nu^caym, *Ḥilya*, VI, 210, 17-18.

 $^{^{391}}$ Found also in *DST*, 68; *BA*, fol., 34a; *Kitāb al-Mawḍū̄ʿāt*, I, 112-113; and the *Ḥilya* of Abū Nuʿaym, VI, 210, 12-21. Slightly different versions of this tradition (with quite different *isnāds*) are given by Ṭabarī in his *Tafsīr* (IX, 404-407). For Ibn al-Jawzī's gloss

199 This is a defective tradition which 'Alī b. 'Āṣim' transmitted on the authority of Faḍl b. 'Īsā." [Speaking of 'Alī b. 'Āṣim], Yaḥyā [b. Ma'īn] said: "He is worthless as a traditionist." Nasā'ī said: "The traditions of 'Alī are to be rejected." Yazīd b. Hārūn' said: "We have always known that he was given to deception." As for al-Faḍl b. 'Īsā, Ayyūb as-Sakhtiyānī said: "It would have been better for him had he been born dumb (*akhras*)." Ibn 'Uyayna said: "Faḍl b. 'Isā is of no account [as a traditionist]." And finally, Yaḥyā said: "He is an evil man!" 398

on S. 4: 164, which must have been occasioned by the tradition attributed to Jābir, see his Zād al-Masīr, II, 256; cf., Goldziher, Die Richtungen der islamischen Koranauslegung, 174-175.

³⁹² An Iraqī traditionist who died in 201/816. He was born in Wasit of non-Arab parentage and spent at least part of his life in Baghdad. Despite his considerable standing among the people of Wasit, and his reputation as an honest man (Ibn al-Jawzī, *Kitāb aḍ-Đuʿafāʾ*, II, 195, 19), he was widely regarded as a weak traditionist on account of his defective memory. However, cf., *Talbīs*, 192 and 298, where *ḥadīths* transmitted by ʿAlī are cited with approval. For a sympathetic account of his life, see *Taʾrīkh Baghdād*, XI, 446-458; also see *Mīzān*, III, 135-138; and *Shadharāt*, II, 2.

³⁹³ Al-Faḍl b. 'Īsā b. Abān Abū 'Īsā ar-Raqāshī, member of a family of Persian preachers from Basra widely known for their skill in the use of Arabic and their Qadarī sympathies. Although Faḍl b. 'Īsā's dates are not given in the standard biographical works, he is known to have lived toward the end of the Umayyad period. For more on this interesting figure, see *Kitāb aḍ-Duʿafā*', III, 7; *Tahdhīb*, VII, 283-284; *Mīzān*, III, 356; *Ḥilya*, VI, 206-210; Ashʿarī, *Maqālāt*, 118, 513-514; Watt, *Formative Period* (index); and J. van Ess, *Anfānge muslimischer Theologie*, 243f. For a detailed account of the early Qadarī "movement," see the excellent article by J. van Ess in *EI*², IV, 368-372.

³⁹⁴ Cf., Mīzān, III, 136; and Ta²rīkh Baghdād, XI, 450.

³⁹⁵ On the assessment of Nasā'ī, see *Ta'rīkh Baghdād*, XI, 456; *Mīzān*, III, 136; and *Kitāb al-Mawḍū'āt*, I, 113.

³⁹⁶ Yazīd b. Hārūn Abū Khālid al-Wāsiṭī (d. 205/820 or 206/821). For biographical details, see Ibn Sa^cd, *Ṭabaqāt*, VII, 314-316; *Ta³rīkh Baghḍad*, XIV, 347; and *Shadharāt*, II, 16. On his theological views, see Madelung, "The Origins of the Controversy Concerning the Creation of the Quran," 507.

³⁹⁷ See the following where these words are quoted verbatim: $Ta^{\lambda}r\bar{t}kh$ $Baghd\bar{a}d$, XI, 456; $M\bar{t}z\bar{a}n$, III, 136; and $Kit\bar{a}b$ $al-Mawd\bar{u}^{\lambda}\bar{t}$, I, 113.

³⁹⁸ Ibn al-Jawzī's critique of this tradition here is based solely on the inadequacy of its *isnād*. It is reasonably certain, however, that he also had serious reservations regarding the *matn* of the tradition. Despite the fact that several transmitters of this tradition were known for their Qadarī sympathies, there seems nothing particularly Qadarī about this tradition. As van Ess has pointed out, very few pro-Qadarī *ḥadīths* have survived (cf., *EI*², IV, 371a). It is more likely that Ibn al-Jawzī's objection has to do with the "anthropomorphism" implicit

The Forty-Third Tradition

200 According to the $Q\bar{a}d\bar{i}$ [Abū Yaʻlā], Ḥassān b. ʿAṭīya³⁹⁹ said: "The one who prostrates himself [in prayer] prostrates himself at the foot (*qadam*) of the All Merciful." ⁴⁰⁰

201 These are the words of a Follower $(t\bar{a}bi^c\bar{\imath})$ who was attempting to express the nearness of God's grace (fadl) in the language of metaphor. The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{\imath}$ [Abū Yaclā], however, used this text as the basis for the attribution of a foot to God [but with this caveat: "The worshipper] prostrates himself at God's foot literally $(haq\bar{\imath}qatan)$ though this prostration does not entail contact $(mum\bar{a}ssa)$." ⁴⁰¹

The Forty-Fourth Tradition

202 In the Ṣaḥīḥs of Muslim and Bukhārī there is a tradition in which Abū Mūsā reports that the Prophet said: "There are two Gardens [in Paradise] whose vessels and furnishings are of silver; 402 and there are two Gardens whose vessels and furnishings are of gold. 403 Nothing will prevent the

blessed from seeing their La of majesty (ridā al-kibrīpā) 203 [fol.38a] [In the absaradise], not the One seen point in space. The Qādī [And this tradition is that the Omeous clearly imply a corporal sesty" is [a figure of speen grandeur. In other words, the last this majesty. If God show them.

al-Masir, V. 199), the text reads partiens whose ornaments, vesses and furnishin minimentary in Zād al-Masīr, VIII

The expression jannār (admonitration of the Lād al-Masīr (III, 469) [Ibn al-

الله المجاهدة المجاه

CL DST, 69, and BA, fol. 34

Line Alexal, may be found in the fi

Singles Les mad. III, 463-41;

Line Villa, mayaddima, 13/186;

Les Maj. Asmir., 302; Ibn Khu

V. 199-200.

minimum in its lineral sense.

That is, God.

For Abi Yala's view on the

The main point of this paragra time and place, it is impossible to the Garden of Adm

in its comparision of God's speech with natural phenomena. This, in fact, is a point that Ibn al-Jawzī makes quite explicit in his *Kitāb al-Mawḍū* at (I, 112-113) where he classifies and discusses the *ḥadīth* under the rubric of those traditions that are objectionable because they compare God's speech to thunder (*ṣawāʾiq*). The "anthropomorphist" tendency can also be seen in the tradition's portrayal of Moses as willingly complying with the popular demand that he describe God's *kalām*.

 $^{^{399}}$ I have found Ḥassān referred to in only two works, Dhahabī's $M\bar{\imath}z\bar{a}n$ (I, 479) and Ibn al-Jawzī's $Talb\bar{\imath}s$ $Ibl\bar{\imath}s$ (189 and 200). In the latter work, his name is mentioned only in two $isn\bar{a}ds$ with no other information apart from the persons from and to whom he transmitted traditions. In his notice on Ḥassān, Dhahabī observes that he was reliable in matters of $had\bar{\imath}th$ and one of the better known among the Followers, but Dhahabī adds that he was suspected of being sympathetic to the Qadarīs, a view supported by Yaḥyā b. Maʿīn. It is worth noting that Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal regarded him as a trustworthy traditionist.

 $^{^{400}}$ For other references to this saying, see DST, 68; BA, fol. 34a; and Ibn Fūrak, Mushkil, 353, where the tradition appears in a slightly different form: إذا سجد أحدكم فإنما ...

⁴⁰¹ I have found no reference to this saying in the *Mu^ctamad* of Abū Ya^clā. For an Ash^carite view, see the discussion in Ibn Fūrak, 353-355.

⁴⁰² Cf., S. 76: 15.

 $^{^{403}}$ In another version of this tradition cited by Ibn al-Jawzī in his commentary ($Z\bar{a}d$

blessed from seeing their Lord *in* the Garden(s) of ^cAdn⁴⁰⁴ except the mantle of majesty (*ridā*² *al-kibrīyā*²) covering His face."⁴⁰⁵

203 [fol.38a] [In the above tradition it is those "seeing" who are in Paradise], not the One seen, 406 for He cannot be confined to a particular point in space. The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{t}$ [Abū Ya'lā] said: "The apparent meaning $(z\bar{a}hir)$ of this tradition is that the One seen will be in the Garden of 'Adn." Such words clearly imply a corporealist view of God $(tajs\bar{t}m)$. "The mantle of majesty" is [a figure of speech] used to convey the idea of His majesty and grandeur. In other words, they will be prevented [from seeing Him] because of His majesty. If God should desire, however, He could be disclosed to them. 408

al-Masīr, V, 199), the text reads: "In Paradise (*firdaws*) there are four [Gardens]—two gardens whose ornaments, vessels and furnishings are of silver; two Gardens whose ornaments, vessels and furnishings are of gold..." (cf., S. 55: 62ff., and Ibn al-Jawzī's commentary in Zād al-Masīr, VIII, 124).

⁴⁰⁴ The expression <code>jannāt 'adn</code> occurs frequently in the Quran (S. 9: 72; 13: 23, etc). In his <code>Zād al-Masīr</code> (III, 469) Ibn al-Jawzī cites Ibn 'Abbās who defines the <code>jannāt 'adn</code> as the highest part of Paradise where the All-Merciful has His dwelling (<code>dār</code>). The full text of the description offered by Ibn 'Abbās reads as follows: جنّات عدن هي بُطنان الجنّة، وهي دار الرحمن عزّ وجلّ، وسقفها عرشه، خلقها بيده وفيها وسطها، وهي أعلى درجة في الجنّة، وهي دار الرحمن عزّ وجلّ، وسقفها عرشه، خلقها بيده وفيها مُحدقة بها (the Gardens of 'Adn, [an expression that refers to] the water-courses located in the middle of Paradise, are its highest part; there the All-Merciful has His dwelling; His Throne is their ceiling, and He created them by His hand; in them the spring of Tasnīm is to be found, and the other Gardens of Paradise surround them). Given his insistence that God's being is not defined by the categories of time and place (a point made in §203, but also elsewhere in <code>KAS</code>), Ibn al-Jawzī could hardly have taken this definition in its literal sense.

⁴⁰⁵ Cf., *DST*, 69; and *BA*, fol. 34b. This tradition, more or less in the form cited above by Ibn al-Jawzī, may be found in the following: Muslim, *īmān*, 296; Bukhārī, *tafsīr al-Qurʾān*, 55 (Houdas, *Les trad*. III, 463-4); *tawḥīd*, 24 (*Les trad*. IV, 606); Tirmidhī, *ṣifat al-janna*, 5; Ibn Māja, *muqaddima*, 13(186); and *Zād al-Masīr*, V, 199. For glosses on the tradition, see Bayhaqī, *Asmā*², 302; Ibn Khuzayma, *Tawḥīd*, 16; Ghazzālī, *Iḥyā*², IV, 536; and *Zād al-Masīr*, V, 199-200.

⁴⁰⁶ That is, God.

⁴⁰⁷ For Abū Yaʻlā's view on the vision (ru'ya) of God, see his Mu^ctamad, 82-84, and 217-218.

⁴⁰⁸ The main point of this paragraph is that because God necessarily transcends categories of time and place, it is impossible to suppose that He will (or can) be seen in particular places such as the Garden of ^cAdn, for example. On this point, Ibn al-Jawzī's break with the traditional Hanbalī view is dramatic. For statements expressing the view of Aḥmad, see

204 We have already discussed the question of God's face in the chapter on the Quran. Our view is that the term "face" [is a metaphorical way of] referring to God himself. 409

The Forty-Fifth Tradition

205 In the respective Ṣaḥāḥs of Bukhārī and Muslim there is a tradition reported by Abū Hurayra in which the Messenger of God said: "When God completed the creation [of the world] He wrote in His Book which was with Him ('indahu) above the Throne: 'Verily, My mercy has triumphed over (ghalabat) My anger.'" In another version of this tradition, the text reads: "[My mercy] has outstripped (sabaqat) [My anger]." ⁴¹⁰

206 The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{\imath}$ [Abū Yaʻlā] said: "The expression 'with Him' ('indahu), when taken in its apparent sense ($z\bar{a}hir$), implies proximity (qurb) to the divine essence (adh- $dh\bar{a}t$)." It is important to insist, however, that nearness to God should not be construed in spatial terms, for spatial relations apply

only to finite bodies (ajsan with (sinda) your Lord, ma

The

It was reported that one with His hand; He wrote the gardens) of Paradise with DWS This is a tradition who have aby taken up the question was I created with My han

The

In was reported on the au

S. 11: 83 (cf., also 51:34). Of many flat findski is to be taken in negative. Apart from suggestion al-Jawzi does not indicate the suggestion of how the expression of the suggestion of the suggestion.

But they cites two slightly of and in the Prophet himself As See DST (p. 70); B4 (fol. 34) Im Firak, Mushkil, 372-373: and the serving by the two traditions reads: the Propi med with His hand, he Findews with His hand 5 July 75. For the discussion and it is memphorical interpreta and acomposited into sever Im Barra's Fidux, 58, 16-18, where - and this important to believe mental the parties of Findays with and Ajumi, Sharifa, 173, - Williams gives the issued as and a Martin of al-Fallis from

Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila, I, 145, 7-9; 242, and 312. For similar statements by other Ḥanbalīs, see II, 23, 11-12; and 27, 7-9 (Barbahārī); *Kitāb ash-Sharī* a, 275-276 (Ājurrī); and *Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila*, II, 298 (Abū Muḥammad at-Tamīmī). H. Laoust accurately sums up the position of the school as follows: "La vision (ru²ya) de Dieu par les hommes, lors du jugement dernier et par les élus au paradis, est affirmée par toutes les 'aqīda ḥanbalites'' (*La Profession de foi d'Ibn Baṭṭa*, 98, n. 3). Ibn al-Jawzī appears to have gone beyond the Ash'arite position (which admitted a form of ru²ya) to one that was scarcely distinguishable from that of the Mu'tazilī school. It is clear, however, that Ibn al-Jawzī had not always held to the position set forth in *KAS*. In his Ṣayd al-Khāṭir (618, 11-13), apparently written earlier, he attacks the Mu'tazilī position and defends something very close to the standard Ḥanbalī view. Just when he adopted the position set forth in *KAS* and the reasons behind the change are questions that cannot yet be answered.

⁴⁰⁹ See §38.

 $^{^{410}}$ For occurrences of this saying, see DST, 69; BA, fol., 34b; \bar{A} jurr \bar{i} , $Shar\bar{i}$ 'a, 290; Bukhār \bar{i} , bad' al-khalq, 1 ($Les\ trad$., II, 423); $tawh\bar{i}d$, 15, 22, 28 and 55; Muslim, tawba. 14, 15, 16; Ibn Māja, muqaddima, 13 (189), 37(35); Musnad, II, 242, 258, 260, 313, 358. 381, 397, 433, 466; and Munāw \bar{i} , $Ith\bar{a}f\bar{a}t$, 31-32 (no. 53); 41-42 (no. 80), 50 (no. 108). For glosses on the saying, with special reference to the meaning of عنده فوق العرش , see Bayhaq \bar{i} . $Asm\bar{a}$ ', 395-396 (cf., $Asm\bar{a}$ ', 284); Ibn F \bar{u} rak, Mushkil, 455 (cf., also 228-231; 344-345; and 369-373); and Ibn Khuzayma, $Tawh\bar{i}d$, 8, and 58; cf., also Graham, $Divine\ Word$. 184-185. Ormsby points out that this saying was used by al-Ghazzāl \bar{i} to support the argument that God never wills evil per se, only good (Theodicy, 257). Evil is an accidental by-product (al- $Maqṣad\ al$ - $Asn\bar{a}$ [Beirut, 1971] b8).

only to finite bodies (*ajsām*). God himself has spoken of "[clay stones] 'with' (*cinda*) your Lord, marked [for the destruction of the wicked]." ⁴¹¹

The Forty-Sixth Tradition

207 It was reported that one of the Followers said:⁴¹² "God created Adam with His hand; He wrote the Torah with His hand; and He planted [the trees (or gardens) of] Paradise with His hand." ⁴¹³

208 This is a tradition whose source has not been established. We have already taken up the question of God's hands in our discussion of the verse: "What I created with My hands." 414

The Forty-Seventh Tradition

209 It was reported on the authority of Ibn 'Abbās' that in connection with

⁴¹¹ S. 11: 83 (cf., also 51:34). Cf., Ibn al-Jawzī's *Zād al-Masīr*, IV, 145-146, where it is argued that *'indaka* is to be taken in its metaphorical sense. The argument here in §206 is largely negative. Apart from suggesting that *'indahu* be taken in some sort of metaphorical sense, Ibn al-Jawzī does not indicate precisely how the expression ought to be taken. For suggestions of how the expression might be construed, see Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 455; and Bayhaqī, *Asmā*², 395-396.

⁴¹² Bayhaqī cites two slightly different versions of this tradition, both of which are attributed to the Prophet himself ($Asm\bar{a}^2$, 318).

⁴¹³ See *DST* (p. 70); *BA* (fol. 34b); and *Ṣayd al-Khāṭir*, 145, where this saying is cited; also Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 372-373; and Bayhaqī, *Asmā²*, 314ff., esp., 318, where Bayhaqī cites two versions of the saying, both of which are ascribed to the Prophet. The second of the two traditions reads: the Prophet said: "God created three things with His hand: He created Adam with His hand, he wrote the Torah with His hand, and he planted [the gardens of] Firdaws with His hand...." (p. 318).

¹¹⁴ S. 38: 75. For the discussion of the hands of God, see §§41-43, where Ibn al-Jawzī insists on a metaphorical interpretation. It is interesting that two elements of the above saying were incorporated into several Ḥanbalī creeds as crucial points of doctrine. See, e.g., Ibn Baṭṭa's Ibāṇa, 58, 16-18, where he states: والإيمان بأنُ الله عزَ وجلٌ خلق آدم بيده وغرس جنّة (It is important to believe that God created Adam with His hand and that He planted the garden of Firdaws with His hand). Cf., Laoust, La Profession de foi d'Ibn Baṭṭa, 108; and Ājurrī, Sharīca, 173, 181.

⁴¹⁵ Al-Khaṭīb gives the *isnād* as follows: Aḥmad b. al-Ḥasan b. ʿAbd al-Jabbār from Shujāʿ b. Mukhallad al-Fallās from Abū ʿĀṣim from Sufyān from ʿAmmār ad-Duhnī from

the verse "His *kursī* encompasses the heavens and the earth," ⁴¹⁶ the Prophet said by way of commentary: "His *kursī* is His footstool, but the measure of the Throne (*carsh*) is beyond determination." ⁴¹⁷

210 A number of reliable traditionists transmitted this tradition, but they attributed it to Ibn 'Abbās, not to the Prophet. Only one authority, Shujā' b. Mukhallad⁴¹⁸ by name, traced it back to the Prophet. ⁴¹⁹ [Shujā'] was known for his differences with leading traditionists and for the commission of errors. The meaning of this tradition is that the *kursī* is smaller than the Throne ('arsh), in much the same way that the *kursī* connected with [fol.38b] the throne of a king (sarīr), being the place on which the throne's occupant places his feet, [is smaller than the throne]. ⁴²⁰ Daḥḥāk said: "The *kursī* is

Muslim al-Baṭīn from Saʿīd b. Jubayr from Ibn ʿAbbās from the Prophet ($Ta^3r\bar{\imath}kh$ $Baghd\bar{a}d$, IX, 251, 12-14).

that on which kings place I foot [ascribed to God in the is this that God will place in

Th

211 Al-'Abbās reported a naseventh heaven there is a set the sea] and its bottom is equand the earth. God, may He 212 This tradition, however hadith, for Yaḥyā b. al-'Ali transmit it. Aḥmad b. Ḥanl forged traditions. Yaḥyā b. matters of ḥadīth, and Ibn 'A 213 We have already discreation (fawqīva) in connections.

 $^{^{416}}$ S. 2: 255. This verse was the object of endless discussion among medieval exegetes. For a range of views, see the following: Ṭabarī, $Tafs\bar{\imath}r$, V, 397-403; also see $Z\bar{a}d$ al- $Mas\bar{\imath}r$, I, 303-304, for Ibn al-Jawzī's view on the $kurs\bar{\imath}$; and $Kashsh\bar{a}f$, I, 385-386, for a Muʿtazilī perspective on the problem of the $kurs\bar{\imath}$ and its relation to the 'arsh.

 $^{^{417}}$ Cf., DST, 77; BA, fol. 34b; and Ṭabarī, $Tafs\bar{\imath}r$, V, 398-399; Ibn Fūrak, Mushkil, 387; Ibn Kath $\bar{\imath}r$, $^{\prime}Umda$, II, 162; Ibn Khuzayma, $Tawh\bar{\imath}d$, 107-108; $Mu^{\epsilon}tamad$, 177; and $Lis\bar{a}n$, VI, 194, 6-10. Al-Khat $\bar{\imath}$ b cites this tradition in his notice on Shuj $\bar{\imath}$ c b. Mukhallad ($Ta^{2}r\bar{\imath}kh$ $Baghd\bar{a}d$, IX, 251-252), along with several other versions attributed to Ibn 'Abb $\bar{\imath}$ s. For more on Shuj $\bar{\imath}$ c', see the following note.

⁴¹⁸ Read by some as Shujā^c b. Makhlad, known also as Abū'l-Fadl al-Baghawī (150/767-235/849). Although a native of the district of Bagh in the province of Khurasan, he moved to Baghdad to pursue the study of *ḥadīth* and remained there until his death. Among his students were several Ḥanbalīs (e.g., Ibrāhīm al-Ḥarbī and Mūsā b. Hārūn). He is known to have been in contact with Bishr b. al-Ḥārith and may have been influenced by his mystical and ascetic views, although the evidence on this point is inconclusive. According to Ibrāhīm al-Ḥarbī, Bishr once criticized Shujā^c for attending the meetings of the popular preacher Manṣūr b. ʿAmmār (*Taʾrīkh Baghdād*, IX, 253; also cited by Ibn al-Jawzī in his *Kitāb al-Quṣṣāṣ*, 134). Despite the criticisms levelled against Shujā^c by certain traditionists for what they regarded as insufficient rigor in the transmission of *ḥadīths*, he was defended by Yaḥyā b. Maʿīn as being honest and trustworthy as a transmitter (*Taʾrīkh Baghdād*, IX, 252, 20-21; cf., also *Mīzān*, 265, 2). Dhahabī reports that Muslim, the compiler of the Ṣaḥīḥ, received traditions from him (*Mīzān*, II, 265, 2).

⁴¹⁹ Cf., $Ta^3r\bar{\imath}kh$ $Baghd\bar{a}d$, IX, 251; and $M\bar{\imath}z\bar{a}n$, II, 265.

⁴²⁰ In previous discussions of the 'arsh (§§189-192, e.g.), Ibn al-Jawzī makes it clear that it is not an object (or a "body," as he prefers to say). If the 'arsh is not an object and, therefore, not amenable to being described in spatial categories, what sense does it make to say that the *kursī* is smaller than the 'arsh?

The full text of this traditions course to the verse 'His known end are it is what is placed underneath their feet.'"

An allusion to a prophetic mate Musiamad (54, 3) Abu Y ها معنا المعنا ا

Cf.. DST. 70: and BA. following in this preconation. For relatively close approximation. For relatively close approximation. In a support of the support of

The Sch century. Dhahabi reports and Zayd b. Aslam (d. 136.753). Example and Himyari (d. 211.827). Minim. IV. 397-398). Apart from addition to Dhahabi's Minim. see a differ. I. 253; and III. 213. f

These statements are also of all-Dat air. III, 200).

that on which kings place their feet." The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{\iota}$ [Abū Yaʻlā] said: "The foot [ascribed to God in the $had\bar{\iota}th$] is an attribute of the divine essence; it is this that God will place in the Fire [on the day of judgment]." 422

The Forty-Eighth Tradition

211 Al-'Abbās reported a tradition in which the Prophet said: "Above the seventh heaven there is a sea (*baḥr*); and [the distance] between the top [of the sea] and its bottom is equal to the distance between the [lowest] heaven and the earth. God, may He be exalted, is above [the sea]." 423

212 This tradition, however, is not found in the canonical collections of *ḥadīth*, for Yaḥyā b. al-ʿAlā̄² was the only one of his contemporaries to transmit it. Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal said that [Yaḥyā] was a habitual liar who forged traditions. Yaḥyā b. Maʿīn held that he was not to be trusted in matters of *hadīth*, and Ibn ʿAdī said that his traditions are forgeries. 425

213 We have already discussed the question of God's being above His creation (fawqīya) in connection with the verse "God is above (fawqa) His

 $^{^{421}}$ The full text of this tradition as preserved by Ṭabarī ($Tafs\bar{\imath}r$, V, 398) reads: "In response to the verse 'His $kurs\bar{\imath}$ encompasses the heavens and the earth', Daḥḥāk said: 'His $kurs\bar{\imath}$ is what is placed underneath the Throne ($taht\ al$ - carsh); it is that on which kings place their feet.'"

⁴²² An allusion to a prophetic tradition reported by Mālik b. Anas (cf., *KAS*, §§103-107). In the *Mu'tamad* (54, 3) Abū Ya'lā advocates a slightly different view: the *qadam* (or *rijl*) is an attribute added (صغة زائدة) to the divine essense.

⁴²³ Cf., *DST*, 70; and *BA*, fol. 35a. As Ibn al-Jawzī himself notes in the following paragraph, the saying in this precise form does not occur in the canonical collections of *ḥadīth*. For relatively close approximations, see, e.g., Ibn Māja, *muqaddima*, 13 (193); Tirmidhī, *tafsīr al-Qur'ān*, 69; Abū Dāwūd, *sunna*, 18; *Musnad* I, 206-207. See also Bayhaqī, *Asmā'*, 399; Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 452; Ibn Khuzayma, *Tawhīd*, 102 (cf., *Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila*, I, 28, 12-15; and Ājurrī, *Sharī*^ca, 290-293).

 $^{^{424}}$ Abū ʿAmr Yaḥyā b. al-ʿAlāʾ al-Bajalī ar-Rāzī, who flourished during the latter half of the 8th century. Dhahabī reports that Yaḥyā received traditions from Zuhrī (d. 124/742) and Zayd b. Aslam (d. 136/753), and that he transmitted <code>hadīths</code> to ʿAbd ar-Razzāq b. Hammām al-Ḥimyarī (d. 211/827) and Abū ʿUmar al-Ḥawdī (d. 225/839), among others ($M\bar{\imath}z\bar{a}n$, IV, 397-398). Apart from his activity as a <code>muḥaddith</code>, little is known of his life. In addition to Dhahabī's $M\bar{\imath}z\bar{a}n$, see also Ibn al-Jawzī's $Kit\bar{a}b$ ad-Duʿafāʾ, III, 200; his $Kit\bar{a}b$ al-Mawdāc̄at, I, 253; and III, 213, for assessments of his work.

⁴²⁵ These statements are also cited by Dhahabī in his $M\bar{\imath}z\bar{a}n$, IV, 397-398 (cf., $Kit\bar{a}b$ ad-Du $^{\epsilon}af\bar{a}^{2}$, III, 200).

creatures." ⁴²⁶ The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{i}$ [Abū Ya^clā] said: "The notion that God is above His creation ($fawq\bar{i}ya$) has its basis in the fact that God is on the Throne (farsh) in His very essence (fadh-fadh-fadh). He is on the Throne in the sense that part of his essence is contiguous to the Throne and so is limited by it. However, that part [of the divine essence] that is not contiguous to the Throne, fadh-fa

214 The $Q\bar{a}d\bar{t}$ said: "Since it has been established that God is on the

Throne, is it [not] possible t for nothing has be with this point?" In fact, neit enuression "sitting" (qufiid). fact to Ibu 'Abbas, the traditi "munding" (qryam), on the or firmugh 'Isā and Jābir " to Bustniri. Umar b. as-Subb bi Summer Ibn Hibban said: mestruct issaids for them ma fin 342 His books on hadit Direction said that his tradition Can a divine The this? "What has lescribed as standing, that is, tescribed as standing only ustice (qā'im bi'l-ai for that is a condition peculia

The al-lawer s Knith al-Marchangles of madicious that are rejected as apocryphically for his name as United States wery lime biographical are made as Links as Davids L. 211. I

THE SEC SECURITY OF IS MADE

 $^{^{426}}$ See especially KAS, §§55-56 where Ibn al-Jawzī takes up the question of fawqīya. The traditional Ḥanbalī view was that discussions of terms like istiwa and fawqīya should be limited to a reiteration of what the Quran and the hadīth have to say, bila kayfa, that is, without further elaboration (cf., Laoust, La Profession de foi d'Ibn Batta, lxxiv-lxxv, and n. 175.). Ibn al-Jawzī knew, however, that Ḥanbalīs frequently went beyond the formulations of scripture in their discussion of such terminology. In the two sections of KAS where this question of istiwa, and fawqiya is taken up (§\$55-56, and 213-214; cf., also §135), Ibn al-Jawzī cites statements from three prominent Ḥanbalīs (Ibn Ḥamid, Abū Ya lā and Ibn Zāghūnī) which are problematic, in his view, because they naively assume that God's relationship to the world can adequately be described in spatial and temporal terms. Ahmad's position on the question is uncertain: some statements ascribed to him suggest a literalistic interpretation of istiwā' (e.g., Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābila, I, 28, 12-15); others seem to reflect discomfort with a literalistic interpretation. Abū Muḥammad at-Tamīmī quotes Aḥmad as ولا يجوز أن يقال: استوى بمماسّة ولا بملاقاة، تعالى الله عن ذلك علواً وكبيراً والله تعالى :follows (It is not permissible to say that He sits [on the Throne] in such a لم يلحقه تغيّر ولا تبدّل... way as to involve touching or contact. God the High and Mighty is beyond that, for He is not subject to change or alteration [Tabaqāt, II, 296, 21-297, 2]). Ibn al-Jawzī's solution to the problems posed by the terms istiwa, and fawqiya is to construe them metaphorically, but with a particular twist that seems to reflect a Mu^ctazilī influence (cf., §55, especially the last several sentences of the paragraph where he construes fawqīya in the qualitative terms of rank or status). Ibn Fūrak, an Ash'arite whose views are often indistinguishable from those held by Mu^ctazilīs on such questions, neatly summarizes the position defended above by Ibn al-Jawzī. In his commentary on the reference in S. 67: 17 to "Him who is in معنى ذلك أنّه فوق السماء لا على معنى فوقيّة المتمكّن في المكان لأنّ ذلك صفة :heaven," he states الجسم المحدود المحدث ولكنّ بمعنى ما وصف به أنّه فوق من طريق الرتبة والمنزلة والعظمة والقدرة (He is above the heaven not in the sense of being located in a particular place, for that is an attribute of finite, contingent bodies; "above" is ascribed to Him rather in the sense of rank. standing, esteem and power [Mushkil, 392, 6-9]).

 $^{^{\}rm 427}$ Because they define the relationship between things in quantitative and/or spatial terms. $\,^{\circ}$

Throne, is it [not] possible to speak of Him as 'sitting' (julūs) or 'standing' (qiyām), for nothing has been found in the teaching of our imām dealing with this point?" In fact, neither of these terms is permissible. Although the expression "sitting" ($qu^c\bar{u}d$), as applied to God, is found in a tradition going back to Ibn Abbās, the tradition in question is not authentic. 428 The expression "standing" (qivām), on the other hand, does occur in a tradition going back through 'Isā and Jābir 429 to 'Umar b. aṣ-Ṣubḥ. 430 However, according to Bukhārī, 'Umar b. as-Subh himself admitted that he had forged the Prophet's khutba. 431 Ibn Hibban said: "[cUmar] used to fabricate traditions and then construct isnāds for them made up of the names of reliable transmitters. 432 [fol.39a] His books on hadīth serve no useful purpose except to entertain." Dāragutnī said that his traditions are to be rejected. Al-Azdī said: "He was a callous liar." 433 Can a divine attribute be established on the authority of a man like this? 434 What has become of reason? God is too exalted to be described as standing, that is, [as a body] in an upright position. 435 He can be described as standing only in the sense of "standing for" [something, such as] justice $(q\bar{a}'im\ bi'l-qist)$. He cannot be described as sitting $(qu'\bar{u}d)$, for that is a condition peculiar to finite bodies.

⁴²⁸ See Ibn al-Jawzī's *Kitāb al-Mawḍū*'cāt, I, 122, 18; also his *al-'Ilal al-Mutanāhiya*, I, 20, 14, for examples of traditions that ascribe sitting ($jul\bar{u}s$ and $qu'\bar{u}d$, respectively) to God, all of which are rejected as apocryphal.

⁴²⁹ Perhaps ' \bar{I} sā b. Mūsā Ghunjār ($M\bar{\imath}z\bar{a}n$, III, 206, 22; and 325, 3) and Jābir b. 'Abd Allāh.

⁴³⁰ Dhahabī gives his name as 'Umar b. Ṣubḥ Abū Nuʿaym al-Khurāsānī but provides no dates and gives very little biographical information (*Mīzān*, III. 206-7. Also see *Tahdhīb*, VII, 463-4).

⁴³¹ In the $M\bar{\imath}z\bar{a}n$ this charge is attributed to Aḥmad b. ʿAlī as-Sulaymānī, who accuses him of having fabricated only the last part of the Prophet's *khuṭba*.

⁴³² Cf., *Kitāb aḍ-Du^cafā*⁵, II, 211, 17-18; *Mīzān*, III, 206, 23.

 $^{^{433}}$ On the statements by both Dāraquṭnī and al-Azdī, see the sources cited in the previous note.

⁴³⁴ Or perhaps, on the basis of a tradition like this.

 $^{^{435}}$ This sentence indicates that Ibn al-Jawzī's problem with this tradition was not just its $isn\bar{a}d$ but also the content of its matn.

signs of the Antichrist (day Land is not one-eyed."440

128 The falome maintain

Gud cannot be described it

being one-eyed is obviously

nul mean to ascribe to God I

in the attribution of such to

imment demed that God is

missential reason (dalif al-

were and with the word light

level apocalyptic Inerature in in of the Amichrist figured s

them On medieval Christia

and Christian rep

Declinary of the Middle Ages, L.

making literature on the subject.

To the depth. The subject to the following the following the following the of your state of your sta

See 2677, 71: 84, fol. 35a; material is a me-cycl mythical mater. For the more commonly of

Harm Firm, 1979. See also Bolds

= 1.17, 148, and VI, 140.

Service State Bertail, Amp. 1

"The text of ADS here hally

" Ch. Eng. (40) where the ex-

make head in it provided by

with the implication could be fee and. The

structure of a limb of inferential

informer of and all districts, when it

and the state of t

the property and al-lat

THE PARTY CASES IN

I SHOW WOMEN'S WIN

Table 10 (Married), 253, 8-82).

Marketti Ja

The depth for al-march ad-di-

129 lbn 'Aqil said: "The

The Forty-Ninth Tradition

215 There is a tradition in the two Sahihs, reported by Abū Hurayra, according to which the Messenger of God said: "Those who give as alms to God a measure of dates acquired honestly—for God accepts only what has been so acquired—He will receive the [dates] in His right hand and will nurture them, as one would do with a colt $(fal\bar{u}w)$, until they become as large as a mountain." ⁴³⁶ In the version of this tradition cited by Muslim, [the last sentence reads]: "[The dates] will grow in the palm of God's hand (kaff) until they are larger than a mountain." ⁴³⁷

216 The 'ulamā' maintain that this saying was part of an address intended for the general public and so [the Prophet made use of terms which] they could comprehend—terms such as *akhdh* (accepting or receiving), *tarbīya* (increasing or causing increase), and *numūw* (multiplying). When [the Prophet] spoke of God receiving something with His hand or taking it in His palm, he was evoking experiences understood by his audience. The term "right hand" was used because it served to underscore the importance of the matter. The term *tarbīya* is synonymous with *muḍāʿafa* (doubling or multiplying).

The Fiftieth Tradition

217 In the Ṣaḥīḥs of Bukhārī and Muslim there is a tradition from Anas b. Mālik in which it is reported that the Prophet said while discussing [the

⁴³⁶ See *DST*, 71; *BA*, fol. 35a, and *Kitāb al-Ḥadā'iq*, II, 200 (where the tradition is listed under the rubric of *faḍl aṣ-ṣadaqa*). The saying is cited frequently in the canonical collections of *ḥadīth*: Bukhārī, *zakāt*, 8 (Houdas, *Les traditions*, I, 459); *tawḥīd*, 23 (Houdas, *Les traditions*, IV, 596); Muslim, *zakāt*, 64; Tirmidhī, *zakāt*, 28; Nasā'ī, *zakāt*, 24, 28; Ibn Māja, *zakāt*, 28; *Musnad*, II, 268, 331, 381, 418, 419, 431, 538, 541, and VI, 24, 28. For glosses on the saying, see Bayhaqī (*Asmā'*, 328, 425); Ibn Khuzayma (*Tawḥīd*, 59-63): and Goldziher, Die *Ṭāḥiriten*, 169.

 $^{^{437}}$ See Muslim, $zak\bar{a}t$, 63; Nasā'ī, $zak\bar{a}t$, 48; Ibn Māja, $zak\bar{a}t$, 28; and Musnad, II, 268. 538.

⁴³⁸ Akhdh and numūw do not appear in the particular text of the tradition cited by Ibn al-Jawzī, but they do appear in a number of the many variant forms of the tradition (e.g.. akhdh in Ibn Māja, zakāt, 28; and numūw in Ibn Khuzayma, Tawhīd, 59, 10).

 $^{^{439}}$ Cf., Goldziher, Die $Z\bar{a}hiriten$, 169. For Ibn al-Jawzī's analysis of the term "hand." see *KAS*, §§41-43, and 92-97, etc.

signs of] the Antichrist $(dajj\bar{a}l)$: "He will have one eye (a^cwar) , but your Lord is not one-eyed." ⁴⁴¹

218 The 'ulamā' maintain that the chief aim of this saying is to assert that God cannot be described in any way that might imply imperfection, for being one-eyed is obviously an indication of imperfection. The Prophet did not mean to ascribe to God bodily organs, for there is nothing praiseworthy in the attribution of such to God.⁴⁴²

219 Ibn 'Aqīl said: "The ill-informed sometimes assume that since [the Prophet] denied that God is one-eyed He meant to establish by a kind of inferential reason ($dalīl\ al-khit\bar{a}b$)⁴⁴³ that God has two eyes. This is a

⁴⁴¹ See *DST*, 71; *BA*, fol. 35a; and *Kitāb al-Ḥadā*²iq, III, 376. The tradition on the Antichrist as a one-eyed mythical figure occurs frequently in the canonical collections of *ḥadīth*. For the more commonly cited forms of this tradition see: Bukhārī, *fitan*, 26; and Muslim, *fitan*, 101. See also Bukhārī, *jihād*, 178; *anbiyā*² 3; *adab*, 77; Muslim, *fitan*, 95; Abū Dāwūd, *malāḥim*, 26; Tirmidhī, *fitan*, 56, 62; Ibn Māja, *fitan*, 33; *Musnad*, I, 228, 250, 333; II, 27, 149; and VI, 140. For commentaries on the tradition, see Ibn Khuzayma, *Tawḥīd*, 43-44; Bayhaqī, *Asmā*², 312-313; Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 253; and *Mustamad*, 51. Cf., also *KAS*, §40.

⁴⁴² The text of *KAS* here follows almost verbatim Ibn Fūrak's commentary on this tradition (*Mushkil*, 253, 8-12).

 $^{^{443}}$ Cf., KAS, §40, where the expression $dal\bar{\imath}l$ al-khit $\bar{\imath}ab$ occurs. As a technical term in medieval jurisprudence, $dal\bar{\imath}l$ al-khit $\bar{\imath}ab$ (literally "the indicator of the text"—that is, the indicator found in, or provided by, the text) designated a method by which meanings present only by implication could be derived from the text on the basis of "indicators" (adilla) furnished by the text. The method aimed to identify such indicators and, by the application of a kind of inferential reason ($qiy\bar{a}s$), to arrive at the intended meaning. The $qiy\bar{a}s$ employed by some exegetes (such as Ibn 'Aq $\bar{\imath}$ l, e.g.) in this process differed from the $qiy\bar{a}s$ of classical jurisprudence where it was linked closely to the notion of "cause" or 'illa. In the case of $dal\bar{\imath}l$ al-khit $\bar{\imath}ab$, what is critical is the $dal\bar{\imath}l$. In a short passage in his al-W $\bar{a}dih$ $f\bar{\imath}$ U $\bar{\imath}u\bar{\imath}l$ al-Fiqh (edited by G. Makdisi [Beirut/Stuttgart, 1996] I, 17-18) Ibn 'Aq $\bar{\imath}l$ provides

serious misunderstanding [of the saying], for by denying that God is one-eyed [the Prophet] merely intended to negate [the possibility of] imperfection in Him. The intention of the Prophet's words then is that your Lord does not possess creaturely organs, for He would then be subject to imperfection. [fol.39b] This is analogous to the refusal to ascribe to God a son on the grounds that He is indivisible. If this tradition were taken to mean that God's form is complete or perfect (sūra kāmila), 444 that would not be sufficient to prove that He is divine or eternal, for this kind of perfection of form is a common occurrence. To those who say that [the words of the

a short, highly condensed, definition of the dalīl al-khiṭab and cites several texts—one from the Quran and having to do with the question of divorce, the other from the hadīth bearing on the question of zakāt—to illustrate the method. In connection with S. 65: 6, وَإِنْ If they be pregnant, then bear their expenses) he concludes on the كُنَّ أُولات حَمْل فَأَنْفَكُوا عَلَيْهِنَّ basis of dalīl al-khiṭab that in the case of women who are not pregnant at the time of في, divorce, no such support is required. Simarily, in connection with the prophetic saying, [If it is a question of] freely grazing sheep, zakāt [is required]), one may conclude that in the case of stall-fed cattle, zakāt is not required. In his discussion, Ibn 'Aqīl does not lead us through the steps involved in the application of dalīl al-khiṭab to these texts; all he provides is the conclusion. However, the examples he cites together with the conclusions reached are consistent with general practice among Shāficite and Hanafite jurists. How widely the method was used by Hanbalīs to deal with legal questions is unclear, but it does seem likely that those Ḥanbalīs opposed to the use of qiyās would also have been opposed to dalīl al-khiṭab applied in this way. It is known that Ibn Ḥazm, who was bitterely opposed to all forms of qiyas and who frequently sided with Hanbalis on legal and theological questions, was vehemently opposed to any kind of dalīl al-khiṭab that entailed the use of qiyās (for a more detailed treatment of Ibn Ḥazm's position on dalīl al-khiṭāb, see R. Arnaldez, Grammaire et théologie chez Ibn Hazm de Cordoue, 161-165 (cf., also Goldziher, Die Zāhiriten, 157-159; also al-Baghdādī, Uṣūl ad-Dīn, 223-224, for an Ash arite/Shāfi ite perspective on the question). While Ibn Aqīl, in principle, had no objection to the use of dalīl al-khitāb in the realm of positive law, he does note in the passage cited here in KAS (§219) that its use can produce conflicting conclusions. In the same passage—especially from the last several sentences of §219—it is clear that Ibn 'Aqīl had serious reservations regarding the application of dalīl al-khiṭāb to theological questions, especially to questions having to do with the divine attributes, where only peremptory evidence (adilla) is acceptable; here presumptive analogy (qiyās maznūn) is not sufficient. It may be used in dealing with theological questions of less moment, but two conditions must be met: 1) the findings arrived at through dalīl al-khiṭāb must square with the teaching of scripture taken as a whole, and 2) they must be consistent with the findings of reason (cf., Ibn 'Aqīl, Kitāb al-Jadal, 41-42). This was also Ibn al-Jawzī's position.

Prophet] establish that God from the text (dalil al-khi inferential reasoning is the validity as evidence in mahkām al-fiqh wa-firrīr ad so when it is a matter of believe it to be valid eviden by the sense of the reveal presumptive reasoning (qru of evidence when the evidence).

220 Among the "unique" Sahih] there is one, reporte "God says: "My servant d supererogatory prayers (name servant]. I am his ear (sami) sees, his hand (yad) by which the same is nothing more than the same is nothing more than the same is nothing more than the same is nothing more than the same is nothing more than the same is nothing more than the same is nothing more than the same is nothing more than the same is nothing more than the same is nothing than the same is not the same in the same in the same is not the same in the s

⁴⁴⁴ That is, that he possesses two eyes, not one; or perhaps, that he possesses a full compliment of bodily organs.

The translation given about meaning of the Arabic text. The parameter text. Until the full text is a specific text of the parameter to question. Nonetheless, the meaning mot be applied to texts that d

The term "unique" lajirad.

tum miner. This tradition was desi
and to have been the only one of i

a. ass. Bukhāri, rapāg, 38; and A.

The first part of the tradition mass My friend (wall) as an enem to life with nothing more dear to month. My servant does not cease

The Arabic word arradded he when the land putting off or def

Prophet] establish that God has two eyes on the basis of an inference drawn from the text $(dal\bar{\imath}l\ al\text{-}khit\bar{\imath}ab)$, it should be pointed out that this kind of inferential reasoning is the subject of debate [among scholars] regarding its validity as evidence in matters of law based on the data of revelation $(ahk\bar{a}m\ al\text{-}fiqh\ wa\text{-}fur\bar{u}^c\ ad\text{-}d\bar{\imath}n)$. [And if that is true] then how much more so when it is a matter of a theology based on reason $(us\bar{\imath}ul)$. Those who believe it to be valid evidence (hujja) are of the opinion that it is superseded by the sense of the revealed text $(ma^cn\bar{a}\ an\text{-}nutq)$, when in reality it is presumptive reasoning $(qis\bar{\imath}s\ mazn\bar{\imath}nn)$. How then can it have the authority of evidence when the evidence provided by reason condemns it by refuting it?" 445

The Fifty-First Tradition

220 Among the "unique" traditions $(afr\bar{a}d)^{446}$ cited by Bukhārī [in his $\underline{S}ah\bar{i}h$] there is one, reported by Abū Hurayra, in which the Prophet said: "God says: "My servant does not cease to draw near to Me through his supererogatory prayers $(naw\bar{a}fil)$ until I love him. Now when I love [My servant], I am his ear (sam^c) by which he hears, his eye (baṣar) by which he sees, his hand (yad) by which he grasps, and his foot (rijl) by which he walks. There is nothing more distasteful 448 to Me than taking the life of a

⁴⁴⁵ The translation given above is an attempt to render what seems to me to be the meaning of the Arabic text. The passage quoted from Ibn c Aq $\bar{\text{q}}$ I must have been part of a longer text. Until the full text is recovered the exact meaning of these sentences may be open to question. Nonetheless, the general sense of the passage cited by Ibn al-Jawz $\bar{\text{i}}$ is reasonably clear: that while the use of $dal\bar{\text{i}}l$ al- $khit\bar{\text{q}}b$ may be permissible, such a method ought not be applied to texts that deal with foundational theological questions $(u\bar{\text{y}}\bar{\text{u}}l)$.

⁴⁴⁶ The term "unique" ($afr\bar{a}d$, sing. fard) refers to reports passed on by a single transmitter. This tradition was designated fard because Sharīk b. 'Abd Allāh b. Abī Nimr is said to have been the only one of his generation to tansmit it (Dhahabī, $M\bar{\imath}z\bar{a}n$, I, 641-642; cf., also Bukhārī, $riq\bar{a}q$, 38; and Abū Nu'aym, Hilya, I, 4-5).

⁴⁴⁷ The first part of the tradition, omitted by Ibn al-Jawzī, reads: "God said: 'He who treats My friend (*walī*) as an enemy, I permit warfare against him; My servant draws near to Me with nothing more dear to Me than what I have prescribed as his duty (*iftaraḍtu ʿalayhi*). My servant does not cease to...." (Bukhārī, *riqāq*, 38, 2).

⁴⁴⁸ The Arabic word *taraddud* here rendered "distasteful" includes the notion of wavering or hesitating (and putting off or deferring) in the face of what is distasteful.

believer (*mu'min*); he loathes [the thought of] death, and I loathe doing him harm.' "449

221 The expression "I am his ear, his eye, etc.," are figures of speech (mathal) that can be interpreted in three different ways. In the first place, they may be taken to mean that "[the believer] loves obedience to 'Me' $(t\bar{a}^cat\bar{t})$ as much as he loves his own limbs $(jaw\bar{a}ri\hbar)$." Secondly, they may mean that "he is so completely devoted to 'Me' that nothing other than his devotion to 'Me' concerns him, and so he devotes himself to [the keeping of] My commands." Thirdly, ["I am his ear, his eye, etc.,] in the sense that I make his intentions $(maq\bar{a}sid)$ a reality as he does through his own ears, his eyes, and hands, that is, through [the very limbs] by means of which he protects himself against his enemy." 450

222 The term *taraddud*⁴⁵¹ is used because it is an expression that we understand [from experience]. God, however, is far beyond such a thing taken in its literal sense (*can ḥaqīqatihi*); in short, [the saying] belongs to the same class as the *ḥadīth qudsī*: "To him who approaches Me walking, I will come to him running (*harwala*)." One of the *culamā* said: "When a believer is ill and prays for the restoration of his health, and then is restored—there is a kind of *taraddud* (hesitation or wavering), as it were, [in God] before finally decreeing his death." 453

fol.40s ZZ3 Juhayr h. Murtim repi God and said: "O Messen fieir families are starving. thing. Przy [to God] for ra hertalf and that God inter replied: "Do you understand began to praise God and he from the expression on hi me he usked to intercede a majestic for that! Do you u Throne (furnk) is above (9 we these words he em ments like the cre the ritler and his gear 1 " 49 334 Muhammad b. Ishian in satisface to the problem of maint. Here is the question m in Etcl is the correct one, in is, the Propilet most have felthe of Es creatures. Ser Burback Armir, 417, 18 he transmitten of the tradition, or are the limit of Abill-Adha ov. Ct. General Iraque, 76 and If make to the amount of this made That is, in order to also Bullion must that the "dome" w " (1), (857, 13; and 84, tol. the agreem only in Abi Di Committee to be Convision 1935-99 March 295, 13-25c mental Revallational refe Million. No. Cler the last line of this is Water to Street to Tax suffer of the well known brings. 1577 and tied in Baghdad in 15

Buch that he had both his defend

⁴⁴⁹ This *ḥadīth qudsī* is also cited by Ibn al-Jawzī in *DST*, 72-73; and *BA*, fol. 35a. Though quoted frequently in medieval sources, the saying appears in only one of the canonical collections of *ḥadīth*, *viz.*, Bukhārī's Ṣaḥīḥ, *riqāq*, 38 (2) (cf., Houdas, *Les traditions*, IV, 296). There is a similar text in Ibn Ḥanbal's *Musnad* (VI, 256); the text cited by Ibn Ḥanbal, however, is attributed to ʿĀʾisha, not to Abū Hurayra. The tradition is cited and discussed critically at some length by two knowledgeable authorities, Bayhaqī (*Asmā*², 490-495) and Dhahabī (*Mīzān*, I, 641-642). Since the tradition lends itself naturally to a mystical interpretation, it was bound to attract the attention of Sufīs. For an indication of how Ṣūfīs construed the text of this tradition, see the following among others: Sarrāj, *Luma*٬ 383-384; Makkī, *Qūt al-Qulūb*, II, 109; Qushayrī, *Risāla*, 610; Ibn ʿArabī, *Mishkāt*, 38; Madanī, *Itḥāfāt Sanīya*, 18-19, 36, 68, 75; and the *Ḥilya* of Abū Nuʿaym (I, 4-5).

⁴⁵⁰ God's identification with the believer's limbs (understood figuratively) is another way of saying that God works through the believer to achieve His purposes.

⁴⁵¹ To hesitate or waver in the face of what is distasteful (see §220 where it is used).

⁴⁵² Cf. §§33, 115 and 181-182. For more on the saying, see notes to §181.

⁴⁵³ This, however, is not actual hesitation or wavering on God's part; it is merely what appears as hesitation viewed from the vantage point of human experience. Abū Sulaymān al-Khaṭṭābī gives a similar explanation of *taraddud* in his commentary on the saying (see Bayhaqī, *Asmā*², 491-492, where al-Khaṭṭābī's commentary is quoted at length).

[fol.40a] The Fifty-Second Tradition

223 Jubayr b. Mu^ctim reported that a Bedouin came to the Messenger of God and said: "O Messenger of God, [my] people are in difficult straits: their families are starving, their belongings are depleted and their herds are dying. Pray [to God] for rain! We beg that you intercede with God [on our behalf] and that God intercede with you." Then the Messenger of God replied: "Do you understand what you are saying?" Thereupon the Messenger began to praise God and he continued until his Companions perceived that [from the expression] on his face. Then [the Prophet] said: "God should not be asked to intercede with one of His creatures, for His station is too majestic for that! Do you understand what God is (mā Allāh)? Verily, His Throne ('arsh) is above ('alā) the heavens thus and so—and as he was saying these words he 455 made a dome-like shape 456 with his fingers 457 —and verily, it creaks like the creaking of a camel's saddle from [the weight of] the rider [and his gear]." 458

224 Muḥammad b. Isḥāq⁴⁵⁹ was the only traditionist of his generation to

⁴⁵⁴ In addition to the problem of the numerous variant readings, none of which is entirely persuasive, there is the question of the antecedent of *dhālika*. Assuming that the reading given in *KAS* is the correct one, it is possible to see in *dhālika* a reference to the pain, even shock, the Prophet must have felt at the Bedouin's suggestion that God might interecede with one of His creatures.

⁴⁵⁵ See Bayhaq \bar{i} , $Asm\bar{a}^2$, 417, 18-19, where the gesture in question is attributed to one of the transmitters of the tradition, not to the Prophet. The two possibilities noted by Bayhaq \bar{i} are Wahb b. Jar \bar{i} r and Ab \bar{i} d'l-Azhar \bar{i} , both of whom appear in the $isn\bar{a}d$ of the tradition.

⁴⁵⁶ Cf., Gimaret, *Image*, 76 and n. 4. Gimaret believes that "tent" is the correct rendering of *qubba* in the context of this tradition.

⁴⁵⁷ That is, in order to illustrate the Prophet's words. In his commentary on the tradition, Bayhaqī insists that the "dome" was meant to represent the Throne ($Asm\bar{a}^2$, 418).

⁴⁵⁸ Cf., *DST*, 73; and *BA*, fol. 35b. Among the standard collections of *hadīth*, this tradition appears only in Abū Dāwūd, *sunna*, 18. However, it is quoted in full by Ibn Khuzayma in his *Tawhīd*, 103-104 (cf., Dārimī in his *Radd ʿalāʾl-Jahmīya*, 272, 16-23; and Ājurrī, *Sharīʿa*, 293, 12-21); and by Bayhaqī in his *Asmāʾ*, 418, along with a lengthy commentary. For additional references to this tradition in its many variants, see Gimaret, *Image*, 76. On the last line of this tradition, see also *KAS*, §190 and notes.

⁴⁵⁹ Muḥammad b. Isḥāq b. Yasār Abū 'Abd Allāh, a *mawlā* of the Banū Muṭṭalib and author of the well known biography of the Prophet, who was born in Medina around 85/704 and died in Baghdad in 150/767 or 151/768. The biographical sources leave little doubt that he had both his defenders and his detractors ($M\bar{\imath}z\bar{a}n$, III, 469, 1). Zuhrī referred

transmit this tradition from Ya^cqūb b. ^cUtba. ⁴⁶⁰ The most competent authorities did not cite [traditions transmitted by] these two men as a basis for legal rulings. Abū Sulaymān al-Khaṭṭābī said: "This tradition, when taken in its literal sense ('alā ṭāhirihi), is in its own way an attempt to define the modalities (kayfīya) of things, but such is forbidden when it is a question of God and His attributes. It should be observed that [this tradition] draws on the language of human experience (kalām taqrīb) for the purpose of expressing the might and majesty of God in such a way that those who hear it might understand, even when they are crude Bedouin who do not possess the means by which to grasp language that is subtle and intricate." ⁴⁶¹

225 [Al-Khaṭṭābī continued:] "The question 'Do you understand what God is?' is another way of asking: 'Do you comprehend the greatness and majesty of God?' The expression 'it creaks because of Him' means that [the Throne] is unable [to bear] the might and majesty of God, for it is well known that a saddle creaks because of its occupant, that is, because of the weight, or because of its inability to sustain it. By using the kind of expression that was familiar to his listeners, [the Prophet] intended to clarify the measure of God's power and majesty so as to reinforce the point that the one who occupies a lofty position does not intercede with one who is below him in rank."

TRADITIONS CO Do We have already no The Throne) creaks on a [finl.406] Abū Huravra Westly, God is all-hearing and his thumb on his eves a III The falour mains affirm that God possesses th the two organs which are th untier to make this point). The est such organs, ad Mini Dundil reported to the less three hours of Bank of Remembrance (dis " He wistes]. During to han -e is His dwelling and Blessed is the one who to the lowest he me Fire critics out. Rise CLERKIN. " 1 2 M. For I'm al-lawn's E. Turist: VIII. 494-495; and on our Till and St. St. 35 LE 45 DE UN matistion alor See Berlinel, April, 179-180 time in this expression. See 1957. 74; and 84, 64. man milestone, but a sid

Donnell Winter E 1 98; In King

to him as one of the best informed historians of Medina in his day, and others (among them 'Āṣim b. Qatāda, Ibn Ma'īn and Ibn Sa'da) regarded him as reliable in matters of hadīth. The judgment of others, however, was not as kind. Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal, while accepting historical reports transmitted by him, refused to use hadīths related by him as a basis for deciding legal questions—reportedly because of Ibn Isḥāq's use of the collective isnād, but there were others (such as Nasā'ī) who accused him of outright deception in matters of tradition. He was also accused of having Shī'ite sympathies (Yāqūt, Irshād, VI, 400) and of being crypto-Mu'tazilī in his theology (Tahdhīb, IX, 42, 6ff.; Mīzān, III, 469, 11). For a sketch of his life and a list of the more important sources on him, see EI', III, 810-811 (J. M. B. Jone); and GAS, I, 288-290.

⁴⁶⁰ Ya^cqūb b. ^cUtba b. al-Mughīra ath-Thaqafī al-Madanī, who died in 128/745. He was a contemporary of Zuhrī, an expert on the life of the Prophet and the transmitter of a number of reports on the Prophet that have been preserved by Ṭabarī in his *Ta²rīkh* (see index). From these it is evident that he did not normally cite the informants on whom he depended. For accounts of his life see Ibn Ḥajar's *Tahdhīb* (XI, 392) as well as his *Taqrīb* (II, 376). For comments on Ya^cqūb b. ^cUtba as a source and transmitter of prophetic traditions, see A. Fischer, *Biographien von Gewährsmännern des Ibn Isḥāq*, 87-88.

⁴⁶¹ For a discussion of al-Khaṭṭābī's interpretation of this tradition, see Gimaret, *Images*, 79.

226 We have already noted earlier that the $Q\bar{a}d\bar{\iota}$ [Abū Ya^clā] once said: "[The Throne] creaks on account of the weight of the divine essence." ⁴⁶² Now this is tantamount to conceiving and representing God in corporeal terms.

The Fifty-Third Tradition

227 [**fol.40b**] Abū Hurayra reported that after the Prophet recited the verse "Verily, God is all-hearing and all-seeing," 463 he placed his index finger and his thumb on his eyes and ear. 464

228 The ' $ulam\bar{a}$ ' maintain that by this action [the Prophet] meant to affirm that God possesses the power to hear and see, and that he pointed to the two organs which are the respective seats of these human faculties [in order to make this point]. He did not mean to imply that God actually possesses such organs. 465

The Fifty-Fourth Tradition

229 Abū Dardā³ reported that the Prophet said: "Verily, God descends during the last three hours of the night. During the first hour He opens [the Book of] Remembrance (*dhikr*), and He erases what He wishes and records [what He wishes]. During the second hour He descends to the Garden of 'Adn⁴⁶⁶—it is His dwelling ($d\bar{a}ruhu$), for He alone resides there—and He says: 'Blessed is the one who enters you.' And finally, during the third hour, He descends to the lowest heaven with His spirit ($r\bar{u}h$) and the angels. And trembling He cries out: 'Rise up before My majesty and power ('*izzatī*)!' "⁴⁶⁷

⁴⁶² Cf., §§192-193.

⁴⁶³ S. 4: 58. For Ibn al-Jawzī's gloss on this verse, see *Zād al-Masīr*, II, 113-114. Cf., Ṭabarī, *Tafsīr*, VIII, 494-495; and Zamakhsharī, *Kashshāf*, I, 535.

 $^{^{464}}$ Cf., DST, 74; and BA, fol. 35b. Both Bayhaq $\bar{\imath}$ ($Asm\bar{a}^2$, 179-180) and Ibn Khyzayma ($Tawh\bar{\imath}d$, 43) cite this tradition along with several others of a similar content.

⁴⁶⁵ See Bayhaqī, Asmā³, 179-180, where the same argument is made. Cf., Mu^ctamad, 50.

⁴⁶⁶ For more on this expression, see §202 and the notes to the paragraph.

⁴⁶⁷ See *DST*, 74; and *BA*, fol. 35b (cf., also Ibn al-Jawzī's *al-ʿIlal al-Mutanāhiya*, I, 38-39, where a variant form of this tradition is cited). The tradition does not occur in any of the canonical collections, but it is cited frequently in religious texts of the period. See, e.g., Dhahabī, *Mīzān*, II, I, 98; Ibn Khuzayma, *Tawhīd*, 135; and Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 399-400.

230 The text of the above report has come down to us through the transmission of Ziyāda al-Anṣārī. 468 When this tradition was mentioned to Bukhārī by certain traditionists, he declared it to be objectionable (*munkar al-ḥadīth*). 469 Abū Ḥātim b. Ḥibbān said: "[Ziyāda] transmitted faulty traditions (*manākīr*) on the authority of reputable persons [through the use of contrived *isnāds*]; his traditions ought to be avoided." 470 Abū Jaʿfar b. Abī Shayba, 471 one of the transmitters of this tradition, erroneously recorded his name as Zāʾida. Ziyāda is the only correct spelling.

231 Assuming that [the above tradition] is sound, we offer the following interpretation: [In the tradition, the Garden of 'Adn] is said to be "God's abode" $(d\bar{a}ruhu)$ in the same way [the Quran] ascribes to God a house (bayt). People frequently speak of this or that as being His abode (maskan), but we only use such language [as a figure of speech] because [we know] it is not possible to speak of God's having a place of abode $(sukn\bar{a})$ [in the literal sense of the term]. 473

The Fifty-Fifth Tradition

232 Abū Umāma reported that the Prophet said: "My Lord promised me that He would permit seventy thousand and three handfuls (*ḥathayāt*)⁴⁷⁴ [fol.41a] of My community to enter Paradise."

⁴⁶⁸ Dhahabī gives his name as Ziyāda b. Muḥammad al-Anṣārī, but little else is known of him except that he was a traditionist of questionable character (*Mīzān*, I, 95; cf., also Ibn Hajar, *Tahdhīb*, III, 392-393; and Ibn al-Jawzī's *Kitāb aḍ-Ḍuʿafā*', I, 303). Judging from the dates of men from whom he received traditions, Ziyāda appears to have flourished during the latter half of the Umayyad period.

⁴⁶⁹ Cf., EI², III, 26, for a discussion of this term.

⁴⁷⁰ Cf., Mīzān, I, 95; Kitāb ad-Du afā, I, 303; and al-Ilal al-Mutanāhiya, I, 39.

⁴⁷¹ Abū Ja^cfar Muḥammad b. ^cUthmān [b. Sulaymān] b. Abī Shayba, a *mawlā* of the Banū ^cAbs who died in 297/910. For a list of biographical sources and assessments of his work as a *muḥaddith*, see notes to §168. In addition to the sources cited there, see also *Muntazam*, VI, 95-96.

⁴⁷² An allusion to S. 2: 125; and S. 22:26, where the expression "My house" (baytī) occurs.

⁴⁷³ For a similar interpretation of the tradition, see Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 400.

⁴⁷⁴ The Arabic text specifies "His handfuls" thus implying that God has hands.

⁴⁷⁵ Cf., DST, 75; BA, fol. 36a; and Bayhaqī, Asmā², 329. Versions of the tradition are

233 The term <code>hathya</code> (singular of <code>hathayat</code>) means what fills the palm of the hand (<code>mil^al-kaff</code>). The expression was used in the above saying as a way of making the meaning of the tradition accessible to human understanding. The term in any case is not to be taken literally (<code>lā haqīqata'l-hathya</code>).

The Fifty-Sixth Tradition

234 Abū Hurayra reported that the Prophet said: "On the day of judgment God will sit above the Bridge (al- $qantara\ al$ - $wust\bar{a}$) between Paradise and Hell." ⁴⁷⁶

235 'Uthmān b. Abī 'Ātika,⁴⁷⁷ one of the transmitters of this tradition, was said by Yaḥyā [b. Ma'īn] to be worthless as a transmitter.⁴⁷⁸

also found in Ibn Māja, zuhd, 34; Tirmidhī, $qiy\bar{a}ma$, 12; and the Musnad, V, 268. Bayhaqī indicates that he regards the tradition as weak, though he does not specify precisely what is problematic in the tradition ($Asm\bar{a}^2$, 330).

⁴⁷⁶ See Ibn al-Jawzī, *Kitāb al-Mawḍūʿāt*, I, 127, where the tradition is cited along with a complete *isnād*. Cf., also *DST*, 75; *BA*, fol. 36a; and *Tahdhīb*, VII, 124. For additional references, see *BA*, (Beirut, 1987), 138, n. 5. The tradition does not appear in any of the canonical collections of *ḥadīth* and seems to have been regarded as apocryphal by most *ḥadīth* authorities. The *qanṭara*, however, is mentioned in several *ḥadīth* found in the canonical collections of *ḥadīth*. In the best known of these (cited by Bukhārī on the authority of Abū Saʿīd al-Khudrī), the Prophet is reported as saying: "The believers will be freed from Hell, but they will be held back at the Bridge (*qanṭara*) between Paradise and Hell; there they will be punished for the wrongs they did to each other in this life. After they have been corrected and purified they will be given permission to enter Paradise" (Bukhārī, *riqāq*, 48; cf., also *Musnad*, III, 13, 57, 63, 74; and H. Laoust, *La Profession de foi d'Ibn Baṭṭa*, 95, n. 1, where the *qanṭara* is related to the doctrine of the *ṣirāṭ*).

⁴⁷⁷ He was a popular preacher $(q\bar{a}s\bar{s})$ and a Quran reciter from Damascus. Dhahabī gives his *kunya* as Abū Ḥafs and reports that he died in 155/771 ($M\bar{z}a\bar{n}$, III, 40).

 $^{^{478}}$ It is clear that Ibn al-Jawzī shared this judgment, though in his $Kit\bar{a}b$ $a\dot{q}$ - $Du^caf\bar{a}^o$ (II, 168) he does cite one authority (a certain Abū Saʿīd ad-Dimashqī known by the laqab Duḥaym) who had words of praise for Ibn Abī ʿĀtika. On the views of other scholars, see Dhahabī, $M\bar{\imath}z\bar{a}n$, III, 161-162; and $Kit\bar{a}b$ al- $Mawd\bar{\imath}u^c\bar{a}t$, I, 127. Despite the fact that Ibn al-Jawzī limits his criticism to the $isn\bar{a}d$, we can be certain that it was the matn that troubled him most, viz., its anthropomorphic portrayal of God as occupying a particular point in space.

The Fifty-Seventh Tradition

236 According to the Qāḍī [Abū Yaʿlā], Muḥammad b. Kaʿb al-Quraẓī said: "When the people heard the Quran from the mouth of Raḥmān (*min fī'r-Rahmān*) it was as if they heard nothing."

237 The Qāḍī said: "It is permissible to apply the term 'mouth' to God." It is astonishing that he takes the term $f\bar{\imath}$ in the expression $min\ f\bar{\imath}'r$ - $Raḥm\bar{a}n$ to mean mouth [in its literal sense] and so asserts it to be one of God's attributes on the basis of a statement made by a Follower—a statement which does not, in fact, go back to him. ⁴⁸⁰ As for the prophetic tradition: "God's servants do not approach Him with anything like what proceeds from Him," ⁴⁸¹ the expression "what proceeds from Him" ($m\bar{a}\ kharaja\ minhu$) should be construed to mean what becomes manifest through Him ($zahara\ 'anhu$). We are not to suppose that the expression implies one body coming out of another, for God is not a body (jism) and His word ($kal\bar{a}m$) is not a body (jism).

138 I heard the following in which Sahl b. Sa'd reputgment God will be or durkness. No one will hear with ease he would perish. 139 This tradition, of without any basis whatevent 'In my view one show hatva [b. Ma'in] said: "Hearing unreliable in matters.

[fol.4

Law Arus reported that the law to one of its surfaces of light; by it He creates may death. He exalts an tay to the next." 47

See Knith al-Mongir in I, I and Albard The All, incl. Miss. Disc.
Desired Warmer 213-214-291

Tier Kind of Mondray J. 1.

THE RA. THE WAR and Mile

⁴⁷⁹ The saying is found in *DST*, 75-76; and in *BA*, fol. 36a, though it is not among the sayings of Muḥammad b. Kaʿb collected by Abū Nuʿaym (Ḥilya, III, 212-221) or by Ibn al-Jawzī (Ṣafwa, II, 75-76). It is possible that Ibn al-Jawzī knew it only from the writings of Abū Yaʿlā, since it is this latter who is quoted as its source. My rendering of the saying above must be considered tentative.

الله was apparently not uncommon for Ḥanbalīs to describe God as having a mouth. No less an authority than Aḥmad himself states in his most important creed: وكلّم الله موسى الله الكلام موسى ين عمران يوم (God spoke to Moses directly with his mouth [Tabaqāt al-Ḥanābila, I, 29, 18]). Barbahārī, a 10th century Ḥanbalī, writes: والإيمان بأنّ الله هو الذي كلّم موسى بن عمران يوم (God spoke to Mūsā b. ʿImrān on Mt. Sinai, and he heard the sound of God's speech—and no one else's—with his own ears. Whoever says otherwise is an unbeliever [Ibid, II, 26, 10-11]). Ibn Fūrak takes up the question of whether a fam (mouth) can be ascribed to God in connection with those traditions that speak of God's laughing (Mushkil, 476-477).

 $^{^{481}}$ See §§169-170 where the saying is cited and discussed. For sources, see the notes to §169.

⁴⁸² See §§7, 29, and 34. Also *Mushkil*, 286-287, where Ibn Fūrak glosses the saying in terms that are virtually identical to those used here by Ibn al-Jawzī.

The Fifty-Eighth Tradition

238 I heard the following tradition [from 'Abd al-Wahhāb b. al-Mubārak] in which Sahl b. Sa'd reports that the Prophet said: "[On the day of judgment] God will be concealed by seventy thousand veils of light and darkness. No one will hear even the slightest sound from [behind?] those veils else he would perish." 483

239 This tradition, of which Mūsā b. 'Ubayda was a transmitter, is without any basis whatever. ⁴⁸⁴ [Speaking of Mūsā,] Aḥmad [b. Ḥanbal] said: "In my view one should not accept traditions handed down from him." Yaḥyā [b. Maʿīn] said: "He is not a reliable traditionist. Moreover, Mūsā received it from 'Umar b. al-Ḥakam, ⁴⁸⁵ a man whom Bukhārī described as being unreliable in matters pertaining to ḥadīth." ⁴⁸⁶

[fol.41b] The Fifty-Ninth Tradition

240 Anas reported that the Prophet said: "Verily, there is with God a Tablet (*lawh*); one of its surfaces is made of pearls, the other of sapphire. His pen is of light; by it He creates and gives sustenance, and by it He gives life and brings death. He exalts and brings low, and He does what He wills from one day to the next." ⁴⁸⁷

241 This is an apocryphal tradition transmitted by Muḥammad b. 'Uthmān

⁴⁸³ See *Kitāb al-Mawdūrāt*, I, 166, where the saying appears with a complete *isnād*. See also *DST*, 76; *BA*, fol. 36a; Dhahabī, *Mīzān*, III, 191; Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 291; Ibn Khuzayma, *Tawhīd*, 20-21; and *KAS*, §137, where the first part of the saying is cited and glossed. Bayhaqī cites several variant, and less explicitly anthropmorphist, forms of the tradition (*Asmā*², 402-403). The saying, as cited by Ibn al-Jawzī, does not appear in the canonical collections of *hadīth*.

⁴⁸⁴ Mūsā b. 'Ubayda Abū 'Abd al-'Azīz ar-Rabadhī, who died in 153/770 (cf., *Mīzān*, IV, 213; and *Kitāb aḍ-Ḍuʿafā*', III, 147).

⁴⁸⁵ 'Umar b. al-Ḥakam al-Ḥudhalī al-Baṣrī, who flourished during the late Umayyad period (*Mīzān*, III, 191; and *Kitāb aḍ-Ḥu* 'afā', II, 207).

⁴⁸⁶ Here again Ibn al-Jawzī confines his remarks to the *isnād*—perhaps because he has dealt with the anthropomorphic implications of the *matn* earlier in *KAS*. See, in particular, his remarks in §§137-139 where the analysis he offers is strikingly similar to that of Ibn Fūrak (cf., *Mushkil*, 213-214; 292, 8-12; and 460-465).

⁴⁸⁷ See *Kitāb al-Mawḍū*fāt, I, 117-118, where the tradition is found with a full *isnād*. See also *DST*, 76; *BA*, fol. 36a; and *Mīzān*, III, 641.

al-Ḥuddānī. 488 [Al-Azdī said that] his traditions are to be discarded. 489

The Sixtieth Tradition

242 Jābir ⁴⁹⁰ reported that the Prophet said: "When you see the wind $(r\bar{l}h)$, do not curse it, for it is the *nafas* ⁴⁹¹ of Raḥmān which brings both mercy and punishment. Rather ask God for the good things it brings and seek His protection against the harm it can cause." ⁴⁹²

243 The term *nafas* as used here means that by which anxiety and distress are dispelled (*tanfīs ʿan al-makrūb*).⁴⁹³ A similar use of this term is to be found in another tradition reported by Abū Hurayra. In it the Messenger of God is reported to have said: "I find the *nafas* of God coming from the direction of Yemen." ⁴⁹⁴ By the term *nafas*, the Prophet was here referring to his escape from difficulty (*tanfīs ʿan al-kurba*) through the aid given him by the people of Medina, whose ancestors had come from Yemen. This is a matter of [historical] fact on which all Muslims agree.

244 Ibn Ḥāmid said: "I have seen [statements in the writings of] some

members of the Hanbali s frine auribute. W They sa the facility the facility." dubili-30 are all created (m me of God's amributes to hander) that comes from the tund things are under a curs a bealton interior (second ma DAS When a group of ignor manifol they were not ple nomorphist teachers. C. Fil Said to be the violent cold nifed in S. 51: 41 as di The wind that blows from the The cold, dry month wind ! mente gare dobes, for is a The race wind, frequently de-The screening were wind, it is W. Long, 347 (-2). Ster Friend, Monkell, 195, 199 The few part of this paragrap

med. Bow could they have

British but of his process to

the later week. To assume that

per to be product to proce of

⁴⁸⁸ Or perhaps al-Ḥarrānī (*Mīzān*, III, 641, 8). Little is known of him except that he received traditions from Mālik b. Dīnār (d. 131/748) and probably flourished in the late Umayyad and early 'Abbāsid periods. Cf., also *Kitāb aḍ-Ḍuʿafā*', III, 84.

⁴⁸⁹ Cf., *Kitāb al-Mawḍū̄sāt*, I, 118, 3; *Kitāb aḍ-Ḍusafā*, III, 84, 6; and *Mīzān*, III, 641, 10.

⁴⁹⁰ See §198.

⁴⁹¹ Among the more common meanings of *nafas* is breath or gentle breeze (Lane, 2828/2). *Nafas* can also mean a liberation or freeing from something (*Lisān al-ʿArab*, VI, 236/1-2; Lane, 2829/1).

⁴⁹² The saying is cited and glossed frequently in medieval sources: *DST*, 76f.; *BA*, fol. 36a; Ibn Qutayba, *Ta²wīl*, 267 (Lecomte, 236-237); Bayhaqī, *Asmā²*, 463; and Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 195-196, among others. Varying forms of the saying also appear in several canonical collections: Ibn Māja, *adab*, 29; Tirmidhī, *fitan*, 65; and the *Musnad*, II, 250, 268, 409, 437, 518; and V, 123. Cf., also Goldziher, *Die Zāhiriten*, 153, n. 3. For lexical discussions of the saying, with particular reference to *nafas*, see the following note.

⁴⁹³ According to the lexicographers, *nafas* is sometimes used with the meaning of the verbal noun of Form II (*tanfīs*: liberating or freeing from...). For more on this interpretation, see Bayhaqī, *Asmā*, 463, who reports the view of al-Azharī; cf., also *Lisān al-ʿArab*, VI, 236/2, 7ff.; *Asās al-Balāgha*, 648/1; *al-Qāmūs al-Muhīt*, II, 255; Lane, 2829/1; and Ibn al-Jawzī's *Gharīb al-Ḥadīth*, II, 425.

⁴⁹⁴ See *DST*, 77; Ibn Qutayba, *Ta²wīl*, 268; and Ibn al-Jawzī, *Gharīb al-Ḥadīth*, II, 425. For additional references, see the notes to §242.

members of the Ḥanbalī school asserting that breathing (yatanaffas) is a divine attribute. They said: The various winds ($riy\bar{a}h$) that blow such as the ' $\bar{a}sifa$, 496 the ' $aq\bar{i}m$, 497 the $jan\bar{u}b$, 498 the $sham\bar{a}l$, 499 the $sab\bar{a}$, 500 and the $dab\bar{u}r^{501}$ are all created ($makhl\bar{u}qa$); there is, however, a wind ($r\bar{i}h$) that is one of God's attributes ($sif\bar{a}t$): it is a gentle, life-giving breeze ($nas\bar{i}mhay\bar{a}^{2}\bar{i}$) that comes from the breath (nafas) of Raḥmān.'" Those who believe such things are under a curse ($la^{c}na$), for they represent God as a body with a hollow interior (jasad mujawwaf). Such persons are not Muslims.

[Concluding Remarks]

245 When a group of ignorant men learned of this book of mine (${}^{c}alima\ bi-kit\bar{a}b\bar{\imath}$) they were not pleased, since they were fond of the views of their anthropomorphist teachers. ⁵⁰³ They responded: "[The viewpoint defended in

⁴⁹⁵ Cf., §30.

⁴⁹⁶ Said to be the violent (cold) wind that brings clouds (Lane, 2064/2).

⁴⁹⁷ Identified in S. 51: 41 as the westerly wind that destroyed the people of ${}^{c}\bar{A}d$ ($Z\bar{a}d$ al-Masīr, VIII, 39; Lane, 2117/2-3).

⁴⁹⁸ The wind that blows from the south bringing rain.

⁴⁹⁹ The cold, dry north wind. "When it blows for seven days upon the people of Egypt, they prepare grave clothes, for its nature is deadly" (Lane, 1601/1).

⁵⁰⁰ The east wind, frequently described as gentle and pleasant (Lane, 1650/1-2).

⁵⁰¹ The scorching west wind; it brings neither clouds or rain and is said to be the worst of winds (Lane, 847/1-2).

⁵⁰² Ibn Fūrak, *Mushkil*, 195, 199.

the contents of *KAS* and apparently offered criticisms of it even before it was completed and issued. How could they have learned of the contents of the work in advance of its "publication"? Two possibilities suggest themselves: a) perhaps they had learned of the contents of the work indirectly, by word-of-mouth, perhaps from sources close to Ibn al-Jawzī (colleagues, friends, students)—persons in whom Ibn al-Jawzī might have confided as the work was being written; or perhaps b) a shorter version of *KAS* had already been in circulation prior to the latter's completion—from which Ibn al-Jawzī's critics could have learned of his views and the arguments developed in support of those views. We know that Ibn al-Jawzī did produce a shorter version of *KAS* (under the title of *Daf^c Shubhat at-Tashbīh*). On the basis of our present knowledge, however, it is impossible to assign a definite date to this latter work. To assume that it was in circulation prior to the completion of *KAS* is going too far given the present state of our knowledge. Until more data are forthcoming,

this book] is not in keeping with the teaching of the [Ḥanbalī] school." I replied: "It is not [in accord with] your views nor with those teachers of yours whom you follow blindly. [fol.42a] [In this work] I have held up the teaching of the Imām Aḥmad and disassociated it from views falsely ascribed to him, along with the irrational prattle, not being one who follows the views of others blindly. How can I ignore such distortions (*bahraj*) when I find them [so] objectionable?

The end of the treatise—God knows best! 505

the second possibility remains purely speculative. It seems entirely possible that Ibn al-Jawzī's critics could have learned of the main elements of the position presented in KAS from sources close to him and would have been in a position to critique it even before the work was "published." In addition, we should not forget that Ibn al-Jawzī had never been shy about expressing his views. His madrasa lectures provided such an opportunity as did the sermons he preached frequently at some of the largest mosques in Baghdad.

A HANBALĪ RESPO TAWĪL: THE R

⁵⁰⁴ See §37 (latter half) where he levels the same charge and speaks of his efforts, in *KAS*, to counter the distortions of his fellow Ḥanbalīs. Cf., also §30-32.

⁵⁰⁵ The colophon of the MS of KAS reads: "I copied [the present MS] from a MS [1] whose colophon reads: 'this was copied from a MS [2] which was copied from a MS [3] that was in the hand of my master Nūr ad-Dīn 'Alī b. Jamāl ad-Dīn b. 'Abd Allāh ad-Dimashqī ash-Shāfi'ī, a student of the renowed shaykh and imām Shams ad-Dīn al-Muhaddith ash-Shāfi'ī. May God benefit Muslims through this work.' The transcribing of the present copy was completed on the 17th of Rajab in the year 890 (30th of July 1485)."—The last sentence containing the date of the present copy of KAS is marked off from what precedes by a circle with a dot in the middle indicating the end of the colophon of MS no. 2. What we have here, in effect, are two colophons: an older one nested within the colophon of our MS. While the colophon of our MS is dated it has so far not been possible to assign even relative dates to the other MSS mentioned in the colophon. Until Nūr ad-Dīn 'Alī is identified, it will not be possible to say very much about the manuscript tradition of KAS except that the work did attract the interest of some Shāfisites and that the MS of KAS had made its way to Damascus sometime before 890 A.H.. My efforts to identify Nur ad-Din 'Ali from the existing biographical literature and indices has so far produced no clues as to the dates or identity of this person.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Abbott, Nabia. *Studies in Arabic Literary Papyri*. Vol. 2. University of Chicago Oriental Institute Publications. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1967.
- ——"Hadīth Literature II: Collection and Transmission of Hadīth." In Arabic Literature to the End of the Umayyad Period, edited by A. F. L. Beeston, T. M. Johnstone, R. B. Serjeant, and G. R. Smith. Vol. I. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1983: 289-298.
- Abū Hājir Muḥammad Zaghlūl al-Abyānī. *Fahāris Taʾrīkh Baghdād lil-Khaṭīb al-Baghdādī*. Beirut: Dār al-Kutub al-'Ilmīya, 1407/1986.
- Abdel Haleem, M. A. S. "Early Islamic Theological and Juristic Terminology: *Kitāb al-Ḥudūd fī'l-Usūl* by Ibn Fūrak." *BSOAS* 54 (1991): 5-41.
- Abū Nu^caym al-Iṣbahānī. *Hilyat al-Awliyā*. 4 vols. Ḥaydarābād: Dā irat al-Ma^cārif, 1372-1373/1952-1953
- Abū 'Ubayd, al-Qāsim al-Harawī. *Gharīb al-Ḥadīth*. Ḥaydarābād: Osmania Oriental Publications Bureau, 1384-87/1964-1967.
- Abū Shāma, Shihāb ad-Dīn al-Maqdisi. adh-Dhayl ar-Rawdatayn. Beirut: Dār al-Jīl, 1974.
- Abū Yaʿlā. Kitāb al-Muʿtamad fī Uṣūl ad-Dīn: Arabic Text, edited with Introduction by Wadi Z. Haddad. Vol. 8. Langue Arabe et Pensée Islamique (Nouvelle Série), Beirut: Dar al-Machreq Éditeurs, 1974.
- Afnan, S. M. Philosophical Terminology in Arabic and Persian. Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1964.
- Allard, Michel. "En quoi consiste l'opposition faite à al-Ash'arī par ses contemporains hanbalite." *REI* 2 (1960): 93-105.
- ——— Le Problème des attributs divins dans la doctrine d'al Aš arī et de ses premiers grands disciples. Beirut: Imprimerie Catholique, 1965
- 'Alwajī (al), 'Abd al-Ḥamīd. Mu'allafāt Ibn al-Jawzī. Baghdad: Wizārat ath-Thaqāfa wa'l-Irshād, 1385/1965. Revised and substantially expanded. Kuwait: Markaz al-Makhṭūṭāt wa'l-Wathā'iq, 1992.
- ^cAlwān, Muḥammad B. "al-Mustadrak 'alā Mu'allafāt Ibn al-Jawzī." *al-Mawrid* (Baghdad) I (1971): 181-190
- Anawati, G. C. "Théologie chrétienne et théologie Mo'tazilite d'aprés des travaux récents." In *L'Oriente christiano nell storia della civiltà*, 525-546. Rome: Academia Nazionale dei Lincei, 1964.
- Ansari, M. Abdul Haq. "The Mu'tazilite View of the Good and the Right." *Bulletin of the Institute of Islamic Studies* 8-9 (1964-65): 8-18.
- Armstrong, A. H. "Life: Plotinus and the Religion and Thought of His Time." In *The Cambridge History of Later Greek and Early Medieval Philosophy*, edited by A. H. Armstrong. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1967: 195-210.
- A'sam (al-), Abdul-Amin. *Ibn ar-Riwandi's <u>Kitāb Fadihat al-Mu'tazilah</u>. Analytical Study of Ibn ar-Riwandi's Methods in his Criticisms of the Rational Foundations of Polemics in Islam*. Beirut and Paris: Éditions Oueidat, 1975-1977.

- al-Ash'arī, Abū'l-Ḥasan. "'Aqīdat al-Ash'arī." In 'Ashr Rasā'il wa 'Aqīda. Cairo: Manār Press, 1351/1932: 21-23.
- Kitāb al-Islamīyīn wa Ikhtilāf al-Muṣallīna. 2 vols., edited by Hellmut Ritter. Wiesbaden: Franz Steiner Verlag, 1963
- al-Badī'ī. Awj at-Taḥarrī 'an Ḥaythiyat Abī'l-'Alā'. Damascus: Maṭba'at al-Taraqqī, 1944.
- al-Baghdādī, Abū Manṣūr. *al-Farq Bayn al-Firaq*, edited by Muḥammad Muḥyī'd-Dīn 'Abd al-Ḥamīd. Cairo: Muḥammad b. Ṣabīḥ and Sons, n.d.
- ——— *Uṣūl ad-Dīn*. Istanbul: Dār al-Funūn, 1346/1928.
- al-Bayhaqī, Abū Bakr. *al-I'tiqād ʿalā Madhhab as-Salaf, ahl as-Sunna wa'l-Jamāʿa*. Cairo: Aḥmad Muhammad Marsī, 1961.
- Kitāb al-Asma' wa'ṣ-Ṣifāt, edited by Muḥammad Zāhid. Beirut: Iḥyā' at-Turāth al-'Arabī, 1358/1939.
- Becker, Carl H. "Christliche Polemik und islamische Dogmenbildung." Zeitschrift für Assyriologie 26-27 (1912): 175-195. Reprinted in Islamstudien: vom Werden und Wesen der islamischen Welt. Hildesheim: G. Olms, 1967. 1: 432-449.
- Bello, Iysa A. *The Medieval Islamic Controversy between Philosophy and Orthodoxy: Ijmā' and Ta'wīl in the Conflict between al-Ghazālī and Ibn Rushd.* Islamic Philosophy and Theology: Texts and Studies. Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1989.
- Bergh, Simon van den. "Ghazali on 'Gratitude toward God' and Its Greek Sources." SI 7 (1957): 77-98.
- "The 'Love of God' in Ghazali's Vivification of Theology." *Journal of Semitic Studies* 1 (1956): 305-321.
- Bokhari (el). *Les Traditions Islamiques*. 4 vols. Publications de l'École des Langues Orientales Vivantes, trans. O. Houdas and W. Marçais. Paris: Librairie d'Amerique et d'Orient, 1903-14 (reprint., 1977).
- Böwering, Gerhard. The Mystical Vision of Existence in Classical Islam, The Qur'ânic Hermeneutics of the Sufi Sahl at-Tustari (d. 283/896). Berlin and New York: Walter de Gruyter, 1980.
- Brockelmann, C. *Geschichte der arabischen Litteratur*. 2 vols. 2nd ed. Leiden: E. J. Brill. 1943-1949; *Supplement*, 3 vols. 1937-1942.
- Brunschvig, Robert. "Logic and Law in Classical Islam." In *Logic in Classical Islamic Culture*, edited by G. E. von Grunebaum. Wiesbaden: Otto Harrassowitz, 1970: 9-20.
- Carter, Michael G. "An Arab Grammarian of the eighth Century A.D." *JOAS* 93 (1973): 146-157.
- ——— "Les origines de la grammaire arabe." *REI* 40 (1972): 69-97.
- Caspar, R. "Foi et raison dans le Munqid de Ghazâlî." *Institut des Belles Lettres Arabes* (Tunis) 32 (1969): 215-240.
- Chabbi, Jacqueline. "'Abd al-Kādir al-Djīlānī, personnage historique: quelques éléments de biographie." SI 38 (1973): 75-106.
- Chadwick, H. "Philo and the Beginnings of Christian Thought." In *The Cambridge History of Later Greek and Early Medieval Philosophy*, edited by A. H. Armstrong. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1967: pp. 137-192.
- Daiber, Hans. Aetius Arabus. Die Vorsokratiker in arabischer Überlieferung. Wiesbaden: Steiner, 1980.
- ------- "Anfänge und Entstehung der Wissenschaft im Islam." Saeculum 29 (1978): 356-366.

—— Bibliography of Islams
Abteilung, der Nahe und Med
—— "The Creed ('Aqīda' of the Text." In Studia Arabica et l

"The Qur'an as a Manage Controversy in the 12 13th Ce Human Sciences in Asia and II. pp. 282-283. Expanded was Conceptions of the Godberd Theological Sequel in the Page E. J.Brill. 1994): 249-295.

l-Fadl ibn al-Amid (gest 350) translation and glossary. Leider

Das Theologisch-Philosogisest. 830 n. Chr.). Beiter Fra Wāṣil Ibn ʿAṭā' als Pred su Sciences, Texts and Studies. 2.1

Abū Saʿīd 'Uthmān a - Ro

G "La philosophy. New York."

G "La philosophie du che

11897 t 356-371.

Mizim al-Ftidāl fi Noga ar-

a-Mukhtaşar al-Muhtāj II. Dum Tarikh Baghdād, Beinu: — Tarikh al-Islām wa Wajon 2 1 1601 to 610 A.H.L. edinə

Buyard. The Fibrist of al-l

EMPT/1397.

Tom. The Origins of Islam
Same: England Curzon, 1999.
Les bibliobleques an
Engra as Mayon Age

medicardis of false. Inded. 10

- ——— Bibliography of Islamic philosophy. 2 vols. Handbuch der Orientalistik. Erste Abteilung, der Nahe und Mittlere Osten. Leiden; Boston: Brill, 1999.
- "The Creed ('Aqīda) of the Ḥanbalite Ibn Qudāma al-Maqdisī, A Newly Discovered Text." In Studia Arabica et Islamica. Festschrift for Iḥsān 'Abbās on His Sixtieth Birthday, ed. Wadād al-Qādī. Beirut: American University, 1981: 105-125.
- —— The Islamic concept of belief in the 4th/10th century: Abu l-Lait as-Samarqandi's commentary on Abu Hanifa (died 150/767), al-Fiqh al-absat. Tokyo: Institute for the Study of Languages and Cultures of Asia and Africa, 1995
- "The Qur'an as a Matter of Dispute—New Material on the Hanbalite-Ash'arite Controversy in the 12/13th Century A.D." *The Thirty-First International Congress of Human Sciences in Asia and North Africa*. Tokyo-Kyoto: Institute of Eastern Culture, II, pp. 282-283. Expanded version: H. Daiber, "The Quran as a 'Shibboleth' of Varying Conceptions of the Godhead: A 12th Century Ḥanbalite-Ash'arite Discussion and Its Theological Sequel in the Protocol of Ibn Qudāma al-Makqdisī." *IOS* vol. 14 (Leiden: E. J.Brill, 1994): 249-295.
- —— Naturwissenschaft bei den Arabern im 10. Jahrhundert n. Chr: Briefe des Abu l-Fadl ibn al-Amid (gest. 360/970) an Adudaddaula, with introduction, commentary, translation and glossary. Leiden; New York: Brill 1993.
- ——— Das Theologisch-Philosophische System des Mu'ammar Ibn 'Abbād as-Sulamī (gest. 830 n. Chr.). Beirut: Franz Steiner, 1975.
- Wāṣil Ibn ʿAṭā' als Prediger und Theologe. In Islamic Philosophy, Theology and Sciences, Texts and Studies, 2. Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1988.
- Dārimī, Abū Saʿīd ʿUthmān. *ar-Radd ʿalā-Jahmīya*, ed. G. Vitestam. Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1960.
- Davidson, Herbert A. Alfarabi, Avicenna, and Averroes, On Intellect: Their Cosmologies, Theories of the Active Intellect, and Theories of Human Intellect. New York, Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1992.
- ——— Proofs for Eternity, Creation and the Existence of God in Medieval Islamic and Jewish Philosophy. New York, Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1987.
- Delphin, G. "La philosophie du cheikh Senoussi d'après son *aqida es-soʻra*." *JA* 10, series 9 (1897): 356-371.
- Dhahbī. Mīzān al-I'tidāl fī Naqd ar-Rijāl. 4 vols. Beirut: Dār al-Ma'rifa, 1382/1963.
- —— al-Mukhtaṣar al-Muḥtāj Ilayhi min Taʾrīkh...Ibn ad-Dubaythī. 1st. ed., Vol. 15. Dhayl Taʾrīkh Baghdād. Beirut: Dār al-Kutub al-ʿIlmīya, 1985/1405.
- Ta²rīkh al-Islām wa Wafayāt al-Mashāhīr wa'l-A'lām. 2nd printing ed., Vol. 18, pt. 1 (601 to 610 A.H.), edited by Bashshār 'Awwād Ma'rūf. Cairo: 'Īsā al-Bābī al-Ḥalabī, 1977/1397.
- Dodge, Bayard. *The Fihrist of al-Nadīm, A Tenth-Century Survey of Muslim Culture*. Records of Civilization: Sources and Studies. New York: Columbia University Press, 1970.
- Dutton, Yasin. *The Origins of Islamic Law: the Quran, the Muwatta and Madinan Amal.* Surrey, England: Curzon, 1999.
- Eche, Youssef. Les bibliotheques arabes publiques et semi-publiques en Mésopotamie, en Syrie et en Egypte au Moyen Age. Damascus: Institut Français de Damas, 1967.
- Encyclopaedia of Islam. 2nd ed., 10 vols. Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1960-2001)

Encyclopedia of Religion. 16 vols, edited by M. Eliade. New York: Macmillan Publishing. Co., c1987.

sales in G. E. um Grunetu

110-140: 1470: 19-69

72.76

"Unter II and His Epis

"Une Leanure à renours a

Der Weiir and seine

The Trushful God: Anthro

Theribeie and Gesellsch

Theology and Science Th

- Zwischen Hadit and Th

Beningstehen Schriften des R

die Kande der Morgonlander

of Bulliones Studies, Acesona

des religionen Denkens im frå

Ver Essent and North Africa

Cherlebrang, Berlint Walter

for a Corps C. Assess of

and S. Van Ries. Lou

Family Merital al-Querlin, 3 volt

and A. Nordari, Cairo, Dir al-F

one A. Morraphies son General

mit. Elefand M. "Abb Hashin

Actor III Compresso de estudos

Theology in Proceedings of

Native Street, Market, E. J. Beill, 19

and in the in the Physics of M

Inde Classical Person, Albumy

Person 1984 39-53.

* 41-4 de mil : Conception

W-Market Stone Reflection

Beng and Their Aprillage

Budio and Appear The As

ales in Binur of George Be

The Divise Astributor Ast

Walley and Philosophy: A P.

Knowledge and Taplid, the

Corp. and Remarks on the

amiligie l'intere dédé à

start on anti- edited by Paul

in a comment of Gains

Named and Boreslet Law

Black Brow Estado priosi

The sales by P. Morevo

2405 HR 1989; 37-62

Halley, M. 'The Martine View

- Ess, Josef van. "Abu l-Hudhayl in Contact: the Genesis of an Anecdote." In *Islamic Theology and Philosophy, Studies in Honor of George F. Hourani*, edited by M. E. Marmura. Albany: SUNY Press, 1984: 13-30.
- ——— Anfänge muslimischer Theologie: Zwei antiqadaritische Traktate aus dem 1. Jahrhundert der Higra. Vol. 14. Beiruter Texte und Studien, Wiesbaden: Franz Steiner, 1977.
- "L'autorité de la tradition prophétique dans la théologie mu'tazilite." In *La notion d'autorité au moyen âge. Islam, Byzance, Occident*, ed. G. Makdisi and D. & J. Sourdel. Paris: Presses Universitaires de France, 1982: 211-226.
- "Biobibliographische Notizen zur islamischen Theologie." *Die Welt des Orients* 9 (1978): 255-283; (10): 54-6; 11 (1980): 122-134.
- "Das Begrenzte Paradies." In Mélanges d'islamologie. Volume dédié à la mémoire de Armand Abel par ses collègues, ses élèves et ses amis, edited by Paul Salmon. Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1974: 108-127.
- —— "Dirār b. 'Amr und die 'Cahmīya'. Biographie einer vergessenen Schule." *Der Islam* 43 (1967): 1-70; 44 (1968): 241-279.
- "Disputationspraxis in der islamischen Theologie. Eine vorläufige Skizze." *REI*, 44 (1976): 23-60.
- "Early Development of *Kalām*." In *Studies on the First Century of Islamic Society*, edited by Juynboll. Urbana: Southern Illinois University Press, 1982: 109-123.
- ------ "Early Islamic Theologians on the Existence of God." In *Islam and the Medieval West*, edited by K. I. Semaan. 64-81. Albany: SUNY Press, 1980: 64-81.
- ------ "Eine Predigt des Mu'taziliten Murdâr." BEO 30 (1978): 307-318.
- ——— Die Erkenntnislehre des 'Adudaddīn al-Īcī. Wiesbaden: Franz Steiner, 1966.
- Frühe mu'tazilitische Häresiographie. Vol. 11. Beiruter Texte und Studien. Wiesbaden: Franz Steiner, 1971.
- "Göttliche Allmacht im Zerrbild menschlicher Sprache." *Mélanges de l'Université Saint-Joseph* 49 (1975-76): 653-688.
- "Die Herkunft des 'Amr b. 'Ubaid." *Mélanges de l'Université Saint-Joseph* 50 (1984): 733-744.
- ------ "Ibn Kullāb und die Miḥna." Oriens 18-19 (1965-66): 92-142.
- "Ketzer und Zweifler im Islam." Bustan 5 (1964): 10-15.
- ------ "Skepticism in Islamic Religious Thought." In *God and Man in Contemporary Islamic Thought*, edited by Charles Malik. Beirut: American University, 1972: 83-98.
- "Some Fragments of the Mu'āraḍat al-Qur'ān Attributed to Ibn Muqaffa'." In Studia Arabica et Islamica. Festschrift for Iḥsān 'Abbās on His Sixtieth Birthday, edited by Wadād al-Qāḍī. 151-163. Beirut: American University of Beirut, 1981: 151-163.
- ------- "Sprache und Religiöse Erkenntnis im Islam." *Miscellanea Mediaevalia* 13 (1981): 226-235.
- "The Beginnings of Islamic Theology." In *The Cultural Context of Medieval Learning*, edited by J. E. Murdock and E. D. Sylla. Dordrecht-Boston: D. Reidel Publishing Co., 1975: 87-111.
- "The Logical Structure of Islamic Theology." In Logic in Classical Islamic Culture.

- edited by G. E. von Grunebaum. Wiesbaden: Otto Harrassowitz, 1970: 21-50.
- ——— "cUmar II and His Epistle Against the Qadarīya." *Abr-Nahrain* 12 (1971-72): 19-26.
- "Une Lecture à rebours de l'histoire du mu^ctazilisme." *REI* 46-47 (1978-79): (46): 161-240; (47): 19-69.
- Der Wesir und seine Gelehrten, zu Inhalt und Entstehungsgeschichte der theologischen Schriften des Rashīuddīn Fażlullūh (Gest. 718/1318). Abhandlungen für die Kunde des Morgenlandes, vol. 45. Wiesbaden: Franz Steiner GMBH, 1981: 1-68.
- The Youthful God: Anthropomorphism in Early Islam. Tempe, Arizona: Department of Religious Studies, Arisona State University, 1989.
- Theologie und Gesellschaft im 2. und 3. Jahrhundert Hidschra: Eine Geschichte des religiösen Denkens im frühen Islam. 6 vols. Berlin: Walter de Gruyter, 1991-1997
- ——— Theology and Science: The Case of Abū Isḥāq an-Nazzām. Ann Arbor: Center for Near Eastern and North African Studies, 1978.
- Zwischen Ḥadit und Theologie: Studien zum Entstehen prädestinatianischer Überlieferung. Berlin: Walter de Gruyter, 1975.
- Fakhry, M. "The Mu'tazilite View of Man." In *Recherches d'Islamologie. Recueil d'articles offert à Georges C. Anawati et Louis Gardet par leurs collègues et amis*, edited by R. Arnaldez and S. Van Riet. Louvain: Éditions Peeters, 1977.
- al-Farrā'. *Ma^cānī al-Qur'ān*. 3 vols. edited by A. Y. Najātī, M. A. Najjār, A. F. I. Shalabī and A, Najdarī. Cairo, Dār al-Kutub al-Miṣrīya, 1955-72.
- Fischer, A. Biographien von Gewärsmänner des Ibn Ishaq. Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1890.
- Frank, Richard M. "Abū Hāshim's Theory of 'States,' Its Structure and Function." In Actas IV Congresso de estudos árabes e islâmicos. Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1971: 85-100.
- "Al-Ash'arī's Conception of the Nature and Role of Speculative Reasoning in Theology." In *Proceedings of the VIth Congress of Arabic and Islamic Studies in Visby/Stockholm*, E. J. Brill, 1972: 136-154.
- "Al-Ma'nà: Some Reflections on the Technical Meanings of the Term in the Kalâm and Its Use in the Physics of Mu'ammar." JAOS 87 (1967b): 248-259.
- ——— Beings and Their Attributes: The Teaching of the Basran School of the Mu^ctazila in the Classical Period. Albany: SUNY Press, 1978.
- "Bodies and Atoms: The Ash arite Analysis." In *Islamic Theology and Philosophy: Studies in Honor of George Hourani*, edited by Michael E. Marmura. Albany: SUNY Press, 1984: 39-53.
- —— "The Divine Attributes According to the Teachings of Abu l-Hudhayal al-'Allāf." *Muséon, Revue d'études orientales* 82 (1969): 551-506.
- —— "*Kalām* and Philosophy: A Perspective from One Problem." In *Islamic Philosophical Theology*, edited by P. Morewedge. Albany: SUNY Press, 1979: 71-95.
- "Notes and Remarks on the *Ṭabā*²i^c in the Teaching of al-Māturīdī." In *Mélanges d'islamologie. Volume dédié à la mémoire de Armand Abel par ses collègues, ses élèves et ses amis*, edited by Paul Salmon. Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1974: 137-149.
- "The Neoplatonism of Gahm ibn Safwân." Muséon 17 (1965): 395-424.
- "Reason and Revealed Law: A Sample of Parallels and Divergences in Kalâm and

Falsafa." In Recherches d'Islamologie. Recueil d'articles offert à Georges C. Anawati et Louis Gardet par leurs collègues et amis, edited by R. Arnaldez and S Van Riet. 123-138. Louvain: Éditions Peeters, 1977: 137-149

Lister theology. Translated

in Geographics Schriften, vol.

diam, W. Dining Word and Pri

Man. Battige nur

In a-Laim London Onfo

a, Denter, Evizens and the A

I To Leiter New York Ki

"Entire Action Philosoph

Greek Thought, Arabic Barbillal and early 'Abband'

The Starting Point of

STREET Theographics

Somethough, P. M. Hoby on

Transaction Books, 1985: 115-

ad, Wadi Z. Kitali al-Matsam

Colo de Manager J. Dr. of

Berne Harral-Konh, 1415 T

The Ambrya

कार्जा व व्यक्तित त शह

22 1986c 51-11

Martin M. Halamir Cromolo

The Series Series Les Tru

pe-Nillair S-Din Allah (1

indexest Berlin, New Yor

service with critical edi-

The Parties Visited By

10 July 2005-14 (spinst, 19

in GF The Chronings of G

me George Libert Rate

Carrier Park 1971

Balteria: M. and Margalit, A. J.S.

Towering Press, 1992.

IIII in Nobbet of Mes

a-hapte, house full All, the older

OFF 183-359.

31.

Good, J. Furblet Alphabetion

Barne, Alfred The Sort

Timb: Rossledge, 1998.

6-Wartney, 1974.

Weiter 12541905.

1986.

"Zur Geschichte der hand

- —— The Metaphysics of Created Being According to Abū'l-Hudhayl al-'Allāf. Istanbul: Uitgaven van het Nederlands historisch-archaeologisch Instituut, 1966.
- —— "Several Fundamental Assumptions of the Basra School of the Mu^ctazila." SI 33 (1971): 5-18.
- Friedmann, Y. "Some Notes on the Luzūmiyyāt of al-Macarrī." IOS 1 (1971): 257-262.
- Gairdner, W. H. T. "al-Ghazālī's *Mishkāt al-Anwār* and the Ghazālī Problem." *Der Islam* 5 (1914): 121-153.
- Gardet, Louis. Dieu et la destinée de l'homme. Les Grandes problèmes de la théologie musulmane, edited by G. Anawati and L. Gardet. Paris: Librairie Philosophique J. Vrin, 1967.
- Etudes de philosophie et de mystique comparée. Paris: Librairie Philosophique J. Vrin, 1972.
- al-Ghazzāli. *Iljām al-ʿAwāmm ʿan ʿIlm al-Kalām*. Beirut and Damascus: Dār al-Ḥikma, 1407/1986.
- ——— al-Iqtiṣād fi'l-l'tiqād, edited by 'Ādil al-'Awwā. Damascus: Dār al-Amāna, 1388/1969.
- ——— Mi'yār al-'Ilm, edited by Sulaymān ad-Dunyā. Cairo: Dār al-Ma'ārif, 1961.
- Gimaret, Daniel. *Dieu à l'image de l'homme: les anthropomorphismes de la sunna et leur interprétation par les théologiens*. Paris: Les Editions du Cerf, 1997.
- La doctrine d'al-Ash^carī. Paris: Les Editions du Cerf, 1990.
- Les noms divins en Islam, exégèse lexicographique et théologique. Paris: Les Editions du Cerf, 1988.
- Livre des religions et des sects. Leuven: Peeters, 1986.
 - ----- "Matériaux pour un bibliographie des Gubbā'ī". JA 264 (1976): 277-332
- "Théories de l'act humain dans l'école hanbalite", BEO 29 (1977): 157-178.
- "Un document fondamental pour l'histoire de l'Ash'arisme", *The Thirty-First International Congress of Human Sciences in Asia and North Africa* 1 (1983): 287-288.
- Goichon, A. M. Lexique de la langue philosophique d'Ibn Sīnā. Paris: Desclée de Brouwer. 1938.
- Goldziher, Ignaz. "Kämpfe um die Stellung des Ḥadīt im Islam." *ZDMG* 61 (1907): 860-872. Reprinted in *Gesammelte Schriften*, vol. 5. Hildesheim: Georg Olms, 1970: 86-98.
- "Aus der Theologie des Fachr al-Dīn al-Rāzī." *Der Islam* 3 (1912): 213-247. Reprinted in *Gesammelte Schriften*, vol. 5. Hildesheim: Georg Olms, 1970: 237-271.
- —— Die Richtungen der islamischen Koranauslegung, Leiden: E. J.Brill, 1952.
- —— Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law. Princeton: Princeton University Press. 1981.
- —— The Zahiris; their doctrine and their history. A contribution to the history of

- Islamic theology. Translated by Wolfgang Behn. Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1971.
- "Zur Geschichte der hanbalitischen Bewegungen." ZDMG 62 (1908): 1-28. Reprinted in Gesammelte Schriften, vol. 5. Hildesheim: Georg Olms, 1970: 135-162.
- Graham, W. Divine Word and Prophetic Word in Early Islam. The Hague: Mouton, 1977.
- Grünbaum, Max. "Beiträge zur vergleichenden Mythologie aus der Hagada." ZDMG 31 (1877): 183-359.
- Guidi, I. Tables Alphabétiques du Kitāb al-Aghānī. Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1900.
- Guillaume, Alfred. *The Summa Philosophiae of al-Shahrastāni*, <u>Kitāb Nihāyatu'l-Iqdām fi</u> '<u>Ilm al-Kalām</u>. London: Oxford University Press, 1934.
- Gutas, Dimitri. Avicenna and the Aristotelian Tradition, Introduction to Reading Avicenna's Works. Leiden: New York, Köbenhagen, Köln: E. J. Brill, 1988.
- ——— "Editing Arabic Philosophical Texts." *Orientalistische Literaturzeitung* 75 (1980): 213-222.
- —— Greek Thought, Arabic Culture: The Greco-Arabic Translation Movement in Baghdad and early 'Abbāsid Society (2nd-4th/8th-10th Centuries). London and New York: Routledge, 1998.
- —— "The Starting Point of Philosophical Studies in Alexandrian and Arabic Aristotelianism." In *Theophrastus of Eresus: On His Life and Work*. Edited by W. W. Fortenbaugh, P. M. Huby and A. A. Long. New Brunswick (U.S.A.) and Oxford: Transaction Books, 1985: 115-123.
- Haddad, Wadi Z. *Kitāb al-Mu^ctamad fī Uṣūl ad-Dīn*, edited with introduction. Beirut: Dar el-Machreq, 1974.
- al-Ḥākim an-Nīsābūrī. *al-Mustadrak ʿalāʾṣ-Ṣaḥīḥayn fiʾl-Ḥadīth*. Haydarabād: Dāʾirat al-Maʿārif, 1334/1915.
- al-Ḥakīm, Ḥasan ʿĪsā ʿAlī. *Ibn al-Jawzī*. Baghdad: Dār ash-Shuʾūn ath-Thaqāfīya al-ʿĀmma, 1988.
- Kitāb al-Muntaṣam li-Ibn al-Jawzī: Dirāsa fī Manhaj wa Ḥawārīhi wa ahammīyatih. Beirut: ʿĀlam al-Kutub, 1405/1985.
- Halbertal, M. and Margalit, A. *Idolatry*. Trans. N. Goldblum. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1992.
- Hartmann, Angelika. "Les Ambivalences d'un sermonnaire Ḥanbalite. Ibn al-Ğawzī (m. en 597/1201), sa carrière et son ouvrage autographe, le *Kitāb al-Ḥawātīm*." *Annales Islamologique* 22 (1986): 51-115 and plates.
- —— an-Nāṣir li-Dīn Allāh (1180-1225): Politik, Religion, Kultur in der späten 'Abbāsidenzeit. Berlin, New York: Walter de Gruyter, 1975.
- Heinen, Anton M. *Islamic Cosmology*, A Study of aṣ-Ṣuyūtī's al-Hay'a as-Sanīya fi'l-Hay'a as-Sunnīya, with critical edition, translation, and commentary. Beiruter Texte und Studien, Beirut: Franz Steiner Verlag, 1982.
- Houdas, O and Marçais, *Les Traditions Islamiques*. 4 vols. Publications de l'École des Langes Orientales Vivantes, trans. of the Ṣaḥīḥ of Bukhārī. Paris: Librairie d'Amerique et d'Orient, 1903-14 (reprint, 1977).
- Hourani, George. *Islamic Rationalism; The Ethics of Abd al-Jabbār*. London: Oxford University Press, 1971.
- Hourani, G.F. "The Chronology of Ghazālī's Writings." JAOS 79 (1959): 225-233.

Ibn Abī Dāwūd. "'Aqīdat al-Imām Ibn Abī Dāwūd." In 'Ashr Rasā'il wa 'Aqīda, Cairo: Manār Press, 1932/1351: 15-17.

ALL IS SE ALIPPINE LIBERT

mi. 1345/1406

Carry Dir a-Karat al-Hadin

4-7-1-14/5 7394-85

SER FRE

Charth at Sality, eath

d-Ficun d-Berri, china

of Plant the State of The

or tild of Materialtina fi

Dir al-Kasab al-Timiya, 1405

Der al-Kanat al-Timiya, 1408

Malfru Peru. 1386-88 1966

10 - Land of Thing, 1466

This of Halling & The a

Minch of Massimir, MS E

Matthew of it, edited

Entrad Divisit = 1-Ma

— Latter of Kathal die Nassball Berner Oliv al-Katalo al-Thorn

Later of Kahil füll Nashat

Warrant al-Marran

Rehable I'm pl-Java

and the state of English and the State of English and the State of English and the State of S

of Washington China at Co.

archaelink silied by Ma

Filmer of Fig. 79-90 Cairce N

Wester Die al-Kursch al- Azabi

Specific Matter of S-Await.

Martin restored to Normale al-A's

Carried Carr

STREET, MITTHET

William 1480 1983

J-So-J edite

- Ibn Abī'ṣ-Ṣalt. Dīwān. Beirut: al-Maktabat al-Ahlīya, 1934/1352.
- Ibn Abī Yaʿlā. *Ṭabaqāt al-Ḥanābla*. 2 vols. Edited by Muḥammad al-Fiqi. Cairo: Maṭbaʿat as-Sunna, 3171/1952
- Ibn 'Aqīl, Abū'l-Wafā'. *Kitāb al-Funūn*. Série I: Pensée arabe et musulmane, vols. 44-45. 2 vols., edited by George Makdisi. Beirut: Dar el-Machreq Éditeurs, 1970-1971.
- Kitāb al-Jadal ('alā Ṭarīqat al-Fuqahā'). Edited by George Makdisi under the title: "Le livre de la dialectique d'Ibn 'Aqīl." BEO 20 (1967): 119-206.
- —— al-Wāḍiḥ fī Uṣūl al-Fiqh. Part I, Kitāb al-Madhhab. Bibliotheca Islamica, Band 41a, edited by George Makdisi. Beirut: Orient-Institut der DMG, 1996 in Kommission bei Franz Steiner Verlag, Ştuttgart.
- Ibn al-Athīr, Abū'l-Ḥasan. *al-Kāmil fī't-Ta'rīkh*. 12 vols., edited by, edited by Carolus J. Tornberg. Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1867. Reprinted with index. Beirut: Dār Ṣādir, 1385-1386/1965-1966.
- ——— al-Lubāb fī Tahdhīb al-Ansāb. 3 vols. Beirut: Dār Ṣādir, 1400/1980.
- —— *Tajrīd Asmā[,] aṣ-Ṣaḥāba*. 2 vols. Ḥaydarābād: Dā[,]irat al-Ma[,]ārif, 1315/1897.
- Ibn ad-Dimyāṭī. *al-Mustafād min Dhayl Ta³rīkh Baghdād*. Beirut: Dār al-Kutub al-ʿIlmīya, 1391/1971.
- Ibn Fūrak, Abū Bakr. *Bayān. Mushkil al-Aḥādīt, edited by* Raimund Köbert. Rome: Pontificium Institutum Biblicum, 1941.
- ——— Mujarrad Maqālāt al-Ash^carī, edited by Daniel Gimaret. Beirut: Dar al-Machreq, 1987.
- —— Mushkil al-Ḥadīth wa-Bayānuhu, edited by and annotated by Mūsā Muḥammad 'Alī. Beirut: 'Ālam al-Kutub, 1405/1985.
- Ibn Furāṭ. *Ta³rīkh Ibn al-Furāṭ*, vol. 4, part 2, edited by Ḥasan Muḥammad ash-Shammāʿ. Baṣra: Dār aṭ-Ṭibāʿa al-Ḥadītha, 1389/1969.
- Ibn Ḥajar. *ad-Durar al-Kāmina fī A'yān al-Mi'a ath-Thāmina*. Ḥaydarābād: Dā'irat al-Ma'ārif, 1348-1350/1929-1931.
- ——— Lisān al-Mīzān. 6 vols. Ḥaydarābād: Dā'irat al-Ma'ārif, 1329-1331/1911-1912.
 - —— Tahdhīb at-Tahdhīb. 12 vols. Ḥaydarābād: Dā'irat al-Ma'ārif, 1325-1327/1907-1909.
- Ibn al-'Imād. Shadharāt adh-Dhahab fī Akhbār Man Dhahab. 8 vols. Beirut: al-Maktabat al-Tijārī, n.d.
- Ibn al-Jawzī. *Al-Adhkiyā*², edited by Usāma ʿAbd al-Karīm ar-Rifāʿī. Beirut and Damascus: Mu²assasat Manāhil al-ʿIrfān and Maktabat al-Ghazzālī, 1405/1985.
- ——— Aḥkām an-Nisā². Beirut: Dār al-Kutub al-'Ilmīya, 1405/1985.
- —— 'Ajā'ib 'Ulūm al-Qur'ān, edited by 'Abd al-Fattāḥ 'Ashūr. Cairo: Dār al-I'lām. 1407/1986.
- ——— Akhbār al-Ḥamqā wa'l-Mughaffalīn, edited by Muḥammad Munīr ad-Dimashqī. Beirut: Dār al-Kutub al-'Ilmīya, 1404/1985.
- —— Akhbār az-Zirāf wa'l-Mutamājinīn, edited by Muḥammad 'Alī aṭ-Ṭanṭāwī. Damascus: Maṭba'at at-Tawfīq, 1347/1928.
- al-Bāz al-Ashhab al-Munqadd 'alā Mukhālifi'l-Madhhab. MS no. 1202/2 (848

BIBLIOGRAPHY A.H.) in the Körprülü Library, Istanbul. "Edited" by Muḥammad Munīr al-Imām with passages occasionally added from KAS. Beirut: Dār al-Jinān, 1987. Daf Shubhat at-Tashbīh wa'r-Radd 'alā'l-Mujassima. Damascus: Maṭba'at al-Taraqqī, 1345/1926. Dhamm al-Hawā, edited by Muṣṭafā ʿAbd al-Wāḥid and Muḥammad al-Ghazzālī. Cairo: Dār al-Kutub al-Ḥadītha, 1381/1962. Gharīb al-Hadīth, edited by 'Abd al-Mu'tī Amīn Qal'ajī. Beirut: Dār al-Kutub al-'Ilmīya, 1405/1984-85. - al-Hasan al-Basrī, edited by Hasan Sandūbī. Cairo: Matba'at al-Khānjī, 1350/1931. - al-Hathth 'alā Ḥifz al-'Ilm wa Dhikr Kibār al-Ḥuffāz. Beirut: Dār al-Kutub al-'Ilmīya, 1406/1986. al-'Ilal al-Mutanāhiya fī'l-Aḥādīth al-Wāhiya, edited by Khalīl al-Mays. Beirut: Dār al-Kutub al-Ilmīya, 1403/1983. - Kitāb al-Ḥadā'iq fī 'Ilm al-Ḥadīth wa'z-Zuhdīyāt, edited by Muṣṭafā Sabka. Beirut: Dar al-Kutub al-'Ilmīya,1408/1988. - Kitāb al-Maqāmāt. MS 1589, Ulu Cami, Bursa, Turkey. Kitāb al-Mawdū'āt, edited by 'Abd ar-Rahmān Muhammad 'Uthmān. Madina: The Salafiya Press, 1386-88/1966-68. – Kitāb aḍ-Ḍuʿafāʾ wa'l-Matrūkīn, edited by Abū'l-Fidāʾ ʿAbd Allāh al-Qāḍī. Beirut: Dār al-Kutub al-Ilmīya, 1406/1986. -Laftat al-Kabid ilā Naṣīḥat al-Walad, edited by 'Abd al-Ghaffār Sulaymān al-Bundārī. Beirut: Dār al-Kutub al-Ilmīya, 1407/1987. Laftat al-Kabid ilā Naṣīḥat al-Walad. In Min Dafā'in al-Kunūz, edited by Muḥammad Ḥāmid al-Fiqī. 78-90. Cairo: Maṭbacat al-Manār, 1349/1930. Manāqib Amīr al-Mu'minīn 'Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb, edited by Sayyid al-Jumaylī. Beirut: Dār al-Kutub al-'Arabī, 1405/1985. Mashyakhat Ibn al-Jawzi, edited by Muḥammad Maḥfūz. Beirut: Dār al-Gharb al-Islāmī, 1400/1980. - al-Mişbāḥ al-Muḍī fī Khilāfat al-Mustaḍī, edited by Nājiya ʿAbd Allāh Ibrāhīm. Baghdād: Maṭbaʿat al-Awqāf, 1396-97/1976-77. - al-Mudhish fī ʻUlūm al-Qur'ān wa'l-Ḥadīth wa Lugha wa ʻUyūn at-Ta'rīkh wa'l-Wa^cz, edited by Nu^cmān al-A^czam. Baghdad: Matba^cat al-Adāb, 1348/1929. — al-Mudhish, edited by Marwān Qabbānī. Beirut: Dār al-Kutub al-'Ilmīya, n.d. al-Muntazam fī Ta'rīkh al-Mulūk wa'l-Umam, edited by Krankow. Ḥaydarābād:

Dā'irat al-Ma'ārif, 1357-59/1938-40.

al-'Arabī, 1407/1987.

n.d..

- Nawāsikh al-Qur'ān. Beirut: Dār al-Kutub al-'Ilmīya, n.d..

al-Karīm Kāzim ar-Rādī. Cairo: Mu'assasat ar-Risāla, 1404/1984.

Nuzhat al-A'yān an-Nawāzir fī 'Ilm al-Wujūh wa'n-Nazā'ir. Edited by M. 'Abd

- Şayd al-Khāṭir, edited by Muḥammad al-Ghazzālī. Cairo: Dār al-Kutub al-Ḥadītha,

- Safwat as-Safwa. 4 vols. Haydarābād: Dā'irat al-Ma'ārif, 1936-37/1355-56. Sayd al-Khāṭir, edited by Muḥammad 'Abd ar-Raḥmān 'Awad. Beirut: Dār al-Kutub —— Sīrat 'Umar b. 'Abd al-'Azīz, edited by Majd ad-Dīn al-Khaṭīb. Cairo: al-Mu'ayyid Press, 1331/1912.

Mesca levelid Bogndad

al-Traig (1400)1979 t. 1941

Bristin, Nayya 'Ahd Allah, 'Il

hii h. ai-Malik, Abb Muzaffi

Me Farid "L'Eurose de Phrein

al-Tibri, al-Grama Il-Tallis Tari

Levies L'automé de

al-lowers. Code al-local day

G. E. A. The Authoriti

Seemal, To. W. "Hadde." In S

a Alarki, Mapillit al-Inlandor, e

A STATE OF THE PARTY MANAGEMENT MANAGEMENT AND THE PARTY MANAGEMENT AND

Emilia, Abdillade, "Aperço gé

Committee Union Marjam al-Maria

Smill to Ahmad Knib al-14pt B

A See Bast a-Baghdadi.

de Charles Edit al details walk

E. M. and M. M. H

Rented Fatherla. A Study on Falls

Benrige zur islams

Rem: "Les Agranous rel

950-115

definir le sun

चित्रकार के स्टाइक क

Le Remissar son le ca

3F-34

Ban. 1972 199-115

More Carry Dir al-Kumb

a There Dumescus: Arab

Barrier Dar el-Mastireo Publis

m-Rivered," #500 14 (1934);

"La Commence de Fal

SI U 1955 - 39-55.

1912-145-161

2 me Dumascus: Dür al-Li

Far al-Din al-Rizz. In La

edited by G. Makersi and I

Name Miles and Aird al-Mar

and I. E. Knamers. Leiden at

Current Marrier Press, 1351/19

al-Emplai-Timya, w. d.

Visit al-Dislate, edite

Circle Section & Motel

La Notion de la Marette

- ------ Sīrat 'Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb. Cairo: Dār al-Qawmīya Press, n.d.
- ——— Sīra wa Manāqib 'Umar b. 'Abd al-'Azīz, edited by Na'īm Zarzūr. Beirut: Dār al-Kutub al-'Ilmīya, 1404/1984.
- ----- at-Tabṣira. Beirut: Dār al-Kutub al-'Ilmīya, 1406/1986.
- —— *Talbīs Iblīs*, edited by Muḥammad Munīr ad-Dimashqī. Cairo: The Nahḍa Press, 1347/1928.
- —— Talqīh Fuhūm Ahl al-Athar fī 'Uyūn at-Ta'rīkh wa's-Siyar, edited by 'Alī Ḥasan. Cairo: The Namūdhajīya Press, 1394/1974.
- ——— Ta²rīkh 'Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb. Damascus: Dār Iḥyā' 'Ulûm ad-Dīn, 1974/1394b.
- —— al-Wafā' bi'l-Ahwāl al-Mustafā, edited by Mustafā 'Abd al-Qādir 'Aṭā'. Beirut: Dār al-Kutub al-'Imīya, 1408/1988.
- —— al-Wafā' bi'l-Aḥwāl al-Muṣṭafā, edited by Muṣṭafā 'Abd al-Wāḥid. Cairo: Dār al-Kutub al-Ḥadītha, 1376/1966.
- Zād al-Masīr fī 'Ilm at-Tafsīr, edited by Muḥammad Zuhayr Shāwīsh, Shu'ayb al-Arnu'ūṭ, and 'Abd al-Qādir al-Arnu'ūṭ. Beirut: al-Maktabat al-Islāmī, 1384-1388/1964-1968.
- Ibn al-Jazarī. *Ghāyat an-Nihāyat fī Ṭabaqāt al-Qurrā*². 3 vols. edited by G. Bergsträsser and O. Pretzl. Cairo: Maktabat al-Khānjī, 1351-1352/1932-1933.
- Ibn Kathīr. *al-Badāya wa'n-Nihāya fī't-Ta'rīkh*. 15 vols. edited by 'Ali Najīb 'Aṭawī, Aḥmad Abū Malḥim, Fu'ād as-Sa'īd and Mahdī Nāṣir ad-Dīn. Beirut: Dār al-Kutub al-'Ilmīya, 1988.
- ----- 'Umdat at-Tafṣir, vols. 1-5, edited by Aḥmad Muḥammad Shākir. Cairo: Dār al-Ma'ārif, 1376-1377/1956-1958.
- Ibn Khuzayma. *Kitāb at-Tawḥīd wa Ithbāt Ṣifāt ar-Rabb*, edited by Muḥammad Khalīl Harrās. Cairo: Maktabat al-Kullīyāt al-Azharīya, 1395/1975.
- Ibn Māja. *Sunan*. 2 vols, edited by Muhammad Fu'ād 'Abd al-Bāqī. Beirut: Dār Iḥyā' at-Turāth al-'Arabī, 1372-1373/1952-1953.
- Ibn Manzūr. Lisān al-cArab. 15 vols. Beirut: Dār aṣ-Ṣadr, 1388/1968.
- Ibn an-Nadīm. *al-Fihrist*, edited by G. Flügel, reprinted from 1871. Beirut: Maktabat Khayyāṭ, n.d.
- Ibn al-Qiftī. Ikhbār al-'Ulamā' bi-Akhbār al-Ḥukamā'. Cairo: Maktabat al-Mutanabbī, n.d.
- Ibn Qudāma. Muwaffaq ad-Dīn. *Risālat Dhamm at-Ta'wīl*, in *'Ashr Rasā'il wa 'Aqā'id*. Edited by Muḥmmad Aḥmad 'Abd as-Salām. Cairo: Manār Press, 1351/1932.
- Ibn Qutayba. *Kitāb Ta³wīl Mukhtalif al-Ḥadīth fī'r-Radd ʿalā Aʿdāʾ Ahl al-Ḥadīth*, edited by Maḥmūd Afandī Shābandar Zādeh. Cairo: Maṭbaʿat Kurdistān al-ʿĀmmīya, 1326/1908
- —— Ta'wīl Mushkil al-Qur'ān, edited by Aḥmad Ṣaqar. Cairo: Dār al-Iḥyā', 1373/1954.
- Ibn Rajab. *Kitāb adh-Dhayl ʿalā Tabaqāt al-Ḥanābila*. Edited by Muḥammad al-Ḥiqī. Cairo: Maṭbaʿat as-Sunna, 1372/1952.
- Ibn aṣ-Ṣābūnī. *Takmilat al-Ikmāl al-Akmāl fi'l-Ansāb wa'l-Asmā* wa'l-Alqāb, edited by Muṣṭafa Jawād. Baghdad: al-Majma al-ʿIlmī al-ʿIrāqī, 1377/1957
- Ibn Sa'd. *aṭ-Ṭabaqāt al-Kubrā*. 8 vols, edited by Iḥsān 'Abbās. Beirut: Dār Ṣadr, 1377-1380/1957-1960
- Ibn as-Sāʿī. al-Jāmiʿ al-Mukhtaṣar fī ʿUnwān at-Tawārīkh wa ʿUyūn as-Siyar, edited by

- Muṣṭafa Jawwād. Baghdad: al-Maṭbaʿat as-Siriyānī al-Kāthūlīkīya, 1353/1934.
- —— Nisā' al-Khulafā', edited by Muṣṭafa Jawād. Cairo: Dār al-Ma'ārif, 1961.
- Ibrāhīm, Nājiya 'Abd Allāh. "Ibn al-Jawzī: *Fihrist Kutubihi*," *Majallat al-Majma* 'al-'Ilmī al-'Irāqī (1400/1979): 194-220.
- ——— Qirā'a Jadīda fī Mu'allafāt Ibn al-Jawzī. Baghdad: Maṭba'at ad-Dīnwānī, 1987.
- 'Isā b. al-Malik, Abū Muzaffar. *Kitāb ar-Radd 'alā Abū Bakr al-Khaṭīb*. Beirut: Dār al-Kutub al-'Ilmīya, w. d.
- Jabre, Farid. "L'Extase de Plotin et le fanā" de Ghazali." SI 6 (1956): 101-124.
- ——— La Notion de la Ma^crifa chez Ghazālī. Beirut: J. Vrin, 1958.
- al-Jīlānī. *al-Ghunya li-Tālibī Ṭarīq al-Ḥaqq fī-Akhlāq wa't-Taṣawwuf wa'l-Ādāb al-Islāmīya*. 2 vols. Damascus: Dār al-Lubāb, n.d.
- Jomier, Jacques. "L'autorité de la révélation et la raison dans le commentaire du Coran de Fahr al-Dīn al-Rāzī." In *La notion d'autorité au moyen âge. Islam, Byzance, Occident*, edited by G. Makdisi and D. & J. Sourdel. Paris: Presses Universitaires de France, 1982: 245-261.
- al-Juwaynī. *Kitāb al-Irshād ilā Qawāṭiʿ al-Adilla fī Uṣūl al-Iʿtiqād*, edited by Muḥammad Yūsuf Mūsā and ʿAbd al-Munʿim ʿAbd al-Hamīd. Cairo: Maktabat al-Khānjī, 1369/1950
- Juynboll, G. H. A. The Authenticity of the Tradition Literature. Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1969.
- Juynboll, Th. W. "Ḥadīth." In Shorter Encyclopaedia of Islam, edited by H. A. R. Gibb and J. H. Kramers. Leiden and London: E. J. Brill, 1961: 116-121.
- al-Ka^cbī. Maqālāt al-Islāmīyīn, edited by Fu^ad Sayyid. Tunis: 1974.
- al-Kalwadhānī, Abū'l-Khaṭṭāb Maḥfūz. "'Aqīdat al-Kalwadhānī." In 'Ashr Rasā'il wa 'Aqīda, Cairo: Manār Press, 1351/1932: 18-20.
- Karahan, Abdülkadir. "Aperçu général sur les *qarante hadiths* dans la littérature islamique." SI 4 (1955): 39-55.
- Khaḥḥāla, 'Umar. *Mu'jam al-Mu'allifin*. 15 vols. Damascus: Maṭba'at al-Taraqqi, 1957-1961. Khalīl b. Aḥmad. *Kitāb al-'Ayn*. 8 vols. Baghdad: Maktabat al-'Aynī, 1386/1967.
- al-Khaṭīb, Abū Bakr al-Baghdādī. Ta'rīkh Baghdād. 14 vols. Cairo: Sa'āda Press, 1349-1931.
- al-Khayyāṭ. *Kitāb al-Intiṣār wa'r-Radd ʿalā Ibn ar-Rāwandī al-Mulḥid*, edited by H. S. Nyberg. Cairo: Dār al-Kutub al-Miṣrīya, 1344/1925.
- al-Khiyamī, S. M. and M. M. Ḥāfiẓ (al). *al-Fihris al-ʿĀmm li-Makhṭūṭāt Dār al-Kutub aẓ-Ṭāhirīya*. Damascus: Arabic Academy, 1407/1987.
- Kholeif, Fathalla. *A Study on Fakhr al-Dīn al-Rāzī and His Controversies in Transoxiana*. Beirut: Dar el-Mashreq Publishers, 1966.
- Kraus, Paul. "Beiträge zur islamischen Ketzergeschichte. Das *Kitāb az-Zumurrud* des Ibn ar-Rāwandī." *RSO* 14 (1934): 93-129, 335-379.
- "Les 'Controverses' de Fakhr al-Dīn Rāzī." *Bulletin de l'Institut d'Egypte* 19 (1937): 187-214.
- Laoust, Henri. "Les Agitations religieuses à Baghdād aux IV° et V° siècle de l'hegire." In *Islamic Civilization*, 950-1150, edited by D. S. Richards. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1973: 169-185
- "Comment définir le sunnisme et le chiisme." REI 47 (1979): 3-17.
- "Classification des sectes dans le *Farq* d'al-Baghdādī." *REI* 29 (1961): 19-59.
- ——— "Le Ḥanbalisme sous le caliphat de Baghdad (241/855-656/1258)." *REI* 27 (1959): 67-128.

—— "Le Ḥanbalisme sous les Mamlouks Bahrides (658-784/1260-1382)." *REI* 28 (1960): 1-71.

Orientals Alternated one of

Said Affaire Bibliotheca

Plaintenant Theology, edit

water a latinities in County

Whiteless Albany: SUN

William, 1984; 485-495.

lens Water, "Language and

Roscies, George, "Ashrari and the

三年 (1964): 19-39.

Colors edited by G. E. von

"Authorate Diary of as

The College in Medieval

Description and Discountry

Ethor in Islamic Trade

motion Malibu CA: Un

The Guide of Law or Ma

Section 1 In Sec.

and mind by R. C. Bregnin

Sterner Special Francisco Francisco

E.J. W. Glib Mer

and "hought" It Archiv on

The half of its returned

Own right Bullion and Car

in Peru 1981 - 236-27

年6年31,239-26,19 (19)

George Michaelle Windows, 60

of Ventoral Statios, 1984; 34

and Salman, Leidert E. J. Br

May be Michigan of the

THE THE ST

Religious Trends in Eu-

The Shifte and Khan

The Soverad of Minurial

Series and the Karrino

The Theology of Zama

545453

- Le Précis de droit d'Ibn Qudāma. Beirut: Institut Français de Damas, 1950.
- "Les Premières professions de foi ḥanbalites." In *Mélanges Louis Massignon* III. Damascus: 1957: 7-35.
- La Profession de foi d'Ibn Batta. Damascus: Institut Français de Demas, 1958.
- —— La Profession de foi d'Ibn Taymiyya. Vol. 10. Bibliothèque d'études islamiques, eds. Dominique Sourdel and Janine Thomine Sourdel. Paris: Librairie Orientaliste Paul Geuthner, 1986.
- "Quelques opinions dur la théodicée d'Ibn Taimiya." In *Mélanges Maspéro, III Orient Islamique*. Cairo: Institut Français d'Archéologie Orientale du Caire, 1935-1940: 431-438.
- "Le reformisme d'Ibn Taymīya." Islamic Studies 3 (1962): 27-47.
- "La vie et la philosophie d'Abū-l-'Alā' al-Ma'arrī." BEO 10 (1944-45): 119-156.
- Lazarus-Yafeh, Hava. "Some Notes on the Term '*Taqlīd*' in the Writings of al-Ghazzālī." *IOS* 1 (1971): 249-256.
- Lecomte, Gérard. "La *waṣiyya* (testament spirituel) attribuée à Abū 'Abd Allāh b. Muslim b. Qutayba." *REI* 28 (1960): 73-92
- —— Le traité des divergences du ḥadīṭ d'Ibn Qutayba: traduction annotée du Kitāb Ta'wīl Muḥtalif al-Ḥadīṭ. Damascus: Institut Français de Damas, 1962.
- Leder, Stefan. *Ibn al-Ğauzī und seine Kompilation wider die Leidenschaft, der Traditionalist in gelehrter Überlieferung und originärer Lehre*. Vol. 32. Beiruter Texte und Studien. Beirut: Franz Steiner Verlag, 1984.
- ——— (1997). "Charismatic Scripturalism: The Ḥanbalīs of Damascus." *Der Islam* 74: 279-304.
- Ma'arrī (al). al-Luzūmīyāt. Beirut: Dār Sādir, 1961/1381.
- Maas, Paul. *Textual Criticism*. Translated by Barbara Flower. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1958.
- Macartney, C. H. H. *The Dīwān of Ghailān Ibn 'Uqbah Known as Dhū'r-Rummah*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1919.
- Madanī, Muḥammad. *al-Itḥāfāt as-Sanīya fī'l-Aḥādīth al-Qudsīya*. 2nd edited by. Ḥaydarābād: 1358/1939.
- Madelung, Wilfred. "Aspects of Ismā'īlī Theology: The Prophetic Chain and the God Beyond Being." In *Ismā'īlī Contributions to Islamic Culture*, edited by H. Nasr. Tehran: 1977: 53-65.
- "Early Sunnī Doctrine Concerning Faith as Reflected in the *Kitāb al-Imân* of Abû 'Ubayd al-Qâsim b. Sallâm (d. 224/839)." *SI* 32 (1970): 233-254.
- —— "The Early Murji'a in Khurasān and Transoxania and the Spread of Hanafism." Der Islam 59 (1982): 32-39.
- "Frühe mu^ctazilitische Häresiographie: das *Kitāb al-Uṣūl* des Ga^cfar b. Ḥarb?" *Der Islam* 57 (1980): 220-236.
- "Imamism and Mu^ctazilite Theology." In *Le Shī^cisme Imāmite*, edited by R. Brunschvig and Toufic Fahd. Paris: Presses Universitaires de France, 1970-1972: 13-30.
- ----- "The Origins of the Controversy Concerning the Creation of the Koran." In

- *Orientalia Hispanica sive studia F. M. Pareja Octogenario Dicata*. Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1974: 504-525.
- ——— *Religious Trends in Early Islamic Iran.* Vol. 4. Columbia Lectures on Iranian Studies, Albany: Bibliotheca Persica, 1988.
- "The Shī'ite and Khārijite Contribution to Pre-Ash'arite *Kalām*." In *Islamic Philosophical Theology*, edited by P. Morewedge. Albany: SUNY Press, 1979.
- —— "Sufism and the Karrāmiyya." In Religious Trends in Early Islamic Iran, edited by W. Madelung. Albany: SUNY Press, 1988: 39-53.
- ------- "The Theology of Zamakhsharī." In *Actas del XII Congresso de la U.E.A.I.* in Málaga, 1984: 485-495.
- Mahdi, Muhsin. "Language and Logic in Classical Islam." In *Logic in Classical Islamic Culture*, edited by G. E. von Grunebaum. Wiesbaden: Otto Harrassowitz, 1970: 51-83
- Makdisi, George. "Ash^carī and the Ash^carites in Islamic Religious History." *SI* 17 (1963): 37-80; 18 (1964): 19-39.
- —— "Autograph Diary of an Eleventh Century Historian of Baghdad." *BSOAS* 18 (1956): 9-31, 239-26; 19 (195): 13-48, 281-303, 426-443.
- —— "The College in Medieval Islam." In *Logos Islamikos: Studia Islamica in honorem Georgii Michaelis Wickens*, edited by R. M. Savory and D. A. Agius. Toronto: Institute of Medieval Studies, 1984: 241-257.
- "Dialectic and Disputation: The Relation between the Texts of Qirqisani and Ibn 'Aqil." In *Mélanges d'islamologie, volume dédié à la mémoire de Armand Abel*, edited by P. Salmon. Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1974: 201-206.
- "Ethics in Islamic Traditionalist Doctrine." In *Ethics in Islam*, edited by R. G. Hovannisian. Malibu, CA: Undena Publications, 1985: 47-63.
- "The Guilds of Law in Medieval Legal History: An Inquiry into the Origins of the Inns of Court." *Zeitschrift für Geschichte der Arabischen-Islamischen Wissenschaften* 1 (1984): 233-252.
- ------ "Hanbalite Islam." In *Studies on Islam*, edited by M. Swartz. New York: Oxford University Press, 1981: 216-274.
- ——— Ibn 'Aqīl et la résurgence de l'Islam traditionaliste au xi^e siècle (v^e siècle de l'Hégire). Beirut: Institut Français de Damas, 1963.
- ——— Ibn 'Aqīl: Religion and Culture in Classical Islam. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1997.
- —— Ibn Qudāma's Censure of Speculative Theology, An Edition and Translation of Ibn Qudāma's Taḥrīm an-Nazar fī Kutub Ahl al-Kalām. Translated and edited by G. Makdisi. E. J. W. Gibb Memorial New Series no. 23, London: Luzac and Company, LTD, 1962.
- —— "Ibn Taimīya's Autograph Manuscript on *Istiḥṣān*: Materials for the Study of Legal Thought." In *Arabic and Islamic Studies in Honor of Hamilton A. R. Gibb*, edited by G. Makdisi. Leiden: E. J. Brill Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1965: 446-479.

1547 L TS-39, 1TG-81(3, 394

e. And Marrier East of

Filescop, Start Divide al-Elec

Barton Carro Layers of Talliff School in Frenches on

a Final mad-Sald Br

C The Foreston of the

Challeng di-Adap S A

manufactured by Santy by

THE RESERVE OF FRANCE 1941 14

married Shall From sale-Self-

E.R.A. Technical G

Street, Square, Square,

Times Dir Fern

EU Ball, (MC)

- "The Juridical Theology of Shāfi's: Origins and Significance of *Uṣūl al-Figh*." SI 59 (1984): 5-47. - Kitāb at-Tauwābīn (Le Livre des Pénitents d'Ibn Qudāma). Damascus: Institut Français de Damas, 1961. - "Law and Traditionalism in the Institutions of Learning of Medieval Islam." In Theology and Law in Islam, edited by G. E. von Grunebaum. Wiesbaden: Otto Harrassowitz, 1971: 75-88. - "Le livre de la dialectique d'Ibn 'Aqīl [Kitāb al-Jadal]." BEO 20 (1967): 119-206. — "Madrasa and University in the Middle Ages." SI 32 (1970): 255-264. — "Meditations and Sermons of Ibn 'Aqīl in Eleventh- and Early Twelfth-Century Baghdad." In Prédication et Propagande au Moyen Age: Islam, Byzance, Occident, edited by G. Makdisi and D. Sourdel. Paris: Presses Universitaires de France, 1983: - "Muslim Institutions of Learning in Eleventh-Century Baghdad." BSOAS 24 (1961): 1-56. "The Non-Ash arite Shāfi ism of Abū Ḥāmid al-Ghazzālī." REI 54 (1986): 239-257. - The Notebooks of Ibn 'Aqīl: Kitāb al-Funūn. Série I: Pensée arabe et musulmane, vols. 44-45. Beirut: Dar el-Machreq Éditeurs, 1970-1971. "Nouveaux détails sur l'affaire d'Ibn 'Aqīl." In Mélanges Louis Massignon, vol. III. Paris and Damascus: Institut Français de Damas, 1957: 91-126. - "Quatre Opuscules d'Ibn 'Aqīl sur le Coran." BEO 24 (1971): 55-95. - "Remarks on Traditionalism in Islamic Religious History." In The Conflict of Traditionalism and Modernism in the Muslim Middle East, edited by C. Leiden. Austin: University of Texas Press, 1966: 77-87. - The Rise of Colleges: Institutions of Learning in Islam and the West. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1981. - The Rise of Humanism in Classical Islam and the Christian West. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1990. - "The Scholastic Method in Medieval Education: An Inquiry into its Origins in Law and Theology." Speculum 49 (1974): 640-661. - "Scholasticism and Humanism in Classical Islam and the Christian West." JAOS 109 (2 1989): 175-182. - "The Significance of the Sunni Schools of Law in Islamic Religious History." IJMES 10 (1979): 1-8. "Ṣuḥba et Riyāsa dans l'enseignement médiéval." In Recherches d'Islamologie. Recueil d'articles offert à Georges C. Anawati et Louis Gardet par leurs collègues et amis, edited by R. Arnaldez and S. Van Riet. Louvain: Éditions Peeters, 1977: 207-221. "The Sunnī Revival." In Islamic Civilization, 950-1150, edited by D. S. Richards.
- Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1973: 155-167.

 al-Malaṭī. Muḥammad b. Aḥmad. *Kitāb at-Tanbīh wa'r-Radd ʿalā ahl al-ahwāʾ wa'l-Bidaʿ edited by* S. Dedering. Istanbul: Maṭbaʿat al-Dawlah,1936.

 Margoliouth, D. "'The Devil's Delusions' by Ibn al-Jawzi." *Islamic Culture*. IX (1935) 1-21, 187-208, 377-399, 533-557; X (1936), 20-39, 169-192, 339-368, 633-647: X (1937), 267-273, 393-403, 529-533; XII (1938), 108-118, 352-364; 19 (1945), 69-61 171-188, 272-289. 376-383; XX (1946), 58-71, 181-190, 297-310, 408-422; XX

- (1947), 73-79, 172-183, 394-402; XXII (1948), 75-86.
- Marmura, Michael E. "Avicenna's Proof From Contingency in the Metaphysics of the *Shifâ*'." *Medieval Studies* 42 (1980): 337-352.
- —— "Quiddity and Universality in Avicenna." In *Neopolatonism and Islamic Thought*, edited by P. Morewedge. Albany: SUNY Press, 1992: 77-87.
- The Incoherence of the Philosophers: Tahāfut al-Falāsifa. A Parallel English-Arabic Text Translated, Introduced, and Annotated. Provo, Utah: Brigham Young University, 1997.
- Maturīdi, Abū Manşūr. *Kitāb at-Tawhīd*. Edited by F. Kholeif. Beirut: Dar el-Machreq, 1970
- al-Marzūqī. *Sharḥ Dīwān al-Ḥamāsa*, edited by Aḥmad Amīn and ʿAbd Allāh as-Salām Hārūn. Cairo: Lajnat al-Taʻlīf wa-al-Tarjama wa-al-Nashr, 1951/1371.
- McCarthy, Richard J. Freedom and Fulfillment, An Annotated Translation of al-Ghazālī's al-Munqidh min al-Dalāl. Boston: Twayne Publishers, 1980.
- Melchert, C. *The Formation of the Sunni Schools of Law, 9th-10th Centuries C.E.* Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1997.
- al-Muḥibbī. Khulāṣat al-Athar fī A'yān al-Qarn al-Ḥādī 'Ashar. Beirut: Khayyāṭ, n.d.
- al-Munāwī. *al-Ithbāt as-Sanīya bi'l-Aḥādīth al-Qudsīya*, edited by Muḥammad ʿAfīf az-Ziʿbī. Beirut: Muʾassasat ar-Risāla, n.d.
- al-Mundhirī. *at-Takmilat li-Wafayāt an-Naqala*, edited by Bashshār 'Awwād Ma'rūf. Beirut: Mu'assasat ar-Risāla, 1981/1401.
- al-Murādī. Silk ad-Durar A'yān al-Qarn ath-Thānī. Baghdad: Maktabat al-Muthannā, 1966 Nagel, Tilman. Die Festung des Glaubens. Triumph und Scheitern des islamischen Rationalismus im 11. Jahrhundert. München: Verlag C. H. Beck, 1988.
- Nallino, C. A. "Rapporti fra la dogmatica Mu^ctazilita e quella degli Ibāditi dell'Africa Settentrionale." *Raccolta di Scritti* 2 (1940): 170-175.
- "Sull'origine del nome dei Mu^ctaziliti." In Raccolta di Scritti, 2 (1940): 146-169.
- Nawbakhtī. *Kitāb Firaq ash-Shī^ca, edited by* H. Ritter. Istanbul: Bibliotheca Islamica, 1931.
- Nicholson, R. A. "The *Risālat al-Ghufrān* by Abū'l-ʿAlā' al-Maʿarrī and Partially Translated." *JRAS* (1900): 637-720; (1902): 75-101.
- Ormsby, E. Theodicy in Islamic Thought: The Dispute over al-Ghazālī's "Best of All Possible Worlds." Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1984.
- Paret, Rudi. Der Koran/Übersetzung. Stuttgart: Kohlhammer, 1966.
- Peters, J. R. T. M. God's Created Speech: A Study in the Speculative Theology of the Muʿtazilī Qāḍī l-Quḍāt Abuʾl-Ḥasan ʿAbd al-Jabbār b. Aḥmad al-Hamaḏānī. Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1976.
- Pines, S. Beiträge zur islamischen Atomenlehre. Berlin: A. Heine, 1936.
- ----- "A Note on an Early Meaning of the Term *Mutakallim*." *IOS* 1 (1971): 224-240.
- Pretzl, Otto. "Die frühislamische Atomenlehre." Der Islam 19 (1931): 117-130.
- al-Qasṭallānī. *Irshād as-Sārī fī Sharḥ al-Bukhārī*. 10 vols. Baghdād: Maktabat al-Muthannā, 1390/1971.
- al-Qummī. *al-Kunyā wa'l-Alqāb*. Najaf: al-Maṭba'at al-Ḥaydarīya, 1956/1376.

- Rahman, F. "Concepts Sunnah, Ijtihād and Ijmā^c in the Early Period." Islamic Studies 1 (1962): 5-21.
- ar-Rāzī, Fakhr ad-Dīn. *Asās at-Taqdīs*. Cairo: Maṭbaʿat Muṣṭafa al-Bābī al-Ḥalabi, 1354/1935. *Kitāb al-Mabāḥith al-Mashriqīya fī ʿIlm al-Ilāhīyāt wa'ṭ-Ṭabīʿiyāt*. 2 vols. Ḥaydarābād: Maktabat Amīr, 1343/1924.
- Reig, Daniel. "Le Ṣayd al-Ḥāṭir d'Abū'l-Faraǧ ibn al-Ğawzī." SI 34 (1971): 89-123.
- Reig, D. La pensée vigile: Sayd al-Khâtir, traduit de l'arabe, présenté et annoté. Paris: Sindbad, 1986.
- Reinhart, A. K. *Before Revelation: The Boundaries of Muslim Moral Thought*. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1995.
- Reinert, Benedikt. *Die Lehre vom Tawakkul in der klassischen Sufik*. Berlin: Walter de Gruyter & Co., 1968.
- Rescher, Ncholas. "Some Arabic Technical Terms of Syllogistic Logic and their Greek Originals." *JAOS* 82 (1962): 203-204.
- Richter-Bernburg, Lutz. "Ibn al-Māristānīya: The Career of a Ḥanbalite Intellectual in Sixth/Twelfth Century Baghdad." *JAOS* 102 (1982): 265-283.
- Ritter, Helmut. "Muhammedanische Häresiographen." Der Islam 18 (1929): 34-55.
- "Ibn al-Gauzī's Bericht über Ibn ar-Rēwendī." Der Islam 19 (1931): 1-17.
- "Autographs in Turkish Libraries." *Oriens* 66 (1953): 63-90.
- Robson, James. "The Form of Muslim Tradition." *Transactions of the Glasgow University Oriental Society* 16 (1955-56): 38-50.
- ------ "Ḥadīth." Encyclopaedia of Islam (2nd ed.), 3 (1971): 23-28.
- ------- "Ibn Isḥāq's Use of the *Isnād*." *Bulletin of the John Rylands Library* 38 (1955-1956): 449-465.
- "The Isnād in Muslim Tradition." Transactions of the Glasgow University Oriental Society 15 (1953-1954): 15-26.
- "The Material of Tradition." *Muslim World* 41 (1951): 166-180, 258-270.
- ——— "Is the Moslem Hell Eternal?" Muslim World 28 (1938): 386-396.
- "A Shī'a Collection of Divine Traditions." *Transactions of the Glasgow University Oriental Society* 22 (1967-68): 1-13.
- "Standards Applied by Muslim Traditionists." *Bulletin of the John Rylands Library* 143 (1961): 459-479.
- "Tradition, The Second Foundation of Islam." Muslim World 41 (1951): 22-33.
- "Tradition: Investigation and Classification." Muslim World 41 (1951): 98-112.
- "Traditions from Individuals." Journal of Semitic Studies 9 (1958): 327-340.
- ----- "The Transmission of Muslim's Saḥīḥ." JRAS (1949): 46-60.
- ——— "The Transmission of Abū Dāwūd's Sunan." BSOAS 14 (1952): 589-588.
 - "The Transmission of Tirmidhī's Jāmi'." BSOAS 16 (1954): 258-270.
- "The Transmission of Nasari's Sunan." Journal of Semitic Studies 1 (1956): 38-59.
- "The Transmission of Ibn Mājah's Sunan." Journal of Semitic Studies 3 (1958): 129-141.
- "Varieties of the *Ḥasan* Tradition." *Journal of Semitic Studies* 6 (1961): 47-61.

Late of Dine. Maripid al-Joseph Cal n- Ambiya, 1373 1954 Land ad-Dor al-Land live 1353-1355 1934-1936 - Selimi, Abu'l-Mr'ili Muhan Marcolitati al-Malitair, Bud - Lee Santii. La vie future sela Ballichary, Edward E. "Contribu Science of Muslim Tradition. Series The Knib al-Assib Reg Marcon Add 23,355, with a 1902 Shareh Dinain Junit. Ca Seems Joseph. "An Early Murch TR64: 96-017. New Sources for the Hist "A Revolution of Islamic Zar Geschichte des islam en. Friedrich. Umaju ibn / "Betring our Anny Lohns Hopkins Pres Withel "The Lener of a "The Qual "Abd al-Gabba Kadil * 805 6 (1976): 229-26 Fax Genetichte des problè est. The liste des manuscri - Remove Newsday of Makk 24 Titt al-Indid, 1975. Watermad h. 'Abd A e San a Sin Budarian. Cairec al Cost Victor of Igday & Th London United Lienary Pre-्राच्या विकास के किए प्रश्न के किए प्रश्न के किए प्रश्न के किए प्रश्न के किए प्रश्न के किए प्रश्न के किए प्रश्न A Self-of d-Majisit on-No Terrore of Fallis, 1967. Tulleto of Bords fi Major Carrie Die Brid al-Kund The second section of the second Gertal E-60-1380, 1951-1951. The Profess -

Company Name Pulmers by

- Şafī'd-Dīn. *Marāṣid al-Iṭṭilāʿ ʿalā Asmāʾ al-Amkina*. 3 vols. Cairo: Dār al-Iḥyāʾ al-Kutub al-ʿArabīya, 1373/1954.
- Sakhāwī. ad-Daw' al-Lāmi' li-ahl al-Qarn at-Tāsi'. 12 vols. Cairo: Maktabat al-Qudsi, 1353-1355/1934-1936.
- as-Salāmī, Abū'l-Maʿālī Muḥammad b. Rāfiʿ. *Taʾrīkh ʿUlamāʾ Baghdād al-Musammā Muntakhab al-Mukhtār*. Baghdad: Maṭbaʿat al-ahālī, 1357/1938.
- el-Saleh, Subhi. La vie future selon le Coran. Paris: J. Vrin, 1971.
- Salisbury, Edward E. "Contributions from Original Sources to our Knowledge of the Science of Muslim Tradition." *JAOS* 7 (1862): 60-142.
- Sam^cānī. The Kitāb al-Ansāb, Reproduced in Facsimile from the Manuscript in the British Museum, Add. 23,355, with an Introduction by D. S. Margoliouth. Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1912.
- Şāwī (aṣ). Sharḥ Dīwān Jarīr. Cairo: al-Maktabat at-Tijārīya al-Kubrā, 1353/1934.
- Schacht, Joseph. "An Early Murci'ite Treatise: The *Kitāb al-ʿĀlim wa'l-Mutaʿallim.*" *Oriens* 17 (1964): 96-117.
- "New Sources for the History of Muḥammadan Theology." SI 1 (1953): 23-42.
- ----- "A Revaluation of Islamic Traditions." JRAS (1949): 143-154.
 - "Zur Geschichte des islamischen Dogmas." Der Islam 21 (1933): 286-291.
- Schulthess, Friedrich. "Umajja ibn Abi-ṣ-Ṣalt: die unterseinem Namen überlieferten Gedichfragmente." *Beiträge zur Assyriologie und Semitischen Sprachwissenschaft*, VIII/3. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins Press, 1911: 1-136.
- Schwarz, Michael. "The Letter of al-Ḥasan al-Baṣrī." Oriens 20 (1967): 15-30.
- —— "The Qāḍī 'Abd al-Ğabbār's Refutation of the Aš'arite Doctrine of 'Acquisition' (*Kasb*)." *IOS* 6 (1976): 229-263.
- Sezgin, Fuat. Geschichte des arabischen Schfrifttums. Vols. 1-9. Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1967-1984.
- ——— ed. *Une liste des manuscrits choisis parmi les bibliothéques de Bursa*. Istanbul, 1951.
- Sesen, Ramazan. *Nawādir al-Makhṭūṭat al-ʿArabīya fī Maktabāt Turkīyā*. Vol. 1. Beirut: Dār al-Kitāb al-Jadīd, 1975.
- Shahrastānī, Muḥammad b. ʿAbd Allāh. *Kitāb al-Milal wa'n-Nihal*, edited by Muḥammad b. Fath Allāh Badarān. Cairo; al-Azhar Press, 1366/1948.
- *Kitāb Nihāyat al-Iqdām fī 'Ilm al-Kalām*, edited and translated. by Alfred Guillaume. London: Oxford University Press, 1934.
- ——— Livre des religions et des sects. Translated by D. Gimaret and G. Monnot. Louvain: Peeters, 1986.
- ash-Sharīf ar-Raḍī, *al-Majāzāt an-Nabawwīya*, edited by Ṭāhā Muḥammad az-Zaynī. Cairo: Muʾassasat al-Ḥalabī, 1967.
- —— Talkhīs al-Bayān fī Majāzāt al-Qur³ān, edited by Muḥammad 'Abd al-Ghanī Ḥasan. Cairo: Dār Iḥyā al-Kutub al'Arabīya, 1955.
- Sibt b. al-Jawzī. *Mir'āt az-Zamān fī Ta'rīkh al-A'yān*. 2 vols. Ḥaydarābād: Dā'irat al-Ma'ārif,1380-1381/1951-1952.
- Sourdel, Dominique. "Une Profession de foi de l'historien al-Ṭabarī." *REI* 36 (1968): 177-199.
- Steinschneider, Moritz. Polemische und apologetische Literatur in arabischer Sprache,

zwischen Muslimen, Christen und Juden, nebst Anhängen verwandten Inhalts. Vol. 6. Abhandlungen für die Kunde des Morgenlandes, Leipzig: F. A. Brockhaus, 1877.

Come H. Gine and A. So

dinini d'al-Bashadi." BEO 30

"Le delle dans la pens

"Le Lime arbitre de l'ho

Le problème de la visage

Le principe de la resi

Minus * JH Je3 (1975): 51-92

and the Clarical Tradition, &

Martin or his Severaleth Birth

merinis." Le Stiene la

to a la marcha de Franci

E. M. Anabic Gran

Tened in

THE CHANGE THE PARTY OF YOU

Free Will and Products

The Williams Philosophy and

Name Market Disc

I have become a le

Series 13 (1

- Carrier Car 25 (1978)

Tomologie of the Past T

" Longrage and Law; The L

serger and Tradition or 3

Service State Beautiful

and the second of the H. Great

Married Towns Control (1984)

Smesti Pesu, 1985.

5.3

100 TO 100

The Ender on pays of Isla

Great Elements in Arabic I

The france Language, New

Period of Int

The Ligidal Basis of Earth

The Comment of the Co

Jean-Claude. Tradition is

157-3111

OFFID: 257-268.

E-43-09

365-380

- Stetkevych, S. "Toward a Redefinition of 'Badīr' Poetry." *Journal of Arabic Literature* 12 (1981): 1-29.
- Strothmann, R. "Tashbīh." In Shorter Encyclopaedia of Islam. Leiden: E. J. Brill and Luzac & Co., 1961: 583-585.
- Stroumsa, Sarah. "The Blinding Emerald: Ibn al-Rāwandī's *Kitāb al-Zumurrud.*" *JAOS* 114 (1994): 163-185.
- Stroumsa, Sarah. Freethinkers of Medieval Islam: Ibn al-Rāwandī, Abū Bakr al-Rāzī and Their Impact on Islamic Thought. In Islamic Philosophy, Theology and Sciences, Texts and Studies, 35, edited by H. Daiber. Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1999.
- —— "From Muslim Heresy to Jewish-Muslim Polemics: Ibn al-Rāwandī's *Kitāb al-Dāmigh*." *JAOS* 107 (1987): 767-772.
- —— "The Signs of Prophecy: The Emergence and Early Development of a Theme in Arabic Theological Thought." *Harvard Theological Review* 78 (1985): 101-114.
- Suyūṭī, *Tabaqāt al-Ḥuffāz*. Edited by 'Alī Muḥammad 'Umar. Cairo: Maktabat Wahba, 1393/1973.
- Swartz, Merlin. "Arabic Rhetoric and the Art of the Homily in Medieval Islam." *Religion and Culture in Medieval Islam (Levi Della Vida Volume* dedicated to G. Makdisi). Edited by R. Hovannisian and G. Sabagh. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press. 1999: 36-65.
- —— Ibn al-Jawzī's Kitāb al-Quṣṣāṣ wa'l-Mudhakkirīn, Including a Critical Edition. Annotated Translation and Introduction. Vol 47. Pensée Arabe et Musulmane. Beirut: Institut de Lettres Orientales, 1971.
- "A Seventh-Century Sunnī Creed: The 'Aqīda Wasiṭīya of Ibn Taymīya." Humaniora Islamica I (1974): 91 131.
- ——— Studies on Islam. New York, Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1981.
- at-Ṭabarī, *Jāmi^c al-Bayān ^can Ta'wīl al-Qur'ān*. 15 vols. Edited by Maḥmūd Muḥammad Shākir and Ahmad Muḥammad Shākir. Cairo: Dār al-Ma^cārif, 1374-1379/1954-1960.
- —— Jāmi^c al-Bayān ^can Ta²wīl al-Qur²ān. 28 vols. Reprinted from the Būlāq edition of 1329/1911. Beirut: Dār al-Ma^crifa, 1406-1407/1986-1987.
- —— Ta'rīkh ar-Rusul wa'l-Mulūk. 10 vols. Edited by Muḥammad Abū'l-Faḍl Ibrāhīm. Cairo: Dār al-Ma'ārif, 1960-1969.
- Tāhā Ḥusayn. Āthār Abī'l-'Alā' al-Ma'arrī. Cairo: Dār al-Kutub al-Miṣrīya, 1363/1944.
- —— Ta'rīf al-Qudamā' bi-Abī'l-'Alā' al-Ma'arrī Cairo: Dār al-Qawmīya,1384/1965.
- Ṭāhā, Nu^cmān Muḥammad Amīn, *Dīwān Jarīr*. Commentary by Muḥammad b. Ḥabīb. I vols. Cairo: Dār al-Ma^cārif, 1969-1971.
- Tha lab, Aḥmad b. Yahyā. *Majlis Tha lab*. Vol. 1. Edited Abd as-Salām Muḥammad Hārūn. Cairo: Dār al-Ma ārif, 1969.
- Tuft, A. K. "The *Ru'yā* Controversy and the Interpretation of Qur'ān Verse VII (*al-A'rāf* 143." *Hamdard Islamicus* 6 (1983): 3-41.
- Ullmann, Manfred. Wörterbuch der Klassischen Arabischen Sprache, Band I (with J

- Kraemer, H. Gätje and A. Spitaler); II, 1; II, 2; II, 3. Wiesbaden: Otto Harrassowitz, 1970-2000.
- Vadet, Jean-Claude. "Tradition islamique et Ash'arisme dans le 'Livre des noms et attributs divins' d'al-Bayhaqī." *BEO* 30 (1978): 253-269.
- Vajda, Georges. "L'attribut divin d'*irāda* (volonté) d'après une source inexploitée." *SI* 31 (1970): 257-268.
- —— "Le '*kalām*' dans la pensée religieuse juive du Moyen Age." *RHR* 187 (1973): 143-160.
- ——— "Le Libre arbitre de l'homme et la justification de son assujettissement à la loi divine." *JA* 163 (1975): 51-92.
- —— "Le probléme de la vision de Dieu d'après Yūsuf al-Baṣīr." *Islamic Philosophy and the Classical Tradition, Essays Presented by his Friends and Pupils to Richard Walzer on his Seventieth Birthday*. Columbia, SC: University of South Carolina Press, 1972: 473-489.
- —— "Le probléme de la vision de Dieu (*ru'ya*) d'après quelques auteurs shī'ites duodécimains." *Le Shī'isme Imāmite*. Edited by R. Brunschvig and T. Fahd. Paris: Presses Universitaires de France, 1972: 31-54.
- "Les Zindiqs en pays d'Islam au debut de la période abbaside." *RSO* 17 (1937-38): 173-229.
- Versteegh, C. H. M. Arabic Grammar and Qur'anic Exegesis in Early Islam. Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1993.
- ——— Greek Elements in Arabic Linguistic Thinking. Leiden: E. J. Brill, 1977.
- —— The Arabic Language. New York: Columbia University Press, 1997.
- Watt, W. Montgomery. "Created in His Image: A Study in Islamic Theology." *Transactions of the Glasgow University Oriental Society* 18 (1959-60): 38-49.
- —— The Formative Period of Islamic Thought. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1973.
- ------ Free Will and Predestination in Early Islam. London: Luzac & Company, 1948.
- Watt, W. M. *Islamic Philosophy and Theology: An Extended Survey*. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1985.
- ——— "The Logical Basis of Early *Kalam*." *Islamic Quarterly* 6 (1961): 1-10; 7 (1963): 31-39.
- "Some Muslim Discussions of Anthropomorphism." *Transactions of the Glasgow University Oriental Society* 13 (1947-49): 1-10.
- Weiss, Bernard. "Interpretation in Islamic Law: The Theory of *Ijtihād*." *American Journal of Comparative Law*, 26 (1978): 199-212.
- —— "Knowledge of the Past: The Theory of *Tawātur* according to Ghazālī." *SI* 61 (1985): 81-105.
- "Language and Law: The Linguistic Premises of Islamic Legal Science." In *In Quest of an Islamic Humanism: Arabic and Islamic Studies in Memory of Mohammed al-Nowaihi, edited by A. H. Green. Cairo: American University in Cairo Press, 1984:* 15-21.

- "The Medieval Muslim Discussions of the Origin of Language." ZDMG 125 (1974): 33-41.
- "Subject and Predicate in the Thinking of Arab Philologists." JAOS 105 (1985): 605-622.
- "A Theory of the Parts of Speech in Arabic (Noun, Verb, Particle): A Study in 'ilm al-wad'." Arabica 23 (1976): 23-36.
- Wensinck, A. J. The Muslim Creed: Its Genesis and Historical Development. London: Frank Cass & Co., 1965.
- Wolfson, Harry A. "Philosophical Implications of the Problem of Divine Attributes in the Kalām." JAOS 79 (1959): pp. 73-80.
- The Philosophy of the Kalam. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1976. Yāqūt. Mu^cjam al-Buldān. Beirut: Dār Ṣādir, 1374-1376/1955-1957.
- al-Yūnīnī. Dhayl Mir'āt az-Zamān. Ḥaydarābād: Dā'irat al-Ma'ārif, 1374-1380/1954-1961.
- az-Zabīdī, Tāj al-'Arūs min Jawāhir al-Qāmūs. 16 vols. Edited by Ḥusayn Naṣṣār. Kuwait: Mațbacat Ḥukūmat al-Kuwayt, 1369/1969.
- Zamakhsharī. al-Kashshāf 'an Ḥaqā'iq at-Tanzīl wa 'Uyūn al-Aqāwīl fī Wujūh at-Ta'wīl. Cairo: Mușțafă Bābi al-Ḥalabī, 1972.

INDEX TO THE IN

STATE OF THE PARTY

and aller 5 "Abbis [8] Allar h Abi Salama 181

with ealth in Altimad (b. Hanbal)

The state in 'Americal-'As 208. Manual Manual State of the Control o

Carvish 153

- Last Khalifa 251, 252

Lier b. 21-Muttärak Abit "Abit

Language a-Marwagi 104

Muhammad b. al-Yasi

- Joseph al-Qiri al-Amiki

CE (Jah t. Sulliss 250

E Cult t. Chayy 286

- + Lee 1 Umar 207, 225, 232

Marie Make 155

and the same al-Hirith b. Asad b.

Contract (Base at Tamini) and an Harming all Allways 18, 37

22, 79, 81, 90, 118

- a-Karim t. Abi T- Awja 192

and a Marwin 177

31, 124 Maria 40 Mar 250

15, 28, 118,

- Baghdadi 20, 41

and an Automobile N. Navi 143

and a series to all laws of 1944, 29

t Mahii 116

Fulmis 5 Survis 88

a Firming to Romain al-

33

- Salar at-Hamil 25, 285, 296

See See Mubinsk 277 and a Parisi 98

Minister (6) 251

INDEX TO THE INTRODUCTION AND TRANSLATION

'Abd Allāh (See also 'Abd Allāh b.
Aḥmad) 61
'Abd Allāh b. 'Abbās 181
'Abd Allāh b. Abī Salama 181
'Abd Allāh b. Aḥmad (b. Ḥanbal) 193,
238
'Abd Allāh b. 'Amr b. al-'Āṣ 208, 221
'Abd Allāh al-Anṣārī 34
'Abd Allāh Darwish 153
'Abd Allāh b. Khalīfa 251, 252
'Abd Allāh b. al-Mubārak Abū 'Abd ar-
Raḥmān al-Marwazī 104
'Abd Allāh b. Muḥammad b. al-Yasa'
(Abū'l-Qāsim al-Qāri' al-Anṭākī) 184
'Abd Allāh b. Sallām 250
'Abd Allāh b. Ubayy 286
'Abd Allāh b. 'Umar 207, 225, 232
'Abd Allāh b. Wahb 155
'Abd al-'Azīz b. al-Ḥārith b. Asad b. al-
Layth (Abū'l-Ḥasan at-Tamīmī) 134
'Abd al-Ḥamīd al-'Alwajī 18, 37
'Abd al-Jabbār 22, 79, 81, 90, 118
(A L J -1 TZ 1, A L-21 (A - '-) 100 000
'Abd al-Karīm b. Abī'l-'Awjā' 182, 228
'Abd al-Malik b. Marwān 177
'Abd al-Malik b. Marwān 177
'Abd al-Malik b. Marwān 177 'Abd al-Mughīth b. Zuhayr 31, 124 'Abd al-Qādir 250
'Abd al-Malik b. Marwān 177 'Abd al-Mughīth b. Zuhayr 31, 124
'Abd al-Malik b. Marwān 177 'Abd al-Mughīth b. Zuhayr 31, 124 'Abd al-Qādir 250 'Abd al-Qādir al-Jīlānī 25, 28, 118, 250 'Abd al-Qāhir al-Baghdādī 20, 41
'Abd al-Malik b. Marwān 177 'Abd al-Mughīth b. Zuhayr 31, 124 'Abd al-Qādir 250 'Abd al-Qādir al-Jīlānī 25, 28, 118, 250
'Abd al-Malik b. Marwān 177 'Abd al-Mughīth b. Zuhayr 31, 124 'Abd al-Qādir 250 'Abd al-Qādir al-Jīlānī 25, 28, 118, 250 'Abd al-Qāhir al-Baghdādī 20, 41 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. 'Awf 243
'Abd al-Malik b. Marwān 177 'Abd al-Mughīth b. Zuhayr 31, 124 'Abd al-Qādir 250 'Abd al-Qādir al-Jīlānī 25, 28, 118, 250 'Abd al-Qāhir al-Baghdādī 20, 41 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. 'Awf 243 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. al-Jawzī 284, 285
'Abd al-Malik b. Marwān 177 'Abd al-Mughīth b. Zuhayr 31, 124 'Abd al-Qādir 250 'Abd al-Qādir al-Jīlānī 25, 28, 118, 250 'Abd al-Qāhir al-Baghdādī 20, 41 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. 'Awf 243 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. al-Jawzī 284, 285 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. Mahdī 106
'Abd al-Malik b. Marwān 177 'Abd al-Mughīth b. Zuhayr 31, 124 'Abd al-Qādir 250 'Abd al-Qādir al-Jīlānī 25, 28, 118, 250 'Abd al-Qāhir al-Baghdādī 20, 41 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. 'Awf 243 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. al-Jawzī 284, 285 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. Mahdī 106 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. Sufyān 88
'Abd al-Malik b. Marwān 177 'Abd al-Mughīth b. Zuhayr 31, 124 'Abd al-Qādir 250 'Abd al-Qādir al-Jīlānī 25, 28, 118, 250 'Abd al-Qāhir al-Baghdādī 20, 41 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. 'Awf 243 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. al-Jawzī 284, 285 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. Mahdī 106 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. Sufyān 88 'Abd ar-Razzāq b. Hammām al-
'Abd al-Malik b. Marwān 177 'Abd al-Mughīth b. Zuhayr 31, 124 'Abd al-Qādir 250 'Abd al-Qādir al-Jīlānī 25, 28, 118, 250 'Abd al-Qāhir al-Baghdādī 20, 41 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. 'Awf 243 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. al-Jawzī 284, 285 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. Mahdī 106 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. Sufyān 88 'Abd ar-Razzāq b. Hammām al- Ḥimyarī 263

'Abd al-Wahhāb al-Warrāq 98

Abraham 81, 201

Abū 'Abd Allāh (Aḥmad b. Muḥammad b. Hanbal) 89, 178, 196, 206 Abū 'Abd Allāh b. Ḥāmid al-Warrāq (see also Ibn Hāmid) 94, 121 Abū 'Abd Allāh al-Khayyāṭ 13 Abū 'Abd Allāh Muḥammad b. Idrīs 104 Abū 'Abd Allāh Muḥammad b. Shujā' al-Balkhī ath-Thaljī 87 Abū 'Abd Allāh ash-Shāmī 181 Abū 'Abd Allāh Sufyān b. Sa'īd ath-Thawrī 104 Abū 'Abd Allāh 'Ubayd b. Hunayn, 194 Abū 'Abd ar-Raḥmān Mu'ādh b. Jabal b. 'Amr 176 Abū 'Abd ar-Rahmān an-Nasā'ī 181 Abū Aḥmad 'Abd Allāh b. 'Adī b. 'Abd Allāh b. Muḥammad al-Jurjānī 89 Abū Aḥmad b. 'Adī 89 Abū'l-Aḥwaṣ al-Jushamī 230 Abū' l-'Alā' al-Ḥasan b. Aḥmad b. al-Ḥasan al-'Aṭṭār 63-60 Abū'l-'Alā al-Ma'arrī 97, 98, 120 Abū 'Alī al-Hāshimī 125 Abū 'Alī al-Jubbā'ī 119 Abū 'Alī Şāliḥ Jazara 238 Abū 'Alī b. aṣ-Ṣawwāf 238 Abū 'Āmir b. Sharāḥīl ash-Sha'bī 254 Abū 'Amr 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. 'Amr al-Awzā'ī 104 Abū 'Amr b. 'Ubayd 21 Abū 'Amr Yaḥyā b. al-'Alā' al-Bajalī ar-Rāzī 264 Abū 'Amr az-Zāhid 202 Abū'l-Azharī 272 Abū Bakr 100, 102, 112, 133 Abū Bakr 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. Aḥmad as-Sunnī 102, 103 Abū Bakr b. Abī Shayba 218

Abū Bakr al-Ajurrī (see also Ājurrī) 215 Ghazzālī) 11 Abū Bakr al-'Āmirī 15 Abū Bakr b. al-Anbārī 141 Abū Bakr al-Ansārī 10 Abū Bakr al-Athram (Ahmad b. Hāni') 134 Abū Bakr al-Bāgillānī 13 Abū Bakr al-Barqānī 238 Abū Bakr al-Bayhaqī (see also al-Bayhaqī) 20, 41, 47, 195, 198, 227, 243 Abū Bakr ad-Dīnawarī 13, 39 Abū Bakr b. Ghaylān 10 Abū Hāshim 119 Abū Bakr al-Ismā'ili Abū Bakr al-Jassās 55, 167 Abū Bakr al-Khallāl 134, 219, 220, 221 Abū Bakr al-Khatīb 10, 11 Abū Bakr b. Khuzayma 142, 200 139, 140 Abū Bakr al-Marwazī 253, 254 Abū Bakr Muḥammad b. Ishāq aş-Sāghānī 193 Abū Bakr b. Muslim al-'Ābidī 253 273, 275, 279 Abū Bakr Qādī'l-Māristān 10 Abū'l-Barakāt 11 Abū Dardā' 274 Abū Dāwūd 115, 131, 134, 143, 162, 191, 213, 215, 234, 243, 245, 255, 264, 268, 272 Abū Dāwūd b. al-Ash'ath 134 Abū Dāwūd al-Ashram 134 Abū Dāwūd as-Sijistānī 134 Abū'l-Fadl al-'Althī (see also 'Althī) 42, 43, 121, 284 Abū'l-Fadl al-Baghawī 263 Abū'l-Fadl b. Nāṣir (also see Ibn Nāsir) 47 Abū'l-Faraj b. al-Jawzī 282 Abū'l-Faraj at-Tamīmī 125 Abū Lahab 115 Abū'l-Fatḥ b. Abī'l-Fawāris Abū'l-Fath al-Karūkhī 11 Abū Ḥakīm 13, 14, 39 Abū Ḥakīm al-Khabrī 6 Abū Mijliz 196 Abū Ḥakīm an-Nahrawānī 13, 39 Abū Ḥāmid al-Ghazzālī (see also al-Abū Muḥammad b. al-Khashshāb 238

Abū Ḥanīfa 23, 87, 102, 105, 106, 113 Abū'l-Hasan b. al-Bannā' 124 Abū'l-Ḥasan ad-Dabbās 160 Abū'l-Ḥasan ad-Dāwūdī Abū'l-Ḥasan al-ʿIjlī 255 Abū'l-Ḥasan al-Maghribī 11 Abū'l-Hasan Muhammad b. Hilāl b. Muḥsin aṣ-Ṣābi' 120, 138 Abū'l-Hasan al-Qazwini 135 Abū'l-Ḥasan al-Warrāq 175 Abū'l-Ḥasan at-Tamīmī 134 Abū Hātim b. Ḥibbān 241, 274 Abū Ḥayyān at-Tawhīdī 120 Abū'l-Hudhayl (Muḥammad b. Hudhayl al-'Allāf) 21, 110, 113, 116, 118, 138. Abū Hurayra 87, 140, 170, 172, 177, 178, 185, 198, 202, 204, 212, 213, 214, 226, 235, 240, 242, 245, 261, 266, 270. Abū'l-Ḥusayn b. Abī Ya'lā Abū'l-Ḥusayn al-Khayyāt 119 Abū'l-Ḥusayn b. al-Munādī 61, 212 Abū 'Īsā at-Tirmidhī 215 Abū 'Isā al-Warrāq 119 Abū Ishāq 251, 252 Abū Isḥāq az-Zajjāj 147 Abū Ismā'il al-Ansārī 11 Abū'l-'Izz b. Kādish 238 Abū Ja'far b. Abī Shayba 274 Abū Ja'far al-Hadramī 238 Abū Ja'far al-Iskāfī 85 Abū Ja'far Muḥammad b. 'Uthmān b. Abī Shayba 238, 274 Abū'l-Khaṭṭāb Qatāda b. Di'āma Abū'l-Muhazzim 87, 88, 89 Abū Manşūr b. Khayrūn 11 Abū Mansūr al-Qazzāz 10 Abū Muḥammad 125, 227

m Martinad & Kharish 238

in Windowski al-Magn² 13

interiory-m is a

In Minimal & Quaybe 175

Summir at-Tamini 125, 160

im Marinness at-Tarrimi 156.

and Thermal River !

- Lat 1-1-20 mi 187, 191, 27

E 20.271.271.376

man Near Hasting b. Quys al-

To Sur a Republici II

- - Dem LELAS

and the second state of the second se

Committee 13

and of the same of

- Senson a-Senerged 10

- American de la compania del compania del compania de la compania del la compania de la compani

Com 9 Com 9 265,211

O Shikwalife as

was a work or Edition to Market

Secretaria 106

ME 193, 146.

And the state of t

and of the property of the base of

2-Daniel 25,41, 0

5 (5 (8) 36 (36)

SECTION OF THE

BE 25, 196

and the latter to

and the Company of the

Top as Rutmin to Zand

to Completely 21

West & Woman | 61, 112, 124,

Sec. 100

SR 15 360

Emino Tro

The last

Street C

E 151,259

Abū Muḥammad b. Khirāsh 238 Abū Muhammad al-Muqri' 13 Abū Muhammad an-Nawbakhtī 47 Abū Muḥammad b. Qutayba 175 Abū Muḥammad Rizq Allāh b. 'Abd al-Wahhāb at-Tamīmī 125, 160 Abū Muḥmmad at-Tamīmī 156, 160, 161, 166 Abū Muḥammad at-Tamīmī Rizq (Allāh b. 'Abd al-Wahhāb) 61, 112, 124, 125, 134, 135, 260 Abū Mūsā 151, 259 Abū Mūsā al-Ash'arī 187, 191, 218 Abū'n-Nadr Hāshim b. Qays al-Kinānī 239 Abū Nasr al-Hamadhānī 11 Abū Nu'aym (al-Isbahānī) 15, 41, 128, 203, 228, 257, 270, 276 Abū'l-Qāsim 3, 11, 14, 25 Abū'l-Qāsim al-'Alawī 15 Abū'l-Qāsim al-Balkhī Abū'l-Qāsim b. Habbār 13 Abū'l-Qāsim b. Muḥammad b. al-Yasa^c 184 Abū'l-Qāsim as-Samarqandī 10 Abū'l-Qāsim aṣ-Ṣayraf ī al-Azharī Abū Qilāba 'Abd ar-Raḥmān b. Zayd al-Jarmī 177 Abū Razīn (al-'Uqayl ī) 205, 211 Abū's-Sa'ādāt al-Mutawakkil ī 10 Abū Sa'd 193, 195, 196 Abū Sa'd as-Sam'ānī 12 Abū Sa'īd 'Abd ar-Rahmān b. Mahdī b. Ḥassān al-Baṣrī al-Lu'lu'ī 106 Abū Sa'īd ad-Dimashqī 276 Abū Sa'īd al-Khudrī 185, 193, 246, 254, 276 Abū Sa'īd 'Ubayd Allāh b. 'Umar b. Maysara al-Qawārīrī al-Jushamī Abū Shāma 5, 13, 16, 26, 286 Abū Sufyān 196 Abū Sulaymān al-Khattābī 20, 41, 114, 162, 163, 172, 185, 186, 223, 245, 271, 273

Abū Ţālib al-'Ushārī 238 Abū Tamām 167 Abū 'Ubayd 219, 242 Abū 'Ubayd al-Harawī 198 Abū 'Ubayd al-Qāsim b. Sallām 242 Abū 'Ubayda 59, 139, 140, 144, 150 Abū Umāma 239, 275 Abū 'Umar al-Ḥawḍī 264 Abū 'Umar az-Zāhid 151 Abū'l-Wafā' b. 'Aqīl 134, 135 Abū'l-Wagt as-Sijzī 11, 15 Abū Ya'qūb ash-Shahhām 118 Abū Ya'lā (b. al-Farrā') 19, 34, 47, 59, 60, 80, 82, 85, 94, 100, 110, 121, 124, 125, 129, 131, 135, 138, 141, 142, 144, 145, 148, 149, 151, 152, 154, 161, 163, 165, 166, 168, 175, 179, 180, 183, 185, 189, 192, 193, 197, 199, 200, 202, 203, 206, 214, 216, 220, 222, 224, 225, 231, 233, 235, 237, 244, 246, 248, 249-253, 254, 259, 261, 263, 264, 273, 276 Abū Ya'lā al-Qazwīnī 26 Abū Yūsuf. 23, 105, 109 Adam 121, 126, 145, 146, 147, 170, 175, 191, 193, 234, 240, 255, 259, 262, 275 'Adī b. Rabī'a 167, 168 'Adn 259, 260, 274, 275 āḥād 93, 94, 127, 207 ahl al-kalām 109 Ahl al-Kitāb 203, 235 Ahmad (See also Ahmad b. Ḥanbal) 60-64, 100, 102, 104, 123, 124, 134, 137, 138,140, 160, 165, 166, 181, 206, 207, 249, 251, 260, 265, 276, 280, 289 Aḥmad b. Ḥanbal 10, 27, 34, 40, 60, 78, 89, 100, 105, 108, 122, 125, 133, 134, 138, 142, 160, 165, 168, 171, 179, 190, 194, 206, 217, 241, 255, 259, 264, 272, 277 Aḥmad b. al-Ḥasan b. 'Abd al-Jabbār 262 Ahmad b. Ja'far b. Muhammad Abū'l-Huşayn b. al-Munādī 212 Ahmad b. Ma'ālī 15

Aḥmad b. Muḥammad b. al-Ḥajjāj Abū Bakr al-Marwazī 206 Ahmad b. Muḥammad b. Hārūn Abū Bakr al-Khallāl 206 Ahmad b. 'Ubayd Allah b. Muhammad b. Aḥmad Abū'l-'Izz b. Kādish al-'Ukbarī 238 Ahmad b. Yahyā Abū'l-'Abbās Tha'lab 150, 219 Aḥmad b. Yaḥyā Abū Ja'far al-Hulwānī Aḥmad b. Yaḥyā b. Isḥāq Abū'l-Ḥusayn ar-Rāwandī 119 'Ā'isha 156, 232, 235, 243, 249 Ājurrī (see also Abū Bakr al-Ājurrī) 171, 218, 221, 224, 226, 262, 264, 272 Akhtal 154 Allard, M. 20, 114, 162, 291 'Alī b. 'Aqīl b. Muhammad Abū'l-Wafā' al-Baghdādī (see Ibn 'Aqīl) 101 'Alī 100, 151 'Alī b. 'Āṣim 257 'Al ī b. al-Jawālīqī 14 'Ali. b. Muḥammad b. Abī 'Umar al-Bazzāz 160 'Alī b. Muḥammad b. Abī 'Umar ad-Dabbās 160 'Alī as-Sulaymānī 266 'Alī b. 'Ubayd Allāh b. Naṣr b. as-Sarī Abū'l-Ḥasan b. Zāghūnī 136 'Althī 12, 24, 42, 44, 45, 62, 121, 284, 283, 285, 287, 289, 294, 296 'Alwaj i, A. H. 4, 15, 18, 31, 37, 128, 290 A'mash 115, 173, 174, 255 'Ammār ad-Duhnī 262 'Amr 115 'Amr b. 'Abd Allāh b. 'Alī Abū Isḥāq as-Sabī'ī 252 'Amr b. 'Ubayd 105, 114 'Amr az-Zāhid 151 Anas b. Mālik 103, 140, 162, 163, 176,

198, 227, 267

Antichrist (dajjāl) 143, 267

'agl 78, 80, 164 'araḍ (a'rāḍ) 77, 82, 83, 89,130, 151, 159, 169, 180, 188 Arberry, A. 166, 240 Aristotle 113 Arnaldez, R. 133, 268 Ash'arī(s) 50, 90, 100, 110, 111, 139, 141, 142, 145, 152, 154, 163, 167, 217 Ash'arism 6, 20, 21, 39, 41, 42, 46, 62, 63, 134 Ash'arite(s) 46, 49, 53, 62, 63, 83, 95, 111, 114, 126, 135, 138, 141, 154, 166, 188, 208, 210, 247 250, 256, 259, 265, 269, 271 Ash'ath 134 Ashram 134 'Āṣim b. Kulayb b. Shihāb 151 'Āsim b. Oatāda 272 'Aṭā' b. Abī Ribāh 174 Audebert, C. F. 114 Avicenna 113 'Awwām b. Ḥawshab 196 Awzā'i 104 Ayyūb as-Sakhtiyānī 258 Azdī 266, 278 Azharī 184, 279 Baghdādī 62, 82, 91, 86, 91, 93, 98, 110. 116, 117, 138, 154, 269 Bakr b. Ziyād al-Bāhilī 236 Bakri, 124 Balkhī 110 Banafsha 39 Banū 'Abs 274 Banū Isrā'il 99, 130, 257, 288 Banū Khattāb 194 Banū Muttalib 272 Banū Tamīm 87, 154 Bāqillānī 13, 20, 21, 61, 62, 112, 125. 166, 260 Bayhaqī (see also Abu Bakr)... 47, 59.

87,100, 108, 144, 115, 128, 131, 139.

143, 146, 148, 149, 151, 154, 155, 160.

162, 163, 165, 166, 171, 172, 176, 176

(T. 185, 189, 190, 195, 18 301 34 306 308 309 311 21 236, 236, 239, 221-226, 230, 23 345, 347, 348, 251, 255, 26 286, 284, 274, 273, 277, 280 Brother III Bet. R. 185 Bullet al-Hill 15 Barrier al-Harris 263 Submal-Marisi 21, 87 R 144, 150, 168 Benefice 31 1 = 10 G.W. 32 C 65, 142, 290 _88, 94, 115, 128, 132, 1 51, 151, 152, 162, 163, 167, 170 DE 141 189, 193, 194, 198, 204 204, 212, 215, 222, 225, 228, 230 25-24-245, 249, 254, 259-261, 271-276, 277, 280 Section E. 88, 117 COME C 40 Charles Mr. 106 98, 223 128, 174, 206, 212, E%, (41, 160, 263) New Y Westim al-Hillali 139 ME 96.97 **尼巴尼美元39** 79, 80, 82, 96, 99, 100 E 65.38 and an additional logic 91,13 343, 368, 269 mark his 51,93 # par (no.) 93, 127 15 per 45 E.S. 181, 184, 199, 238. 200 201, 229, 249, 252, 27 28.28.24 Minister, 6: 50

177, 180, 185, 189, 190, 195, 197, 200, 202, 204, 206, 208, 209, 211, 213, 215, 216, 218, 219, 221-226, 230, 236, 239, 243, 245, 247, 248, 251, 255, 260, 264, 266, 268, 270, 273, 277, 280

Bayḍāwī 113

Bell, R. 165

Bishr al-Ḥāfī 15

Bishr b. al-Ḥārith 263

Bishr al-Marīsī 21, 87

Blachère, R. 144, 150, 168

Bosworth, C. E. 31

Bowersock, G.W. 32

Brockelmann, C 65, 142, 290 Bukhārī ..88, 94, 115, 128, 132, 143, 150, 151, 152, 162, 163, 167, 170, 176, 185, 190, 189, 193, 194, 198, 204, 207,

208, 212, 215, 222, 225, 228, 232, 236, 241-248, 245, 249, 254, 259-261, 260, 267, 270, 271-276, 277, 280

Burton, J. 88, 117

Cahen, C. 40 Chokr, M. 106 Christian(s) 98, 223 Companion(s) 128, 174, 206, 212, 215, 283

Dahhāk 139, 140, 160, 263 Daḥḥāk b. Muzāḥim al-Hilālī 139 dahrīya 96, 97 Daiber, H. 90, 96, 239 dalīl (adilla) 79, 80, 82, 96, 99, 102, 103, 122, 137, 293 dalīl al-'aql (adillat al-'aql) 91, 133, 164 dalīl al-khitāb 143, 268, 269 dalīl maqṭū' bihi 91,93 dalīl qaļ'ī (adilla qaļ'īya) 93, 127 dalīl zann 93 Dāraquṭnī 115, 181, 184, 199, 238, 251, 266 Dārimī 209, 221, 239, 249, 252, 272 David 120, 203, 244 Davidson, H. 50

Dhahabī 5, 9, 12, 16, 24, 30, 87, 99, 100, 109, 163, 174, 177, 181, 182, 194, 198, 199, 203, 211, 219, 227-229, 236, 241, 252, 255, 259, 263, 270, 274, 276, 277, 285

Dhanani, A. 109, 110, 161

Dhū'r-Rumma 167

Dimyātī 5, 13

Pirār b. 'Amr 109

Piyā'd-Dīn b. al-Khayr 27

Dozy, R. 90, 100, 181

Dutton, Y. 104

Fadl b. 'Īsā (b. Abān Abū 'Īsā) 257, 258 Fakhr ad-Dīn ar-Rāzī 21, 113 Fakhry, M. 8 falāsifa 31 Farrā' 59, 62, 149, 150, 155, 166 Fāṭima Bint Abī'l-Fā'iz 7 Follower(s) 128, 174, 192, 230, 259, 276, 272, 285 Frank, R. 18, 20, 48, 78-83, 82, 84, 88, 91, 98, 100, 110, 113, 116, 118, 126, 138, 154, 210, 239 Frederick II 223 Fulayh 194, 195 Fuḍayl b. 'Iyāḍ 15 Fulayh b. Sulaymān (Abū Yahyā b. Abī'l-Mughīra) 194

Gabriel 162, 191, 201, 250 Ğahm ibn Şafwān, 88, 189 Ghazālī, 92 Ghazzālī 92, 98, 113, 241, 247, 260, 261 Gimaret, D. 48, 61, 81, 95, 88, 101, 110, 111, 114, 118, 121, 138, 126, 136, 138, 193, 209, 210, 211, 252, 255, 272, 280 Goldziher, I. 29, 266, 269, 279 Graham, Wm. 128, 242, 248, 246, 261 Guillaume, A. 182, 241

 Ḥabīb b. Abī Thābit
 174

 Haddad, W.
 19, 80, 136

 Ḥafs
 109

Hafs al-Fard 108 Ḥafs b. Ghiyāth (b. Ṭalq Abū 'Umar an-Nakha'ī al-Kūfī) 255, 261 Hajjī Khalīfa 292 Hakim 17 Hallāj 16, 287 Hallaq, W. 105 Haman 290 Hamd b. Muhammad b. Ibrāhīm Abū Sulaymān al-Khaṭṭābī al-Bustī 114 Hammād (b. Salama b. Dīnār Abū Salama) 87, 88, 182, 183, 228 Hanafi(s) 21, 101, 105, 107 Ḥanbalī(s) 53, 57, 59, 60, 61, 63, 64, 81, 83, 85, 89, 91, 94, 97, 98, 100, 103, 106, 111, 112, 121, 122, 124, 129, 131, 134, 135, 138, 148, 152, 156, 160, 161, 175, 206, 212, 220, 225, 238, 240, 242, 249, 251, 253, 260, 264, 267, 271, 276, 279, 280, 283, 284, 295, 296 Hārith 100 Hārith b. Hawt 100 Harrānī 278 Hartmann, A. 4, 20, 25, 42, 284 Hasan 15, 105, 114, 144, 166, 176, 196, 198, 236 Ḥasan b. al-Fā'ūs 131 Ḥasan b. Ḥāmid b. 'Alī b. Marwān Abū 'Abd Allāh al-Warrāq 94, 135 Hasan b. Ziyād al-Lu'lu'ī 87 Hassan 259 Hassān b. 'Atīya 197, 259 Heinrichs, W. 55, 62, 63, 140, 142, 150, 167, 186 Henninger, J. 231 Ḥibbān b. Hilāl (Abū Habīb al-Bāhilī) 87 Hishām 86, 110 Hishām b. Abī 'Abd Allāh Abū Bakr ad-Dastūwā'ī 177 Hishām b. al-Ḥakam 86, 110, 118, 119, 126 Hourani, G. 81 Humayd (at-Tawil) 227, 228 Husayn 125

Ibn 'Abbās 139, 146, 149, 176, 180, 182, 220, 229, 236, 250, 260, 262, 263, 265 Ibn Abī 'Ātika 276 Ibn Abī'l-'Awjā' 182, 228 Ibn Abī Laylā 106 Ibn Abī Shayba 238 Ibn Abī Ya'lā 124, 134, 135, 249 Ibn 'Adī 162, 181, 238, 241, 264 Ibn 'Amr 208 Ibn al-Anbārī 14, 59, 93, 141, 142, 208, 213 Ibn 'Aqīl (see also Abū'l-Wafā') 16, 20, 24, 41, 45, 46, 57, 61, 63, 64, 78, 80, 85, 91, 95, 101, 109, 112, 113, 124, 133, 134, 136, 138, 140, 142, 145, 160, 169, 174, 183, 184, 187, 188, 191, 201, 213, 224, 228, 269, 283, 285, 291, 294 Ibn 'Arabī 247 Ibn Athīr 29, 124, 125, 135, 184, 238, 255 Ibn Batta 100, 104, 106, 111, 123, 156, 215, 262 Ibn Burhān 21, 47 Ibn Fürak 20, 41, 47, 62, 88, 131, 146, 147, 148 160, 171, 174, 175, 179, 183, 185, 187, 192, 196, 197, 203, 205, 208, 212, 213, 218, 219, 221, 224, 225, 236, 239, 245, 248, 250, 254, 259, 261, 268, 273, 274, 277, 279 Ibn Hajar 87, 163, 195, 272, 274 Ibn Hāmid ...33, 59, 60, 83, 94, 120, 121. 125, 127, 135, 138, 141, 143, 148, 149. 152, 155, 156, 161, 165, 168, 216, 220, 228, 243, 248, 250, 279 Ibn Hanbal 156, 170, 270 Ibn Hazm 162, 268 Ibn Hibbān 236, 252, 266 Ibn Hubayra 14, 23, 39, 40 Ibn al-Husayn 10 Ibn al-'Imād 178 Ibn Ishāq 106, 182, 272 Ibn Jarir 252 Ibn al-Jawzī (see also 'Abd ar-Rahmān b. al-Jawzī and Jamāl ad-Dīn Abū'l-

3-32, 33, 34, 36-45, 46 77-138, 139, 140, 142, 144, L4E, 151, 152, 154, 155, 157, 16 167, 168, 169, 170-172, 174 187, 188, 190, 194, 19 215, 217, 215, 216, 219, 222, 22 231, 233-236, 236-248, 249 251, 256, 260, 267, 268, 27 279, 280, 282, 283, 287, 28 34, 397 a-Janari 11, 13, 203 Im Klatick 138 115, 124, 212 In Child 152 Emiliana 128, 131, 132, 139 mC_ [65, 171, 173-175, 176, 178 ME 941, 198, 200, 201, 204, 206 284, 2.4, 223, 225, 227, 228, 245 256, 250, 264, 266, 272, 273, 274 Table 126 Tel 106 er also Yahya 151 **14.** 131, 143, 163, 204, 2 2 2 4 215, 218, 220, 226, 232 DE 252, 250, 264, 266, 271, 280, 200 = 113, 246 125, 152, 190, 195, 20₆ 25.36 104, 137, 215, 236 Marie 61, 212 Brillian 16 less see also Abu'l-Fadl 39, A C 22 73 Brist-Quidic 45 Description 25 Broat-Queri 134 al-Javaiya 81 12.24.34, 42.62.106 59, 118, 128, 131, 140 (S), 171, 175, 179, 180, 200, 200, 211, 213, 215, 220, 2 28 233 236, 237, 246, 278,

Faraj). 3-32, 33, 34, 36-45, 46-64, 65, 70, 77-138, 139, 140, 142, 144, 145, 146, 151, 152, 154, 155, 157, 160, 165, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170-172, 174, 179, 180, 182, 187, 188, 190, 194, 199, 200, 205, 207, 215, 216, 219, 222, 225, 227-229, 231, 233-236, 236-248, 249, 250, 251, 253, 256, 260, 267, 268, 270, 275, 277, 279, 280, 282, 283, 287, 289, 293, 294, 297 Ibn al-Jazarī 11, 13, 203 Ibn Kādish 238 Ibn Kathīr 115, 124, 212 Ibn Khalīfa 252 Ibn Khuzayma 128, 131, 132, 139, 143, 162, 165, 171, 173-175, 176, 178, 181, 185, 191, 198, 200, 201, 204, 205, 215, 218, 219, 223, 225, 227, 228, 245, 251, 256, 260, 264, 266, 272, 273, 274, 277, 280 Ibn Kullāb 126 Ibn Mahdī 106 Ibn Ma'īn (see also Yaḥyā) 151 Ibn Māja 94, 131, 143, 163, 204, 206, 208, 214, 215, 218, 220, 226, 232, 236, 245, 252, 260, 264, 266, 271, 280, 275, Ibn Manzūr 213, 246 Ibn Mas'ūd 115, 152, 190, 195, 204, 222, 223, 255, 261 Ibn al-Mubārak 104, 137, 215, 236 Ibn al-Munādī 61, 212 Ibn Najjār 16 Ibn Nāṣir (see also Abū'l-Faḍl) 39, 6, 9-11, 12, 22, 23 Ibn al-Qādisī 46 Ibn al-Qassāb 25 Ibn al-Qatī'ī 124 Ibn Qayyim al-Jawzīya 81 Ibn Qudāma 12, 24, 34, 42, 62, 106, 239 Ibn Qutayba. 59, 118, 128, 131, 140, 146, 149, 150, 171, 175, 179, 180, 185, 202, 204, 208, 211, 213, 215, 220, 223, 225, 226, 233, 236, 237, 246, 278, 280

Ibn Rajab 18, 23-28, 30, 34, 42, 45, 46, 121, 124, 131-138, 157, 282, 285, 291 Ibn ar-Rāwandī 21, 119, 138 Ibn Sa'd 87-100, 106, 128, 176, 177, 181, 182, 191, 193, 198, 211, 213, 228, 230, 241, 252, 254, 257, 260, 272 Ibn Shujā' 87, 89 Ibn Sukayna 16, 21, 27 Ibn Taymīya 62, 90, 117, 135, 156, 217, 219 Ibn 'Umar 139, 173, 181, 182, 208, 226, 250 Ibn 'Uyayna 258 Ibn al-Yasa^c 184 Ibn Zāghūnī 13, 34, 38, 60, 83, 94, 121, 125, 132, 135-138, 149, 156, 157, 159, 253, 264 Iblīs 119, 191 Ibrāhīm b. Adham 15 Ibrāhīm b. al-Hakam b. Abān 182 Ibrāhīm al-Harbī 134, 263 Ibrāhīm b. Isḥāq b. Ibrāhīm Abū Isḥāq al-Harbī 134 Ibrāhīm an-Nakha'ī 149 Ibrāhīm b. Muhājir (b. Mismār) 241 Ibrāhīm b. al-Mundhir (Abū Ishāq al-Hizāmī al-Madanī) 194 Ibrāhīm, Nājiya 'Abd Allāh 17, 290 Ījī, 91 'Ikrima 229, 230 'ilm al-ma'qūlāt 236, 237 'ilm bi-Allāh (see also ma'rifat Allah) 81 Imrān 166 Imrān b. Ḥuṣayn 212 Isā 265 'Īsā b. Mūsā Ghunjār 265 Isawi, C. 31 Ishāq b. Ahmad b. Muhammad b. Ghānim al-'Althi 284 Ismā'īl b. Abī Khālid (aṭ-Ṭā'ī) 155 istidlāl 79, 102 istiwā' 123, 127, 131

Jābir (b. 'Abd Allāh) 257, 265, 278 Jāhilīya 153 Jāḥiz 118 Jahm b. Şafwān 117 Jahmiya 88, 106, 111 Jamāl ad-Dīn Abū'l-Faraj 'Abd ar-Rahmān b. 'Alī b. Muḥammad b. al-Jawzī 77 Jarir 255 Jassās b. Murra 55, 168, 173 jawhar (jawāhir) 77, 82, 85, 89, 110, 130, 157 Jesus 123, 130, 147, 191 Jew(s) 98, 144, 196, 224, 235 Jīlānī 119, 251 jism 83, 85, 86 Jubayr b. Mu'tim 271 Jubbā'ī 22, 110, 118 Jurjānī 113 Juwaynī 20, 21, 62, 149, 154 Juynboll, G. H. A. 93, 95, 254

Ka'b (al-Aḥbār b. Māti') 201, 235 Kāfūr 220-222 kalām 66, 105-109, 112, 113, 161, 290 Kalbī 106 Khadīja 103 Khālid b. Ma'dān 254 Khal il 153 Khalīl b. Ahmad 153 Khalīl b. Aḥmad b. 'Amr b. Tamīm Abū 'Abd ar-Rahmān al-Azdi 153 Khallāl 206 Khārijites (Khawārij) 140, 151 Khatīb (Abū Bakr) 105, 172, 181, 184, 194, 255, 262 Khaṭṭābī 59, 186, 205, 233, 271, 273, 291, 292 Khātūn Bint 'Abd Allāh 27 Khawla bint Ḥakīm 234 Khayyāt 47, 116 Kraus, P. 119 Kulayb (b. Rabī'a) 168 Kullābīya 21, 30, 53, 112

Lane, E 21, 53, 112, 154, 166, 168, 289 Laoust, H 12, 24, 89, 95, 98, 100, 106, 120, 123, 156, 175, 215, 225, 250, 253, 260, 262, 264, 267, 276, 282 Lazarus-Yafeh, H. 98 Lecomte, G. 131, 173, 180, 185, 202, 204, 208, 211, 213, 220, 223, 225, 226, 233, 237, 246, 278 Leder, S. 4, 15, 22 Levy, R. 287 Ma'arrī (see also Abū'l-'Alā) 120 Macartney, C. H. H. 167 MacKay, P. A. 40 Madani 270 Madelung, W. 86, 110, 119, 240, 248, 257 Maimonides 174 majāz (majāzāt) 77, 122, 140 Makdis, G. 9, 13, 16-21, 20, 22, 27, 29, 35, 39, 41, 42, 45, 46, 57, 63, 64, 78, 80, 89, 95, 101, 105, 112, 114, 125, 133, 134, 136, 138, 142, 184, 268, 286, 293 Mālik b. Anas 104, 108, 137, 155, 163, 215, 230, 263 Mālik b. Dīnār 278 Mālik b. Nadla 230 Mālik b. Yukhāmir al-Alhānī as-Saksakī 177

ma'lūmāt mutaṭābiqa 91 Ma'mar b. al-Muthannā Abū 'Ubayda al-Başrī 140 Ma'mūn 118 Ma'n b. Zā'ida 182 Manşūr b. 'Ammār 263 maqām maḥmūd 249 maqdūrāt 116, 117, 118 Marçais, W. 185, 233 ma^crifa 78-82, 98, 100, 137 ma'rifat Allāh (see also 'ilm bi-Allāh) 79, 99, 100, 128 ma'rifat an-naql 78 Margoliouth, D. 29, 38, 100 Marmura, M. 82

Termin 181 120, 123, 166, 167 Marrio 168 Marson, H. 17 Eggene L 182, 229 Materialya 30 WhiCarmey, R. 84, 90 Western Ch. 87, 107 Marie 221 98, 125, 130, 154, 227, 25 = animar 85 E 24-32 212 e iwy 2 b. al-Hakam 209-212 Wester 234 Sturbe 189 168 d b. 'Abd al-Wahhib Abi u-lenter 118 and b. 'Abd al-Wabid b. Ab Abi Umar al-Baghawi a Table 151 Abd or Razziq b. Al p-5ms 103 al b. Ahmad b. Hamdin 4 min al-Khinj i 63 Fullyh 194 105 1-Hasan 105 al-Hasan b. Farquel Al and Allest ash-Shaybani 145 Huszyn b. Muham 4-Taria 135 272 Shiq 272 in the state of th Bakr an-Nisäbiri La little b. Yasir Abi 'Al -Balling b. Yasir Abi Bal **Patricia** 182 1 25-Sawi 149 t Ka't al-Qurazi) 276 made Mades h. 'Abd at Rah Suit at-Zahad el-Quanturi 253 t Nair 238

to al-Qissim Alvi Bakr al-

Marwan b. 'Uthman 181 Mary 120, 123, 166, 167 Marzūqī 168 Mason, H. 17 Massignon, L. 182, 229 Māturīdīya 30 McCarthey, R. 84, 90 Melchert, Ch. 87, 107 Minhāl b. 'Amr 221 Moses 98, 125, 130, 154, 227, 256, 257 Mu'ammar 85 Mu'āwiya 212 Mu'āwiya b. al-Hakam 209-212 Mudar 234 Mughīra b. Shu'ba 189 Muhalhil 168 Muḥammad b. 'Abd al-Wahhāb Abū 'Alī al-Jubbā'ī 118 Muhammad b. 'Abd al-Wāhid b. Abī Hāshim Abū 'Umar al-Baghawī az-Zāhid 151 Muhammad b. 'Abd ar-Razzāg b. Ahmad as-Sinnī 103 Muhammad b. Ahmad b. Hamdan 151 Muhammad Amīn al-Khānj ī Muḥammad b. Fulayh 194 Muhammad b. al-Hasan 105 Muḥammad b. al-Ḥasan b. Farqad Abū 'Abd Allāh ash-Shaybānī 105 Muhammad b. al-Husayn b. Muhammad b. al-Farrā' 135 Muḥammad b. Ishāq 272 Muhammad b. Ishāq b. Khuzayma b. al-Mughīra Abū Bakr an-Nīsābūrī 142 Muḥammad b. Ishāq b. Yasār Abū 'Abd Allāh 272 Muḥammad b. Ishaq b. Yasar Abū Bakr al-Makhramī 182 Muḥammad Ismā'īl aṣ-Şawī 149 Muḥammad b. Ka'b (al-Qurazī) 276 Muhammad b. Muslim b. 'Abd ar-Rahmān Abū Bakr az-Zāhid al-Qantarī 253 Muḥammad b. Nāṣir 238 Muhammad b. al-Qāsim Abū Bakr al-

Anbārī 141, 208 Muhammad b. Sa'd 191 Muḥammad b. Shujā' (al-Balkhī) 87, 89 Muḥammad b. Sulaymān 182 Muhammad b. 'Uthmān al-Ḥuddānī 278 Muḥammad b. Ziyād Abū 'Abd Allāh b. al-Aʻrābī 199 Muhanna' b. Yahyā 181 Mujāhid 146, 149, 166, 203, 236, 249 Mujāhid b. Jabr Abū'l-Hajjāj 203 mujassim(a) 124, 139, 141, 142, 145, 156, 163, 202 Munāwī 94, 261 Mundhirī 5, 7, 13, 42 Muqātil b. Hayyān. 160 Muqtafi 17 Mūsā b. Hārūn 263 Mūsā b. 'Imrān 277 Mūsā b. 'Ubayda (Abū 'Abd al-'Azīz ar-Rabadhī) 277 Muslim 94, 109, 115, 128, 131,138, 143, 150 151, 152, 162, 163, 167, 170, 172, 174, 180, 185, 189, 190 193, 197, 198, 202, 204, 205, 207, 209, 212, 215, 218, 220, 226, 228, 232, 236, 242, 248, 254, 257, 259, 261, 263, 266, 267, 279, 280 Muslim al-Batīn 262 Mustadī° 25, 41 mutakallim(ūn) 19, 24, 31, 112, 113, 116 mutashābihāt 126 Mu'tasim 181 Mutawakkil 118 Mu'tazila 49, 53, 62, 63, 81, 83, 106, 111, 126, 139, 141, 142, 150, 152, 163, 200, 294, 296 Mu'tazilī (s) 21, 46, 55, 62, 63, 64, 79, 81, 84, 87, 91, 100, 101, 106, 109, 111, 114, 116, 118, 125, 129, 134, 138, 154, 166, 190, 217, 240, 260, 262, 272 Mu'tazilism 30, 41-43, 46, 47, 48, 62, 63, 101, 106, 114, 134 Mu'tazilite(s) 46, 63, 83, 84, 85, 95, 98, 105, 110, 112, 114, 286

Mutayyan 238

Muzani 107

Naḍr b. Shumayl b. Kharasha at-Tamīmī 189, 199 naql 78, 79, 99, 122 Nasā'ī 151, 162, 181, 189, 221, 226, 232, 233, 236, 241, 257, 266, 280, 272 Nawbakhtī 21 nazar 79, 87 Nazzām 109, 138 Nicholson, R. 98, 120 Niewöhner, Fr. 96 Nu'aym b. Ḥammād (b. Mu'āwiya Abū 'Abd Allāh al-Khuzā'ī al-Marwazī) Nūḥ b. Abī Maryam Abū 'Iṣma al-Marwazī 106 Nūḥ al-Jāmi' 106 Nu'mān b. Thābit Abū Ḥanīfa at-Taymī 105 Nūr ad-Dīn 'Alī (b. Jamāl ad-Dīn b. 'Abd Allāh ad-Dimashqī ash-Shāfi'ī) 65,

Ormsby, E. 247, 261

Nyberg, H. S. 117, 119

280, 281

Paret, R. 231, 236, 248 Pascal, B. 97 Peters, J. R. T. M. 79, 82, 85, 111 Pharaoh 107, 290 Pluta, O. 96

Qadarī 105 Qadarīya 104 *Qādī* (the) 216, 220, 222, 224, 227, 229, 231, 233, 234, 237, 244, 246, 248, 250, 251, 254, 259-261, 263, 265, 273, 276 Qāsim b. Ibrāhīm (b. Aḥmad al-Malaṭī aṣṢūf ī) 184 Qatāda 146, 149, 163, 193, 195, 196 Qatāda b. Nuʿmān 195 Qawārīrī 89 *qiyās* 81, 268, 280 qiyās maznūn 269 Qudāma b. Ja'far 186 Qulzum 107

Rābi'a, 27 Rābi'a al-'Adawīya 15 Rabīʻ (b. Sulaymān b. 'Abd al-Jabbār Abū Muḥammad al-Miṣrī) 108 Raddatz, H. P. 104 Rahman, F. 89 Radī (Sharīf) 139, 144, 147, 150 Reig, D. 4, 15, 28, 31 Reinhart, K. 52 Ritter, H. 119 Rizq Allāh b. 'Abd al-Wahhāb at-Tamīmī 160 Robson, J. 20 Rosenthal, F. 91 Rukn ad-Dīn 'Abd as-Salām 25 rūḥ 95, 146, 148, 166, 167, 169, 274 ru'ya 218, 226, 260

Şābi'ūn 129 Şabīgh (b. 'Isl al-Ḥanzalī) 108 Sa'd Allāh b. Muḥammad 11 Sa'd b. Mālik b. Sinān Abū Sa'īd al-Khudrī 193 Sa'd at-Tā'ī. 155 Ṣadaqa b. al-Ḥusayn 136 Sa'īd b. al-Ḥārith 194 Sa'id b. Jubayr 151, 166, 262 Sabra, A. I. 18, 113 Sahl b. Sa'd 219, 277 salaf 106, 132, 133, 236, 283, 287 Salama b. al-'Ayyār 222 Salmān (al-Fārisī) 192 Sarrāj 270 Savory, R. 31 Sayf b. 'Abd Allāh 221, 222 Schacht, J. 104, 138, 229 Schulthess, R. 154 Şehid Ali Paşa 65, 66 Sellheim, R. 153 Sha'bī 254

6. 12. 64. 65. 107. 13 Shiff) 23, 100, 102, 104, 105, 10 119, 111, 137, 138 86.91 ad-Din 65 ad-Din al-Muhadam ass-South 1 280 Shared Abri Ja far 125, 131 Abd Allah b. Abi Name And Allah al-Madani) 162, 27 See 95 263 t Makitlad, 263 * Mukhallad (al-Fallis) 26 500 to al-June 21 3-5, 7, 14, 24, 27, 54, 297, 298 80, 91, 100, 111, 121-0 (28, 127, 139, 142, 144, 148, 151) Se. 185, 174, 179, 186, 187, 197 223-226, 236, 247, 282, 287, 16 France 2 (13) 190 5. 119 134, 142 15, 16, 29 894, 234 E = ± Thevn 160 — в Тукува 215, 234 Literary 65 Me. 131, 170, 171, 173-176, 17 360, 765-788 M 38, 156 S 153 23, (40, 182, 211, 213, 221) 29 29 295 244, 249, 251, 254 257, 262, 263, 272, 273 30,140, 159 34 30 Sept 120

- 44, 124, 148, 153, 159, 16

100 TH

Shāfi'ite(s) 6, 12, 64, 65, 107, 134, 135 Shāfi'i 23, 100, 102, 104, 105, 107, 108, 109, 111, 137, 138 Shahrastānī 86, 91 Shams ad-Din 65 Shams ad-Dīn al-Muḥaddith ash-Shāfi'i. 280 Sharīf Abū Ja'far 125, 131 Sharīk (b. 'Abd Allāh b. Abī Namir Abū 'Abd Allāh al-Madanī) 162, 270 Shattī, 95 Shujā^c 263 Shujā' b. Makhlad, 263 Shujā' b. Mukhallad (al-Fallās) 262, 263 Sibt b. al-Jawzī 3-5, 7, 14, 24, 27, 30, 40, 64, 297, 298 șifa (șifāt) 80, 91, 100, 111, 121-123, 126, 127, 139, 142, 144, 148, 151, 153, 156, 165, 174, 179, 186, 187, 197, 200, 207, 223-226, 236, 247, 282, 287, 293 Sinnī. 103 Smoor, P. 120 Stoics 92 Stroumsa, S. 119 Subkī 134, 142 Sufism 15, 16, 29 Sufyān 104, 234 Sufyān ath-Thawrī 160 Sufyān b. 'Uyayna 215, 234 Süleymaniye Library 65 sūra 86, 131, 170, 171, 173-176, 179, 180, 185-188 Swartz, M. 38, 156 Sībawayhī 153 Tabarī 23, 140, 182, 211, 213, 221, 227, 228, 231, 235, 248, 249, 251, 254, 255, 256, 257, 262, 263, 272, 273

tab'īḍ 50, 141, 159 Ṭa'if 234 Taha Husayn 120 Ṭalḥa 100 tajsīm 77, 94, 124, 148, 153, 159, 161, 235 taglīd 87, 98, 99, 100, 101, 102, 103, 137 tashbīh 77, 94, 122, 124, 141, 152, 161, 223, 226, 235, 246, 247 Tasnīm 260 ta'wīl 56, 57, 58, 59, 61, 63, 121, 129, 133, 206, 207, 212 Tha'ālibī 114 Tha'lab 59, 150, 166, 173 Thābit (al-Bunānī) 227, 228, 229 Thawrī 106, 173, 174 Throne 133, 153, 154, 155, 156, 157, 159, 161, 163, 164, 165, 168, 190, 210, 249-253, 254, 260-263, 265, 272-273 Thumāma (b. Ashras Abū Ma'n an-Numayrī) 21, 118 Tirmidhī 11, 94, 115, 132, 143, 152, 191, 211, 214, 215, 220, 223, 225, 239, 242, 248, 245, 248, 260, 264, 266, 275, 278, 280 Torah 168, 262 Tritton, A. S. 110 'Ubayd Allāh 182 'Ubayd Allāh b. Abī'l-Fath 184 'Ubayd Allāh b. Abī Salama 181 'Ubayd Allāh b. Miqsam 225 'Ubayd b. Ḥunayn 193-195 'Ubayda al-Salmānī 223 Ubayy b. Ka'b 180 'Udhra 152 Udovitch, A. L. Uhud 167, 202 Ullmann, M. 90 'Umar 103

Udovitch, A. L. 31

Uḥud 167, 202

Ullmann, M. 90

'Umar 103

'Umar b. 'Abd al-'Azīz 128, 129, 247

'Umar b. Ḥafṣ (b. Dhakwān) 241

'Umar b. al-Ḥakam (al-Hudhalsī al-Baṣrī) 277

'Umar b. Hamza and Sālim b. 'Abd Allāh b. 'Umar 226

'Umar b. al-Khaṭṭāb 195, 250

'Umar b. Ṣubḥ (Abū Nu'aym al-Khurāsānī) 265

'Umāra b. 'Āmir 181

Umayya b. Abī'ṣ-Ṣalt 153 Umm Ṭufayl 180, 183 'Urwa b. Ḥizām (b. Muhājir) 144 uṣūl al-fiqh 80, 94-95, 105, 136 usṭuqussāt 90 Uthmān 235, 239 'Uthmān b. Abī 'Ātika 276 'Uzayr 130

Vajda, G 17, 119, 182 van den Bergh, S. 84, 93, 109 van Donzel, E. 31 van Ess, J 18, 53, 79, 86, 92, 101, 105, 109, 114, 119, 138, 189, 257, 266 Versteegh, C. H. M. 84, 90, 93, 111, 138

Wahb b. Jarīr 272 Wahb b. Munabbih. 201, 203 Wajj 234, 235 Wakī^c 211, 255 Wakī' b. Ḥudus 211 Waki' b. 'Udus 211 Wansbrough, J. 140 Wāqidī. 195 wasā'iṭ istidlālīya 92 wasā'iṭ ḍarūrīya 91 Wāṣil b. 'Aṭā' 114 Watt, W. M. 48, 56, 63, 86, 92, 99, 104, 106, 114, 115, 128, 170, 257 Weiss, B. 92, 114, 128 Wellhausen, J. 231 Wensinck, A. J. 84, 94, 267 Yaḥyā b. al-'Alā' 264 Yaḥyā b. Ma'īn 162, 181, 182, 241, 255, 257, 258, 259, 263, 264, 276, 277 Yaḥyā b. Ziyād Abū Zakarīyā' al-Farrā'

150

Ya'lā (b. 'Aṭā') 211 Ya'qūb al-Barzabīnī 136 Yaʻqūb b. Ibrāhīm al-Anṣārī ad-Dawraqī 105 Ya'qūb b. Shayba 255 Ya'qūb b. 'Utba (b. al-Mughīra ath-Thaqafī al-Madanī) 272 Yāqūt 199, 203, 272 Yazīd b. Hārūn (Abū Khālid al-Wāsitī) 257 Yazīd (b. Mu'āwiya) 31, 124 Yazīd b. Sufyān 88 Yūsuf 13, 16, 27 Yūsuf b. 'Abd al-Hādī 184 Yūsuf b. 'Aṭīya Abū Sahl aṣ-Ṣaffār al-Bāhilī 177 Yūsuf b. Qizoghlū (see also Sibt b. al-Jawzī) 40

Zajjāj 166
Zakarīyā' b. Yaḥyā b. Khallād Abū Yaʻlā as-Sājī, 194
Zamakhsharī 21, 55, 140, 149, 165, 166, 176, 191, 196, 202, 215, 223, 227, 231, 235, 248, 251, 273
zandaqa 106, 108
Zayd 80, 102
Zayd b. Aslam 264
Zayd b. Wahb 115
Ziyāda (al-Anṣārī) 274, 275
Ziyāda b. Muḥammad al-Anṣārī 274
Zubayr 100
Zubayr b. al-ʿAwwām 195, 196
Zuhrī 264, 272